

# 1801 Sovereign Chen Ling's Palace

After taking away the middle-aged man's Greenleaf Amber, the elder tilted his chin upward smugly before heading out. With a light chuckle, Zhang Xuan quickly followed behind him.

Leaving the market, the elder strolled along the streets for a moment before entering an alley.

Zhang Xuan swiftly flicked his finger, and that arrogant elder's vision immediately turned black. His body faltered before toppling to the ground.

With Zhang Xuan's strength as a Sempiternal realm consummation cultivator, dealing with a Saint 6-dan appraiser was a walk in the park.

“Soul Search!”

Without wasting any time, Zhang Xuan immediately invaded the other party's thoughts. In an instant, he had already fully grasped the other party's identity and background.

If he wanted to sneak into Sovereign Chen Ling's palace, he would require a legitimate and verifiable identity. The appraisers who had been recruited into Sovereign Chen Ling's palace would surely have to undergo rigorous identity checks in order to ensure that they were no threat before they were allowed onto the premises.

Thus, Zhang Xuan's first goal at the market had actually been to find a reputable appraiser and assume the other party's identity.

This way, no one would cast doubt over his identity.

“An appraiser from Kaiyong City, Wu Tao... He has already cleared Sovereign Chen Ling's appraiser examination and is intending to make his way over soon. Well, this sure worked

out in my favor. I'll be spared a great deal of trouble this way..."

Zhang Xuan was able to find out about the appraiser's background swiftly through Soul Search. After gathering everything that he needed to know, he lightly waved his hand.

Huala!

That arrogant Otherworldly Demon appraiser and his subordinates were reduced to dust, vanishing completely from the face of the world. The items that could be used to verify his identity had all fallen into Zhang Xuan's hands.

"Alright, I should head over to Sovereign Chen Ling's palace!"

The disguise amulet glowed slightly in Zhang Xuan's hand, and his body began to transform. In the blink of an eye, he became identical to Wu Tao, such that even the latter's closest kin would be unable to tell the two of them apart. Heaving a sigh of relief, Zhang Xuan began making his way over to Sovereign Chen Ling's palace based on the directions that he had received from Wu Tao's memories.

The Three Sovereigns of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe each had their own palaces, and they were spaced equally apart in the capital. Sovereign Chen Ling's palace was not too far from where Zhang Xuan currently was. Walking through roughly eight streets, he found himself standing before towering palace walls.

Zhang Xuan went up to the palace gates and passed the token representing his identity over to the guards. The identity token was inspected a total of eight times by numerous personnel before he was finally granted entry into the palace.

"Appraiser Wu Tao, please follow me," one of the guards ushered.

Zhang Xuan was unable to uncover the real reason for Sovereign Chen Ling's search for appraisers from Wu Tao's memory. Most likely, none of the appraisers had been informed of the true reason. Thus, he leaned in toward the guard and asked in a lowered voice, "May I ask why

Sovereign Chen Ling has invited us here? I would like to make some preparations beforehand so as to perform well before him.”

As he spoke, he discreetly passed a pinnacle spirit stone over.

The guard glanced at the pinnacle spirit stone before turning around to face Zhang Xuan with a wintry look on his face.

“You just have to do whatever you are required to. Little schemes like this aren’t required in Sovereign Chen Ling’s palace!”

“Yes, yes!” Zhang Xuan nodded in a fluster. “I just wish to make some friends. I don’t mean anything else by it. As compensation for my thoughtless action, please accept this little gift of mine!”

“Un!” The guard hesitated for a moment before taking the pinnacle spirit stone and placing it within his storage ring. With a stern voice, he warned, “Don’t ever try this again in here!”

Following which, he turned around and continued proceeding ahead. There was a moment of silence before his hushed voice emerged. “You appraisers are being gathered in order to determine the exact value of a certain artifact. Sovereign Chen Ling has his eye on this matter, so no failures will be forgiven. If you dare overestimate the value, you could potentially lose your life. Don’t say that I didn’t warn you!”

Zhang Xuan hurriedly nodded in response.

The value of an artifact lay not only in its functionality but also its history. As such, appraisers would tend to append additional value to an artifact depending on the identity of its owner, but that could lead to some inaccuracies in the determined value.

Even if one imitated a work of art to the point where one could hardly tell the difference, the gap in the price between the original and the imitation would still be vast.

What the guard was saying was very simple. Regardless of the history of the artifact that he was going to appraise, he should

determine its value based on its pragmatic functionality. There was no need to consider other factors.

“Keep that in mind, and it should be fine. I’ll take you over right now. I’m just a subordinate, so I can’t say for sure what kind of mission will be assigned to you. Nevertheless, I wish you the best of luck,” the guard muttered quietly before falling silent.

It seemed like this was the extent of the intelligence that he had on hand.

“I’m truly indebted to you!” Zhang Xuan replied respectfully as he passed another pinnacle spirit stone over.

The situation was truly a little bewildering. To think that Sovereign Chen Ling had really brought appraisers into his palace in order to appraise an artifact.

He had seen with his own eyes how severely injured Sovereign Chen Ling was back at the Temple of Confucius. It was only due to his superior cultivation that he did not lose his life on the spot. Yet, after returning to his base, instead of seeking treatment for his injuries, he had chosen to bring appraisers in instead.

Zhang Xuan found this extremely difficult to comprehend.

Following behind the guard, he soon arrived before a splendid looking hall.

There were numerous shelves within the hall, and all sorts of treasures sat quietly on those shelves. A sizeable number of appraisers were wandering around the shelves, examining the treasures on them intently.

As soon as Zhang Xuan entered the hall, another guard immediately walked over and spoke with an authoritative tone.

“You are one of the recruited appraisers, correct? Your task right now is to appraise all of the artifacts in the room. You are to write down each of their values on a piece of paper and place them into the corresponding boxes. Start from the first artifact over there. Remember, you are not to interact with any of the other candidates; anyone caught talking will be killed without any hesitation!”

Knowing that this was another challenge that Sovereign Chen Ling had prepared to test the appraisers that he had recruited, Zhang Xuan nodded before making his way over to the shelves.

In front of the first artifact on the first shelf, there was a box that resembled the polling boxes from his previous life. There was a unique seal inscribed on the box that prevented anyone from taking out or peering into the contents of the box. In other words, it was impossible to read the answers of other appraisers through Spiritual Perception.

To have so many appraisers gauge the value of the same artifacts... Sovereign Chen Ling is really trying to filter the group down to the cream of the crop! Zhang Xuan thought as he looked around the room.

The appraiser who had come before him had already finished appraising the first artifact and placed his estimate into the box before proceeding ahead.

With no chance to communicate with one another, this test would really assess the capability of the appraiser to value artifacts.

Zhang Xuan walked up to the first artifact to take a closer look at it. It was a black ore with a slightly rough texture. Astonishingly, he was unable to tell what kind of material it was with a single glance.

Thus, he stretched his hand forward, and a book swiftly materialized in the Library of Heaven's Path.

“Stone of the Fallen Star, an ore that can only be mined from the Deep Abyss of Skynorth. It has the effect of calming inner demons...”

The book detailed the value and flaws of the black ore.

After browsing through the content of the book, Zhang Xuan did not rush to jot down the value of the black ore. Instead, he continued to examine it for a while longer before finally grabbing a blank piece of paper to write down the value that he had estimated.

The currency that he chose to use for his valuation was of course Great Yong coins and pinnacle spirit stones.

After slipping the paper into the box, Zhang Xuan moved on to the next artifact.

It was another rare ore that was of similar value to the Stone of Fallen Star.

Just like that, Zhang Xuan appraised five artifacts. He could not help but raise his eyebrows a little upon realizing that the artifacts that were on display on the shelf were all ores.

In truth, appraising ores was not too difficult. As long as one could correctly determine the properties of the ore, one would be able to easily estimate its value. But if it was a test, it did not make sense to use ores of similar values. Just what in the world was Sovereign Chen Ling up to?

After appraising ten ores, there was finally a change to the genre of the artifacts—medicinal herbs.

Some of the medicinal herbs on display were fresh whereas some were already dried and withered, making it extremely difficult to discern them properly. Keeping Wu Tao's limited capabilities as an appraiser into mind, Zhang Xuan intentionally slowed down.

For some plants, he acted as if he was unable to determine its value, such that he took out a book and began jotting down notes, seemingly attempting to make a clever deduction.

“Alright, we shall be ending the appraisal today. Please return and rest well. We shall continue the appraisal tomorrow!”

After some time, a voice suddenly sounded from outside the hall. Following which, a middle-aged man walked right into the very center of the room.

# 1802 Snooping Around Sovereign Chen Ling's Palace

Upon seeing the middle-aged man, Zhang Xuan's eyebrows shot up slightly.

The middle-aged man was actually a Sempiternal realm consummation cultivator just like him.

“It's finally time for a rest...”

“I really should take this resting time to brush up on my knowledge in preparation for tomorrow!”

“These artifacts are simply too difficult to appraise...”

...

Hearing that it was finally rest time, the crowd subconsciously heaved a sigh of relief. Gradually, silent mutterings began sounding here and there.

The artifacts on display in the room were progressively getting more and more difficult to appraise. Even though the crowd that had gathered were all the top-notch appraisers of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe, they were already starting to feel the limits of their knowledge.

This rest time had really come at a timely moment. Even though it was called ‘rest time’, chances were that most of the appraiser would take the opportunity to read some reference books to ensure greater accuracy in their appraisals.

Otherwise, they might just lose their heads after appraising one of the artifacts inaccurately.

“Everyone, this way please!”

Following which, dozens of guards dressed in monotonous black armor stepped forward. Each of them was assigned an

appraiser to escort back to their living quarters, including Zhang Xuan.

Even though Zhang Xuan had many doubts in his mind at the moment, he knew that posing his questions would draw unnecessary attention to himself, so he chose to keep silent. Following quietly behind the guard, he maneuvered through corridor after corridor.

Soon, he arrived before a room. It seemed like each of the appraisers was assigned a room.

“You aren’t allowed to visit or interact with one another. If you wish to access any reading material, you can make a request through me. If the palace has the reading material that you require, I’ll bring it over to your room. Similarly, if you wish to cultivate or recuperate from your fatigue, you can request medicinal herbs or pills from me as well,” the guard instructed as he opened the door to the room for Zhang Xuan.

“I understand!” Zhang Xuan nodded as he entered the room.

There was an isolation formation within the room that prevented him from using any Communication Jade Token. It seemed like they were really determined to stop any possible communication among the appraisers.

The moment that they started to exchange insights, the prices determined by each of the appraisers would become more similar to one another. If so, it would be hard to accurately gauge the true price of the artifacts.

Jiya!

The door creaked to a close as Zhang Xuan took a seat.

The silent chamber was not too big, spanning roughly forty square meters. Nevertheless, whatever one would typically require could all be found in the room, be it water, a table, chairs, or a bed. There were Spirit Gathering Formations fueled by pinnacle spirit stones set up within the room, supplying ample spiritual energy to those residing within. No matter how exhausted a person was, they would be able to recover to their full strength just by spending a short period of time within the room.

This is a good opportunity for me to look into the whereabouts of the dragon blood! Zhang Xuan thought as he took a seat on the floor.

Taking a deep breath, his Primordial Spirit slipped out of his body from his glabella.

The reason that he had gone to the trouble of getting there was not to serve as an appraiser for Sovereign Chen Ling but to find dragon blood in order to undo the seal on the Dragonbone Divine Spear. Since he had some free time to kill, it went without saying that it was an ideal chance for him to do some scouting.

His Primordial Spirit floated quietly in the room for a moment before discreetly heading out. As he tried to pass through the door, he suddenly felt a force pushing him back.

This formation actually hinders the passageway of souls! Zhang Xuan widened his eyes in astonishment.

Soul oracles had long vanished from the face of the Master Teacher Continent, resulting in the Master Teacher Pavilion and many other major powers neglecting to set up defenses against souls. However, the soul oracle occupation was still very much existent among the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe,

As a result, most major powers in the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe would still erect anti-soul oracle barriers to prevent them from snooping into their affairs.

If he attempted to forcefully barge through the barrier, it might bring him greater trouble.

Eye of Insight!

Through his sharp gaze, Zhang Xuan swiftly found openings in the formation that he could slip through with ease.

Hu!

A slight crack opened between the doors as he slipped out silently.

“This is where you’ll stay for the night...”

Along the corridor, the black-armored guards were still settling the appraisers into their accommodations.

Zhang Xuan stuck close to the wall as he swiftly flitted away from the area.

As his Primordial Spirit had reached Sempiternal realm consummation as well, it was simply too easy for him to hide himself from those guards.

Leaving the accommodation, Zhang Xuan began to wander around the area. Considering that he was in Sovereign Chen Ling's palace, he dared not fly too high. It was not that he was afraid of the defensive formations that were around the area, but he knew that it was likely that there would be Ancient Sages lurking within the perimeter. If he was noticed by one of them, he would be in deep trouble.

The palaces of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe are unlike those of the Master Teacher Pavilions. Perhaps landscaping isn't an occupation here, so they pay little heed to geography, fortune, and the sort. Nevertheless, through their runic inscriptions and formations, their palaces are practically no different from impregnable fortresses. Even with the severe injuries that Sovereign Chen Ling has sustained, as long he chooses to hole himself up in his palace, it would be nigh impossible for Sovereign Chen Yong and the others to corner him and take his life! Zhang Xuan thought as he swiftly mapped out the palace in his mind.

On the Master Teacher Pavilion, it was convention to look for a land that was blessed by natural forces. This way, one would be able to make use of the surrounding geography to gather spiritual energy in the area.

Such a convention was not shared by the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe. What they did instead was inscribe their runes on the walls and floors. Despite not tapping into the geographical advantages of the land, they were still able to fill their living areas with spiritual energy, thus creating an environment suitable for cultivation.

Despite the striking similarities between the two, there was a vast difference in the outcome. The former gathered spiritual

energy without harming the environment, thus laying the foundation for sustainable, long-term development. On the other hand, the latter devoured spiritual energy from the land, caring little about the life and death of others sharing the environment.

Perhaps, this could also be a mark of the differences between Otherworldly Demons and mankind.

“I don’t sense dragon blood anywhere...”

By now, Zhang Xuan had already roamed around the palace for hours, having been to nearly every nook and cranny of Sovereign Chen Ling’s palace. Yet, he could not find any trace of dragon blood. In fact, even the Dragonscale Grass that Ancient Sage Hao Xun had mentioned previously was nowhere to be seen.

Thinking back, the news that Ancient Sage Hao Xun knew of was three thousand years old, so was it possible that... the Blood Lake containing the dragon blood had already ceased to exist?

All that’s left is that building...

After flying for a moment longer, Zhang Xuan set his sights on the final location—Sovereign Chen Ling’s sleeping chambers.

Due to the aura of Ancient Sages lingering in the area, he had not dared enter the premises.

Since he had not sensed the presence of dragon blood anywhere else, if the Blood Lake was truly still existent, that was the only place left where it could be.

Regardless of whether there are Ancient Sages there or not, I’ll have to drop by and take a look... Zhang Xuan took a deep breath and resolved himself.

From the moment that he chose to infiltrate Sovereign Chen Ling’s palace, he had already known that he would face great danger in his undertaking. Without a doubt, sneaking into Sovereign Chen Ling’s sleeping chambers was an extremely risky action, but he could not give up without at least giving it a try.

Thus, he reduced his presence to the bare minimum before activating his Eye of Insight to take a closer look at the sleeping chambers not too far away.

The entire building was shrouded by a unique seal that would swiftly detect any intruders attempting to snoop in, including soul oracles.

Knowing the dangers involved, Zhang Xuan did not rush to make any reckless moves. Instead, he bided his time for an opportune moment to strike. He hid himself in the midst of a massive tree and reined in his aura.

With his Soul Depth reaching a level comparable to Ancient Sages, he was already able to remain impervious regardless of the happenings around him. Since there was a good chance that he would be noticed if he tried to breach the seal, he chose to hold back his anxiety and forced himself to patiently wait.

As long as someone resided in the living chamber, there were bound to be people entering and leaving it. That would create the opportunity required for him to move in and out.

After waiting for nearly an hour, a voice finally sounded behind him. “How are the appraisers we have recruited this time around?”

Slowly turning his gaze over, Zhang Xuan saw the Sempiternal realm consummation middle-aged man whom he had met at the hall earlier walking behind an elder. The two of them were heading in the direction of the sleeping chamber.

The elder had reined his aura into his body, making it difficult to gauge the depth of his strength. However, the tremendous pressure that he exerted through his eyes felt as if he could see through any disguise and concealment with a glance.

“An Ancient Sage?” Zhang Xuan narrowed his eyes.

There was no doubt about it. The elder had to be an Ancient Sage cultivator.

As expected of Sovereign Chen Ling’s sleeping chamber, it was indeed guarded by the cream of the crop.

Knowing the prowess of the elder before him, Zhang Xuan dared not move. Hiding amid the massive tree, he held his breath tightly and forced himself to remain completely stationary. He was afraid that he would unintentionally give away a clue that would reveal his presence.

“There are some appraisers who are nearly done appraising all of the artifacts, but they are still uncertain about the values of some of the artifacts.” The middle-aged man sighed. “It’s regrettable, but the appraisers of our Spirit Tribe are simply too lacking in comparison to those of the Master Teacher Continent!”

# 1803 You Found Me!

“Trust and rules are of the utmost importance on the Master Teacher Continent, so the principles imposed on the appraisers are much higher. On the other hand, the Spirit Tribe is a largely lawless area, so appraisers here tend to lie and exaggerate. As a result, the prices that they come up with are unreliable. How distasteful!” The elderly Ancient Sage shook his head, seemingly displeased with such circumstances.

The Otherworldly Demonic Tribe lived in an environment that could be described as ‘survival of the fittest’. Most appraisers had devoted their lives to the pursuit of knowledge in order to refine their craft, and they were highly dependent on their eye of discernment and reputation for a living. In terms of strength, they could only be said to be subpar at best.

If their client was an ordinary cultivator, they could still speak the truth. However, if they were standing before powerful experts, speaking the truth could very well cost them their life.

After all, who knew when an expert would fly into a rage and slay them in the fit of their anger?

There were plenty of cases where powerful cultivators suffered a lapse in judgement while purchasing an expensive artifact, only to have their foolishness pointed out while consulting an appraiser. Often, the honest words of the appraiser would incur the wrath of the powerful cultivator, thus inducing the powerful cultivator to vent their anger on the appraiser.

As such, it had become a custom for appraisers to mince their words when making an evaluation.

Despite that, there were still many appraisers around due to market demand. Without appraisers to value artifacts, the market would swiftly descend into chaos.

“Did you inform them that we are interested in finding out the real value of those artifacts instead of inflated numbers?” the elderly Ancient Sage asked.

“I have made sure to relay those words to every single one of the appraisers, but there are still a handful who jotted down ridiculously inflated figures in their valuation!” the middle-aged man reported.

“Drag those people out and execute them. I trust that the other appraisers will know what’s best for them once we make an example out of them!” The elderly Ancient Sage harrumphed as his killing intent burst forth.

In an instant, it felt as if the area had been plunged into the midst of a snowy mountain. Even the massive tree that Zhang Xuan was hiding on swiftly withered as a result of the overwhelming aura.

The might of Ancient Sage experts was not just for show. Even a mere sliver of their strength was enough to place one in great discomfort.

This aura... Zhang Xuan’s heart jolted.

There was indeed a wintry edge to the aura emanated by the Ancient Sage’s aura, but it was not due to coldness. Rather, there was an eerie undertone to the aura, reminiscent of the netherworld.

Such an aura was not foreign to Zhang Xuan, and he only knew of one occupation that was capable of exerting such an aura.

The soul oracles!

Could the elderly Ancient Sage possibly be a soul oracle?

“Hmm?”

As Zhang Xuan noticed the anomaly, the elderly Ancient Sage seemed to have noticed something amiss in his surroundings as well, and a momentary frown crept onto his forehead.

Noticing the anomaly on the elderly Ancient Sage’s expression, the middle-aged man asked, “Ancient Sage Mo Ling, what’s wrong?”

“It’s nothing much.” Ancient Sage Mo Ling waved his hand. “You can return for the time being. Do what I have just said.

Kill a couple of appraisers and make an example of them to the others. The others should fall in line fast enough!”

“I understand!” The middle-aged man nodded.

He quickly turned around and left the area.

After the middle-aged man left, the elderly Ancient Sage remained on the spot for quite a while, not moving at all.

Hiding in the tree, Zhang Xuan’s lips could not help but twitch in worry. Have I been noticed? Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

He did not dare claim that his ability to conceal himself was unparalleled, but with his Soul Depth exceeding 30.0, even Ancient Sages would have trouble sensing his presence.

A brief moment of bewilderment earlier had caused a slight fluctuation in his soul energy, but he had suppressed it quick enough. Under normal circumstances, not even Sovereign Chen Ling would have noticed his presence through something as subtle as that. Was it really possible for this elderly Ancient Sage to have noticed his presence?

Time ticked by slowly, but the elderly Ancient Sage remained rooted to the spot. It might just have been Zhang Xuan’s imagination, but it felt like the spirit of the elderly Ancient Sage was locked upon him. He realized that if he did not flee, he might not have the chance to do so in the future.

Flee!

Without any hesitation, he immediately dived right into the ground.

“Lost patience, eh?”

Seeing that Zhang Xuan had finally moved, the elderly Ancient Sage, Mo Ling, suddenly opened his eyes, and a brilliant light shone forth from them, almost as if a crack of dawn illuminating the dark sky. Following which, he stomped his feet heavily on the ground.

Boom!

The earth immediately began shuddering as ripples of energy diffused beneath his feet like water undulations.

At that moment, Zhang Xuan's Primordial Spirit came into contact with the ground. He should have been able to dive underground with absolute ease, but he felt as if he had crashed into a metal board. The energy ripples were warding him away, causing him to fall weakly to the ground instead.

Seeing that a casual stomp from the other party was more than enough to block his passageway, Zhang Xuan's face warped awfully. "This is really bad..."

He was a simple soul. In order to hide his presence, he had not brought the Infernal Blacksaber, Vicious, the Dragonbone Divine Spear, and the rest with him. If the elderly Ancient Sage cornered him, he would no doubt die.

Hu!

Knowing that the surface had been sealed and that it was nigh impossible for him to escape underground, Zhang Xuan immediately shot into the air instead.

"If I allow you to escape, I will really be a failure of an Ancient Sage!" the elderly Ancient Sage scoffed as he raised his hand.

Hula!

A chilling aura swiftly shrouded the massive tree. Before Zhang Xuan could soar into the air, his Primordial Spirit froze once more. It was as if he had fallen into a bog and was unable to move.

"Break!" Zhang Xuan raised his finger and tapped it lightly.

Hula!

The surrounding space rippled, and cracks started to form on it.

Previously, he had still needed the power of the Dragonbone Divine Spear in order to break space and form a spatial passageway. However, with his cultivation reaching Sempiternal realm consummation, he could do it easily even with just a tap of his finger.

“Humph!”

Ancient Sage Mo Ling’s lips curved upward, almost as if he had expected Zhang Xuan to make such a move. He raised his palms together and clapped them together midair.

The cracks in space swiftly mended back together. At the same time, the surrounding space swiftly fortified itself to the point that it was as tough as steel. Despite being able to tear open the space easily a moment ago, Zhang Xuan found that he was unable to even faze it anymore.

The strength of an Ancient Sage was simply too great. Without Vicious and the Infernal Black Saber, Zhang Xuan really did not stand a chance.

Flaws!

Knowing that he could really lose his life if this continued, Zhang Xuan did not dare hold back.

Huala!

The Library of Heaven’s Path jolted a little, and an additional book materialized in it.

With a hurried tap, the wisdom contained within the book flowed into Zhang Xuan’s mind.

In the blink of an eye, the flaws of the sealed space appeared in his mind.

I see... Zhang Xuan nodded in realization.

The other party was using soul oracle arts to seal the surrounding space. Even though it seemed tough and impenetrable, the truth was that there were many openings.

Thus, he retreated slightly from the air before tapping his feet lightly on the space beneath him.

Huala!

The space that he had just tapped on lightly was where one of the flaws of the soul oracle art was located. Cracks began spreading throughout the surrounding space once again.

“Hmm?”

Not expecting a Sempiternal realm soul to be able to overcome his seal so easily, a slight frown formed between Ancient Sage Mo Ling's brows. He raised his hand and grasped at Zhang Xuan.

Zhang Xuan could tell with a single glance that there were eight flaws in this strike, so he continued charging forward without bothering to dodge the other party's attack at all.

Hula!

His silhouette entered the dimension rift, and it seemed like he would tread through space and disappear at any moment.

“Don't you dare!”

Seeing how the other party dared to ignore his attack and continue with escaping, Ancient Sage Mo Ling's face darkened further. He raised his hands and clapped them together forcefully.

The dimension rift began closing at a rapid pace once more. If Zhang Xuan failed to stand his ground, he could very well be crushed into bits.

Without the slightest hint of panic, Zhang Xuan exhaled a mouthful of turbid air before stretching his arm thirty meters away to tap at a certain point in space.

Deng deng deng deng!

Ancient Sage Mo Ling immediately felt his flow of energy being abruptly severed, and he retreated two steps in a fluster.

Hu!

Unable to take it any longer, he drew his soul out from his glabella.

In an instant, a furious gale blew across the entire area, and a sinister aura descended upon the land.

“Farewell!”

Hula!

Barely after Ancient Sage Mo Ling drew out his soul, a calm voice sounded in his ears. Following which, the dimension rift

vanished, and the soul that had been present in the area just a moment ago vanished without a trace.

# 1804 Investigations

Ancient Mo Ling's body froze on the spot as he swiftly rose into the air with his massive soul to assess the surroundings. However, the various buildings around the area were completely silent, and the formations in the area did not seem like they had been touched at all.

It was as if no one had been there in the first place.

Has he escaped?

Ancient Sage Mo Ling's eyes narrowed menacingly as a frighteningly cold aura drifted from him.

As the strongest expert of the soul oracles, he possessed extraordinary cultivation. He had thought that he would be able to capture the other party easily, but who could have known that despite having drawn his soul out of his body, the other party would still manage to escape his sight?

This was as good as a crisp slap on his face!

There's no way he could have gotten far away from here, Ancient Sage Mo Ling thought.

With a thought, he activated the formations all around Sovereign Chen Ling's palace.

The other party might have managed to escape through the dimension rift, but with the immense pressure exerted from his soul energy earlier, there was no way that the other party would have been able to get too far. At the very least, he was definitely still in the palace!

Furthermore, based on his understanding of souls, the other party's main body was certainly in the area. Otherwise, he would have detected the other party's presence much earlier.

Huala!

Ancient Sage Mo Ling brought his soul back into his body before opening his tightly shut eyes once more.

“Just who in the world is he? His aura didn’t seem to have the slightest yin aura to it, and he was able to escape even under my pressure...”

He knew all of the living soul oracles in the world, and even Ancient Sage soul oracles would be unable to escape from him in such a manner. He could not believe that someone had actually managed to slip past him.

Ancient Sage Mo Ling pondered for a moment but was unable to come to a conclusion. Thus, he turned around and shouted, “Men!”

“Ancient Sage Mo Ling!” A black-armored middle-aged man walked out from the shadows.

“Have any suspicious individuals entered the palace recently?” Ancient Sage Mo Ling asked.

“Reporting to Ancient Sage Mo Ling, ever since Sovereign Chen Ling’s return, the palace has been completely sealed. Over the past month, the only ones who have been able to enter the palace are the appraisers. There is a total of 232 of them, and I haven’t allowed a single one of them to leave the premises yet!” “Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

“Appraisers?” Ancient Sage Mo Ling harrumphed coldly. “That fellow has to be among them. Bring all of their information to me!”

“Yes!” The middle-aged man nodded.

Just as he was about to take his leave, Ancient Sage Mo Ling’s voice suddenly sounded once more. “Wait a moment. I’ll go with you. I shall investigate this matter personally and root out that fellow with my own hands!”

...

Returning into his body through his glabella, Zhang Xuan’s eyes shot open, and he heaved a sigh of relief.

That was a close call!

He did not think that he would encounter a soul oracle Ancient Sage. Due to the incredible sensitivity that soul oracles had toward pulsations of soul energy, the other party had noticed his presence in an instant.

It was fortunate that he had managed to exploit the other party's flaws, or else he would have died before he even knew it.

It was no wonder Sovereign Chen Yong, Liu Yang, and the others said that Sovereign Chen Ling's palace was fraught with danger. It seemed like he had really underestimated the forces that Sovereign Chen Ling had under his command.

Due to the elusive nature of soul oracles, they had an intrinsic advantage when it came to scouting ahead and escaping enemies. Nevertheless, that was not to say that their means were infallible.

Given that the elderly Ancient Sage has noticed my presence, it's very likely that he'll start investigating the appraisers. Should I play it safe and leave right away?

A conflicted look surfaced on Zhang Xuan's face.

Since the only guests that Sovereign Chen Ling had invited in recent days were the appraisers, the chances of the intruder being one of the appraisers were extremely high. If Zhang Xuan was in the other party's position, he would start investigating from the appraisers as well.

At this rate, it would not take long for the elderly Ancient Sage to get to him.

If he wanted to escape, he would have to quickly make up his mind.

Every second of delay meant a lower probability that he would be able to make a safe getaway.

But once I leave Sovereign Chen Ling's palace, the chances of me being able to return to the area are near zero...

It had not been easy for Zhang Xuan to pass off as an appraiser to get in there; this was a rare chance for him to find the Blood

Lake and raise his fighting prowess swiftly. He was reluctant to leave empty-handed!

“Appraisers, step out of your room and gather over!”

As Zhang Xuan was still hesitating over the matter, he suddenly heard a bellow outside. Follow which, countless footsteps filled the air, and it seemed like a guard was stationed outside each of the room.

It’s already too late to escape now... Zhang Xuan heaved a deep sigh as he got to his feet.

The elderly Ancient Sage was far more efficient than he had expected. He had managed to put the clues together and determine the next course of action in just a few moments.

However, this did not necessarily spell the end.

Unlike ordinary soul oracles, Zhang Xuan’s soul was fully compatible with his physical body, making him appear no different from other Otherworldly Demons on the surface. Furthermore, his identity was clean. As such, the chances of the elderly Ancient Sage rooting him out were not high.

Walking out of the room, Zhang Xuan was welcomed by an army of cold-faced guards. One of them walked up to him and forcefully ordered him, “Get over here!”

With the escort of the guard, he was quickly taken to a hall that had soldiers standing at alert all around. The Sempiternal realm consummation middle-aged man and Ancient Sage Mo Ling were standing at the very center of the room, eyeing each and every one of the appraisers sharply.

Allowing a hint of confusion and apprehension to appear on his face, Zhang Xuan entered the hall behind the other appraisers.

As soon as he entered the room, he felt Ancient Sage Mo Ling’s piercing stare falling on him, seemingly attempting to see through his soul. In response to the piercing stare, he continued walking forward as if he had not noticed anything at all. A short moment later, the latter retracted his gaze.

In less than five minutes, all two hundred or so appraisers had been brought into the hall.

The Sempiternal realm consummation middle-aged man presented a scroll to Ancient Sage Mo Ling.

Ancient Sage Mo Ling swiftly scanned through the scroll with his Spiritual Perception, and it did not take him long to finish browsing through its contents.

“We have done a thorough background check on every single one of these appraisers before bringing them in. They are reputable individuals in the region that they reside in, and there’s nothing suspicious about their backgrounds. Also, we found no association between Sovereign Chen Yong and them. According to the intelligence that we have gathered so far, it doesn’t seem like any of them are soul oracles...” The middle-aged man quickly summarized the report for Ancient Sage Mo Ling.

“There are no soul oracles among them? Are you telling me that the fellow from earlier appeared out of nowhere?” Ancient Sage Mo Ling sneered coldly.

He knew just how secure the defenses of Sovereign Chen Ling’s palace were. Even Ancient Sages would not dream of being able to sneak into the palace without drawing anyone’s attention.

Over the past month, other than those appraisers, there was no one else who had entered Sovereign Chen Ling’s palace.

In other words, the soul oracle who had just escaped from him was definitely among the group of people before him.

The middle-aged man hurriedly clasped his fist and replied, “I apologize for my failure! It is possible that the culprit has concealed their identity as well!”

The two of them turned their gazes toward the appraisers before them once more.

There were confused and fearful looks on the faces of the appraisers. None of them seemed to have any idea why they had been summoned there in a hurry, and they seemed to be

afraid that they had unwittingly done something that had incurred the wrath of Sovereign Chen Ling.

With a cold sneer, Ancient Sage Mo Ling spread his powerful soul energy across the area to enshroud all two hundred or so appraisers.

The next instant, Zhang Xuan felt as if his body had been shackled by an invisible rope. His zhenqi instinctively jolted in an attempt to retaliate against this aggression, but fortunately, he managed to suppress it in time.

Tzzzzzz!

Ancient Sage Mo Ling's soul threads crept into his acupoints and traversed through his meridians, seemingly heading for his soul.

Zhang Xuan could tell that this was a technique that allowed one to discern the very essence of one's soul. He knew that it would not cause him any harm, so he chose to remain still.

As someone who had comprehended Soul Quintessence and cultivated the Heaven's Path Soul Art, he was capable of altering the aura of his soul at will. He knew that the other party had sensed his soul aura, so he had made sure to disguise it as soon as he returned to his accommodation. No matter how Ancient Sage Mo Ling searched, there was no way that he would find anything that would suggest that he was a soul oracle.

Just as he had expected, after circulating through his meridians, the soul thread was extracted from his body.

"Ancient Sage Mo Ling..." The middle-aged man looked over with a concerned look on his face, wanting to know the results on the other party's inspection.

Ancient Sage Mo Ling replied with a shake of his head. There was a deep frown etched on his forehead, indicating his disbelief toward the results of his search.

He had thought that he would be able to root out the culprit swiftly through searching the souls of the appraisers. After all, there was a fundamental difference between the souls of

ordinary cultivators and soul oracles! Who could have known that the results would be a negative for all of the appraisers!

Ancient Sage Mo Long closed his eyes and pondered for a moment. Soon, a thought emerged in his mind, and he opened his eyes once more. “Which appraisers arrived today?”

Gedeng!

Zhang Xuan’s heart skipped a beat.

# 1805 I Am Being Suspected

Zhang Xuan had thought of many countermeasures to ensure that Ancient Sage Mo Ling was unable to figure out his true identity, but he had forgotten one crucial factor—time of arrival.

Considering that trouble had only happened a moment ago, the chances were that the one responsible was an appraiser who had arrived that day.

“Four appraisers came today. They are namely Wu Tao from Kaiyong City, Mo Fei from Huhai City...” The middle-aged man quickly took out a list and began reciting some names. Following which, he turned to the crowd and instructed, “The four of you, step out!”

Without any hesitation, Zhang Xuan walked out from the group.

The more hesitant that he was to step out at this moment, the more likely that he would be exposed. Thus, it would be much wiser for him to face the matter courageously instead.

In any case, the current identity that he had assumed, Wu Tao, had a clean background, so there was no need for him to fear anything.

“Am I right to say that the four of you only arrived at the palace earlier today?” Ancient Sage Mo Ling slowly walked up to the four of them and swept his gaze across them.

His gaze paused on Zhang Xuan for a moment, but it did not seem like he noticed anything peculiar about him.

A slight frown emerged on his forehead.

At that moment, Ancient Sage Mo Ling noticed the wary looks on the appraisers’ faces within the room, so he calmly explained, “There’s no need to panic. We are currently rooting out an intruder who snuck into the palace among you, and we have no intentions of hurting the rest of you. Thus, there’s no reason for you to worry about anything.”

Hearing that this was a procedure to root out an intruder, the crowd heaved a sigh of relief.

While they might be a little greedy at times, they were indeed real appraisers and had nothing to do with whatever intruder there was in the palace. That naturally meant that there was nothing for them to worry about.

Ancient Sage Mo Ling carefully observed the expressions of the appraisers in the room, but he was still unable to discern anything from the change in their emotions. The frown on his forehead tightened as he continued. “This intruder is a soul oracle, so it’s inevitable that his soul won’t be as compatible with his body as normal cultivators. I have an artifact that inspects the compatibility between one’s soul and physical body, and I need each one of you to come up one by one. Through this, I’ll be able to determine who the intruder hiding among you all is.”

As he spoke, he snapped his fingers and brought out a round orb. It revolved quietly in the air, emanating a white glow.

“Why don’t we start with the four guests who arrived earlier today?” Ancient Sage Mo Ling turned to Zhang Xuan and the other three as he spoke.

“Very well!” One of the appraisers among the group of four stepped out.

According to the name that the middle-aged man had called him earlier, he was Mo Fei.

He walked right up to the round orb, and the white light emanated embraced his body.

Weng!

A series of numbers appeared on the surface of the round orb.

Ninety-four!

“Any compatibility above ninety shows that one is not a soul oracle... You can head down now. Next!” the middle-aged man said.

Under normal circumstances, the compatibility between a person’s body and soul would be the highest at birth, reaching

one hundred most of the time. However, as one's soul developed through cultivation, it was inevitable that there would be some degree of incompatibility between one's body and soul.

Even so, as long as one was not a soul oracle, the compatibility level would still easily exceed ninety.

Of course, Mo Fei was not surprised to see such a result, so he turned around and returned to the crowd.

Following which, the second appraiser stepped forward and stood under the round orb.

ninety-two!

He also met the requirements. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

The result for the third appraiser was a pass at ninety-six, and it was finally Zhang Xuan's turn to head up.

Taking a deep breath, he walked toward the center of the room.

As there were no soul oracles on the Master Teacher Continent, Zhang Xuan had never seen this artifact before. As such, he was not too sure what the compatibility between his body and soul would be. However, considering that his soul cultivation technique was the Heaven's Path Soul Art, even though he was able to draw his soul out from his body, the compatibility between his body and soul should not be much lower than an ordinary cultivator's.

Standing under the round orb, Zhang Xuan's body was bathed in a warm glow.

Hu!

A series of numbers appeared on the surface of the round orb.

One hundred!

“Hmm? Perfect compatibility?”

Ancient Sage Mo Ling and the middle-aged man were all taken aback.

Achieving a score of one hundred meant that one's body and soul were perfectly compatible with one another! Typically, it would only appear for cultivators who had yet to reach Saint 5-dan Leaving Aperture realm. Considering how the young man's cultivation was already at Saint 7-dan, it was hard to believe that his body and soul still remained so compatible with one another.

“In any case, the fact that his soul is perfectly compatible with his body means that there's no way he's able to separate his soul from his body. So, it's unlikely that he's the intruder...” Ancient Sage Mo Ling shook his head.

He was perplexed by this bewildering result, but there were all kinds of bizarre talents out there in the world. It was not too surprising to see some of them deviating from the norm.

The matter that he should be focusing on at the moment was catching the intruder, and there was no doubt that the latter was a real soul oracle. It was impossible for a soul oracle's soul to be too compatible with their body.

“Continue!”

He had checked on the four appraisers who had arrived that day, but there was nothing off about them. Thus, Ancient Sage Mo Ling could only shake his hand and indicate for the checks to continue.

Soon enough, all two hundred or so appraisers in the room had been put through the check, but none of them had a compatibility that went below ninety.

In other words, similar to the report that he had received earlier, none of the appraisers in the room were a soul oracle.

“Have I guessed wrongly?” Ancient Sage Mo Ling began to doubt himself.

The current situation was truly bewildering to him.

Ever since Sovereign Chen Ling returned from the Master Teacher Continent, the entire palace had undergone several purges to root out all possible spies and enemies hiding in their midst, so the intruder could not possibly be an insider. If none

of the appraisers were the culprit... where in the world did that soul oracle appear from?

Seeing that the results were still inconclusive even after the checks, the middle-aged man asked, "Ancient Sage Mo Ling, what do we do now?"

Ancient Sage Mo Ling pondered deeply for a moment before saying, "Proceed with the appraisal as we planned for the time being, but make sure that none of them are allowed to leave the palace... Oh right! Pass me the results of their appraisal first."

"I understand!"

The middle-aged man quickly dispatched some of the guards to the main hall to retrieve the boxes containing the appraisers' valuations of the artifacts.

"Most of these appraisers were able to get quite close to the mark. Only a very small proportion of them have huge fluctuations in the accuracy of their valuations," the middle-aged man reported as he passed the boxes over.

Those who were able to clear the examination and be selected to enter the palace were the cream of the crop of the appraisers. It was still not too difficult for them to appraise the true value of ordinary ores and medicinal herbs.

"Of the Stone of the Fallen Star, the average valuation we have received is 120 pinnacle spirit stone. As for the Chillwater Rock, it's 250 pinnacle spirit stones..." The middle-aged man went through the prices of the artifacts one after another.

Ancient Sage Mo Ling nodded as he swiftly swept through the answers. All of a sudden, his body froze on the spot. He turned to the middle-aged man and asked, "Who is this Wu Tao? How are his answers all so precise?"

Even for two of the same ores, the prices could vary significantly depending on size, coloration, and location of production. As such, it was difficult to assess the objective price of the artifacts. Thus, the prices that the middle-aged man was reporting were based on the average of the valuations

made by the two hundred or so appraisers after removing the outliers.

And shockingly, the estimates made by Wu Tao were extremely close to the average.

Most of the appraisers still had a handful of their estimates close to the average, but for the past few ores and medicinal herbs reported, Wu Tao's estimate was only one or two pinnacle spirit stones away from the average. This raised some doubts in Ancient Sage Mo Ling's mind.

"I was also rather perplexed about that," the middle-aged man replied. "I reckon that he must be exceptionally skilled in appraising."

"I can't deny that possibility, but... if I recall correctly, Wu Tao is the person who has a soul-body compatibility of one hundred, right?" A glint flashed across Ancient Sage Mo Ling's eyes.

It was true that appraisers specialized in the field of evaluating the value of objects, but to be able to achieve such high precision every single time was truly unimaginable.

Together with the fact that the other party had a bizarre soul-body compatibility of one hundred, it did feel like something was amiss.

"That's right!" The middle-aged man nodded.

He, too, had sensed that something was off.

Ancient Sage Mo Ling's eyebrows shot up as he commanded, "Bring me all of the information concerning this Appraiser Wu Tao!"

# 1806 I Have Been Discovered

It did not take long for the information regarding Wu Tao to be delivered to Ancient Sage Mo Ling.

Spanning ten pages, it contained a summary of Wu Tao's history in appraising.

A moment later, Ancient Sage Mo Ling placed the papers aside and narrowed his eyes.

Based on what he had just read, while it was undeniable that Wu Tao was a fairly capable appraiser, his proficiency was definitely not high to have achieved such results in the previous test. One time might still be attributed to luck, but for it to happen consistently across the many artifacts, it would be truly foolish to simply mark it off as sheer coincidence.

“Shall I bring that fellow in for interrogation?” The middle-aged man swiftly looked through the content of the papers, and a doubtful frown etched its way onto his forehead.

“There's no need for that. I'll head there personally!” Ancient Sage Mo Ling replied imposingly.

He was someone who had received the most complete heritage of the soul oracles. If he proclaimed that he was second in the occupation, there would definitely be no one who would claim that they were first!

But on that very day, he found his confidence wavering.

The intruder was just a Sempiternal realm soul oracle, but he had nearly overlooked the other party when the other party was hiding right beneath his nose. Furthermore, despite having confronted the other party, the other party had still managed to escape from him... This was a feat that he would definitely have been unable to achieve back when he was still at the Sempiternal realm.

If that was the case, did it not mean that the other party was a soul oracle who was even more skilled than him?

This realization had filled Ancient Sage Mo Ling with intrigue.

He quickly headed to the hall where the appraising was ongoing. Searching through the crowd, he swiftly locked onto Appraiser Wu Tao.

Looking at just his appearance, there was really nothing peculiar about Appraiser Wu Tao. At that moment, he was holding a medicinal herb in one hand while swiftly flipping through some research material with his other hand.

In terms of subtle movements, he did seem to be an appraiser through and through. There was nothing about him that one could fault.

Ancient Sage Mo Ling swiftly hid the livid look on his face before walking up to the other party and saying with a smile, “Appraiser Wu Tao, please hold on for a moment. I happen to have a treasure that I am unable to ascertain the value of. May I trouble you to take a look at it for me?”

In truth, Zhang Xuan had noticed Ancient Sage Mo Ling’s presence as soon as he entered the hall, and he could clearly sense the latter’s intent gaze upon him. When the latter approached him, his lips could not help but twitch a little. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

His disguise should have been flawless, so why was the other party’s attention so focused on him?

Did he somehow unintentionally give himself away?

Despite Zhang Xuan’s doubts, he did not allow them to show on his face. With a hint of fluster typical of someone being abruptly approached by an esteemed individual, he hurriedly nodded and replied, “Y-yes! It’ll be my pleasure to be of service to you!”

Ancient Sage Mo Ling flicked his wrist and took out something reminiscent of a golden ruler.

Even at the very first glance, Zhang Xuan could tell that it was a powerful artifact. However, until the abilities of the ruler

were activated, he would not be able to assess the exact tier of the artifact.

Zhang Xuan took the ruler in his hand, and the next instant, a book materialized in the Library of Heaven's Path.

“Soulcrushing Ruler, Ancient Sage artifact. It's able to lock onto an individual's soul and render the other party incapable of escaping...”

It's an Ancient Sage artifact? But... why is it so light? Zhang Xuan was taken aback.

Similar to Ancient Sages, Ancient Sage artifacts harnessed a law of the world. Artifacts that had undergone the tempering of the heavens, no matter how small they appeared to be, were bound to be frighteningly heavy. Even with Zhang Xuan's current cultivation, he would face some trouble trying to lift an Ancient sage artifact up.

It was clear that Ancient Sage Mo Ling's ruler had reached such a level, but surprisingly, it felt light to Zhang Xuan, similar to most Great Sage artifacts out there. He could not help but feel a little perplexed about this peculiar situation.

Taking a closer look, Zhang Xuan's heart jolted in astonishment. No, that fellow is secretly propping it up with his soul energy...

It was not that the Soulcrushing Ruler was heavy—Ancient Sage Mo Ling was secretly lifting it up with his soul energy, which made it appear as if it was nearly weightless.

To invite him to appraise an artifact yet tamper with the true properties of the artifact... Could it be that Ancient Sage Mo Ling was onto something?

As expected of an Ancient Sage, he sure was not an easy opponent to deal with!

Zhang Xuan's mind swiftly churned into action as he attempted to identify possible routes of escape. However, he soon realized that due to his close proximity to the other party, unless he utilized the Infernal Blacksaber and Vicious, there was no way that he would be able to survive if they suffered a fallout at this very moment.

Watching as Zhang Xuan examined the Soulcrushing Ruler intently, Ancient Sage Mo Ling asked with a smile, “How is it?”

“I’m afraid that I can’t really see through this ruler. In terms of the material and the energy it harnesses, this ruler far surpasses the means of typical Great Sage artifacts. Yet, its weight can’t be compared to Ancient Sage artifacts...”

Halfway through his explanation, Ancient Sage Mo Ling abruptly interjected. “Oh? Does this mean that you have seen a real Ancient Sage artifact in person, Appraiser Wu Tao?”

Gedeng!

Zhang Xuan’s heart skipped a beat. However, without the slightest fluctuation in his expression, he replied, “I have never seen an Ancient Sage artifact in person, but I have heard about them from the books. It’s said that Ancient Sage artifacts are incredibly heavy, such that even an artifact of such size can weigh as much as a towering mountain...”

Before Zhang Xuan could even finish his piece, a cold sneer abruptly sounded in the air. Following which, the space around him distorted, and he was forcefully tugged into another dimension.

“You need not bother to disguise yourself anymore. You aren’t Appraiser Wu Tao!”

“Elder...” Alarmed, Zhang Xuan retreated two steps in panic, seemingly terrified by what was happening around him.

“The heritage of appraisers in the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe isn’t complete in the very first place. Under normal circumstances, they would have trouble appraising even Great Sage artifacts, let alone Ancient Sage artifacts. Yet, you are able to appraise all of the artifacts precisely and see through the tier of the Soulcrushing Ruler in a glance... If Wu Tao really possessed such abilities, his name should have long resounded across the entire otherworldly battlefield!” Ancient Sage Mo Ling placed his hands behind his back as he pointed out the flaws in Zhang Xuan’s disguise with absolute confidence.

If he had still harbored a few doubts previously, at that very moment, he was extremely certain that the person standing before him was the soul oracle who had escaped his clutches.

It was not because of what the other party had said but because he was simply too calm.

Even though his eyes and body language suggested apprehension and fear, a response typical of an ordinary person, there were no fluctuations in his state of mind or soul at all. Unless the other party was acting, how could the other party possibly appear so frightened and yet keep his mind and soul completely placid?

If he still could not tell with that much information, he would truly be a failure of an Ancient Sage!

Ancient Sages were the most powerful beings in the world. There were no cultivators who did not hold deference toward them. Yet, the other party actually had the mood to examine and deduce the weight of the ruler... How could it not be clear that there was a problem?

“Elder, I don’t understand what you are saying...” Zhang Xuan continued exclaiming in a fluster.

At the same moment, he hurriedly called for Vicious in the Book of Heaven’s Path in preparation to make a move.

While he had not found the dragon blood yet, it seemed like the mission was already a failure. He could only attempt to flee for the time being.

“Let’s not waste each other’s time anymore!”

Paying no heed to Zhang Xuan’s ‘fluster’, Ancient Sage Mo Ling pressed his hands together, and the entire area suddenly grew incredibly ominous. An overwhelming outpour of soul energy was crushing down from above, seemingly trying to imprison Zhang Xuan.

It seemed like Ancient Sage Mo Ling had learned from his previous lesson, so he wanted to subdue Zhang Xuan as quickly as possibly by going all out.

“Break!”

Knowing that it was meaningless to keep up his disguise, Zhang Xuan flicked his wrist and whipped out the Infernal Blacksaber. Gathering his zhenqi, he swung the saber forcefully toward the descending soul energy.

Sila!

The soul energy and the surrounding space were immediately severed as a burst of saber qi shot its way toward Ancient Sage Mo Ling.

“You are the spy!” Ancient Sage Mo Ling sneered coldly as he charged forward with the Soulcrushing Ruler in hand.

Ding ding ding ding!

The Soulcrushing Ruler clashed several times with the Infernal Blacksaber before the Infernal Blacksaber was jolted out from Zhang Xuan’s hands.

Despite being Ancient Sage artifacts, the Infernal Blacksaber was clearly much weaker than the Soulcrushing Ruler.

Hula!

After the Infernal Blacksaber was sent flying, Ancient Sage Mo Ling immediately took the opportunity to press forward with his attack, using the Soulcrushing Ruler upon Zhang Xuan once more. In an instant, Zhang Xuan felt as if his soul had been locked in place, and a tremendous force was attempting to rip it apart.

The Soulcrushing Ruler was an artifact that could dissipate even the souls of Ancient Sage experts, let alone Sempiternal realm cultivators like Zhang Xuan.

“Stop him!”

Knowing that he would really lose his life if he continued preserving his trump card, Zhang Xuan swiftly took out a book and flipped it open. A pair of arms darted forth from the book and clawed at the Soulcrushing Ruler.

Against the might of the arms, the devastating Soulcrushing Ruler seemed to turn into a tame lamb. The incredible momentum that it had harnessed a moment ago seemed to

vanish without a trace, and before it could even escape, it was already held firmly in place by a pair of hands.

# 1807 Paying Respects to the Guild Leader

“What?”

Seeing a pair of arms escaping from a book and catching his Soulcruising Ruler in the blink of an eye, Ancient Sage Mo Ling felt goosebumps rising all over his body.

He caught a whiff of the scent of danger.

He instinctively realized that the arms in the book were much stronger than him, such that he would not be a match for them even if he utilized his full strength.

Hula!

Without any hesitation, he drew his soul out from his glabella, and a massive body made out of soul energy appeared. A sinister aura swiftly filled the surroundings, leaving one with a chilling sensation that pierced right into one’s soul.

“Let go!” Ancient Sage Mo Ling roared furiously as he charged forward to grab the Soulcruising Ruler, intending to pull it out of the grasp of the hands.

“Heh!”

However, Vicious had known that he would make such a move right from the start. With a flick of his wrist, the Soulcruising Ruler ended up smacking heavily upon Ancient Sage Mo Ling instead.

Sila!

Struck on the head, Ancient Sage Mo Ling’s massive soul staggered and fell from the sky. It was only an instant, but he had already sustained severe injuries.

After assimilating his arms, Vicious had already reached Blood Reincarnation realm consummation. If not for the fact that he had not grown his flesh and blood yet, his strength would have been comparable to Sovereign Chen Yong back

when the latter was at his peak. There was no doubt that Ancient Sage Mo Ling was powerful, but it was insufficient to deal with Vicious.

Seeing that he had managed to land a blow, Vicious immediately pressed forward, wanting to make use of this opportunity to slay Ancient Sage Mo Ling.

However, Zhang Xuan suddenly raised his arm and halted Vicious. “Wait a moment!”

Of course, it would not be too difficult for him to kill Ancient Sage Mo Ling at that moment, but if it drew the other Ancient Sages over, it could lead to a great deal of trouble.

Vicious did not dare disobey Zhang Xuan’s orders, so he quickly stopped his offense.

Zhang Xuan flicked his finger and swiftly created a dimension rift, intending to escape from the area. However, before he could make his leave, Ancient Sage Mo Ling suddenly stood up once more.

“Subordinate Mo Ling pays respect to the guild leader!”

“Guild leader?”

Taken aback by the remark, Zhang Xuan’s footsteps trailed to a halt. He turned around and looked at Ancient Sage Mo Ling in bewilderment.

“If I’m not mistaken, you aren’t an Otherworldly Demon but Zhang Xuan from the Master Teacher Continent, am I right? That also means that you are the guild leader of our Soul Oracle Guild!” Ancient Sage Mo Ling explained as he bowed deeply as a show of respect.

“You know of me?” Zhang Xuan was startled.

It was true that he had tamed the Seal of Souls of the Soul Oracle Guild, which effectively made him the guild leader.

However, he had already passed the Seal of Souls over to his student, Lu Chong, so it was not in his hand anymore.

“Jiang Fangyou has already informed me that there is a new guild leader for our lineage of soul oracles... A while ago,

when Jiang Fangyou told me that you ended your life on the Master Teacher Continent, I thought that you might make your way over to the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe. From the looks of it, it seems like my guess was spot-on!” Ancient Sage Mo Ling explained respectfully.

Hearing those words, Zhang Xuan fell silent. He suddenly recalled the history of the Soul Oracle Guild.

From Jiang Fangyou, he had learned that the past leader of the Soul Oracle Guild had chosen to accept his death so as to convince the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe of his betrayal of mankind, thus successfully infiltrating their ranks.

This was one of the top secrets of the Master Teacher Continent, which perhaps even the current generation in the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters was unaware of. However, as one of the Ancient Sages of the Soul Oracle Guild, it went without saying that Mo Ling knew of this secret.

It was probably due to this that Mo Ling had immediately made the connection upon hearing that he had ended his life at the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters.

Zhang Xuan was silent for a moment before he swiftly fortified the isolation barriers in the area with a wave of his hand. Following which, he turned to Ancient Sage Mo Ling and asked, “What are you doing here at Sovereign Chen Ling’s palace?”

“Sovereign Chen Yong is simply too powerful. As long as he remains alive, it’s only a matter of time before mankind succumbs to him. Thus, I pretended to swear fealty to Sovereign Chen Ling and incited him to make a move against Sovereign Chen Yong!” Ancient Sage Mo Ling explained.

“You were the one who came up with the plan?” Zhang Xuan widened his eyes in astonishment.

“I knew from the very start that Sovereign Chen Ling is a person of great ambition. All I did was give him a little push on the back by helping him liaise with the Hundred Schools of Philosophers!” Ancient Sage Mo Ling replied.

Hearing those words, Zhang Xuan widened his eyes in realization.

Previously, he had thought that it was bizarre how the Hundred Schools of Philosophers had paid a visit to the Jiang Clan to liaise with the soul oracles. After all, the soul oracles were serving as the spies of mankind among the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe, and it seemed foolish to do anything that could potentially give them away.

However, from the looks of it now, it seemed like the soul oracles had been serving as the intermediary to relay messages between the Hundred Schools of Philosophers and the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe. It was probably through this means of communication that they had been able to coordinate together to launch an ambush on Sovereign Chen Yong.

“I see... I understand the rationale behind your actions, but have you thought that if Sovereign Chen Ling hadn't sustained severe wounds in his fight against Sovereign Chen Yong, you could have very well lost your life by now!” Zhang Xuan said grimly.

He had not really come into contact with Sovereign Chen Ling yet, but based on what he had heard so far, it seemed like Sovereign Chen Ling was an extremist who craved war.

It was true that Sovereign Chen Yong was a fearsome foe to deal with, but he was also the rational mind who had been keeping the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe from launching an attack of mutually assured destruction on mankind. If Sovereign Chen Ling really came to power, the situation would probably devolve into a bitter battle where both races fought down to the very last soldier until one side was utterly eradicated.

More importantly, the very fact that Ancient Sage Mo Ling was able to liaise with the Hundred Schools of Philosophers meant that the soul oracles were spies amid the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe!

The reason that Sovereign Chen Ling had not dealt with them yet was probably because he wanted to make use of their strength and connections to bring down Sovereign Chen Yong

first. Once Sovereign Chen Yong was down, they would be the next in line to be purged!

“I understand all of that, but I also knew that Sovereign Chen Yong has a trump card that he would eventually use to deal with Sovereign Chen Ling and Sovereign Chen Xing if he was forced to a corner,” Ancient Sage Mo Ling replied with a deep sigh.

Hearing those words, Zhang Xuan’s eyebrows shot up in realization.

It was no wonder that the soul oracles were feared even among mankind. They were truly frightening opponents to deal with.

To actually be able to toy with the Three Sovereigns of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe and move them as if they were pieces on a chessboard... this was truly unbelievable. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

Tossing aside his astonishment for the time being, Zhang Xuan asked, “How is Sovereign Chen Ling at the moment? Are his injuries severe?”

“Sovereign Chen Ling and Sovereign Chen Xing have sustained severe injuries, and they haven’t been able to recover from them yet. However, I’m not too sure about the exact circumstances. It seems like he is guarded against me, such that I haven’t even been able to get close to him ever since his return from the Temple of Confucius!” Ancient Sage Mo Ling said.

“I see... What about the appraisers? Why did he suddenly gather so many appraisers at his palace?” Zhang Xuan continued asking.

“I’m not too sure about the details, but if my deduction proves right, he’s probably intending to make an offering to the Spirit God!” Ancient Sage Mo Ling said with a grim look on his face.

“Make an offering to the Spirit God?”

“Indeed. With the severity of his injuries, it will take at least a thousand years for him to make a full recovery, but that’s clearly impractical. As such, his only course of action is to make some offerings to the Spirit God in exchange for power!”

“Isn’t the Spirit God on the same side as Sovereign Chen Yong?” Zhang Xuan asked in bewilderment.

Luo Ruoxin was the Spirit God, and she seemed to have a good relationship with Sovereign Chen Yong. If the other two Sovereigns dared make an offering to her, the chances were that she would kill them on the spot instead of granting them power.

“The Spirit God is an emotionless being. In her eyes, we are no different from insignificant ants. The only way that we can catch her eye is by making an offering to her, and she will bestow her favor upon the one who makes the greatest offering. It’s true that Sovereign Chen Yong had close ties with the Spirit God in the past, but with Sovereign Chen Yong going missing, he has already become completely useless to the Spirit God. As such, why should the Spirit God continue looking after him?” Ancient Sage Mo Ling coldly remarked.

The gods were emotionless beings. If they truly had feelings, how could they sit and watch countless injustices unfolding in the mortal world?

“Besides, Sovereign Chen Ling has already begun preparing the offerings and valuing them. He must be confident in its success before going ahead with it. He has never been a person to waste his time on meaningless pursuits!”

Hearing those words, Zhang Xuan tightly clenched his fists.

He could not bring himself to believe that Luo Ruoxin was such a person, but with so much evidence to the contrary before him, he found his faith in her wavering a little.

No matter what, he had to find Luo Ruoxin once more and ask her in person!

“There are certain requisites that need to be met for the tributes offered to the Spirit God, so there’s a need to value

them in advance so as to avoid incurring the Spirit God's wrath. So, we still have some time on our hands... Speaking of which, guild leader, may I know why you were wandering around Sovereign Chen Ling's palace earlier?" Ancient Sage Mo Ling asked with a frown.

"I'm looking for dragon blood, and I heard that there is some of that in Sovereign Chen Ling's palace. Do you know where it is?" Zhang Xuan asked.

He had tried searching earlier but to no avail. However, if he could engage Ancient Sage Mo Ling's help, this matter could very well come to be.

"You are looking for dragon blood?" Ancient Sage Mo Ling fell into a short moment of silent contemplation before he continued. "I have heard some rumors about it. I don't know exactly where it is, but I have been to most parts of Sovereign Chen Ling's palace and haven't seen any signs of it thus far. If the rumors are true, it should probably be in Sovereign Chen Ling's sleeping chamber!"

"Sovereign Chen Ling's sleeping chamber..." Zhang Xuan narrowed his eyes.

That was what he had previously deduced. It seemed like there was no mistake about it.

# 1808 Ancient Sage Lan Ya

“I need to enter Sovereign Chen Ling’s sleeping chamber to procure some dragon blood. Do you know any way for me to get in?” Zhang Xuan continued asking.

“I’m afraid that what you are asking for isn’t too easy to pull off. After Sovereign Chen Ling returned injured, his sleeping chamber has become a place that even I can’t enter easily. The only one who can walk freely in and out of his sleeping chamber right now is Ancient Sage Lan Ya, so he’s also the only one who knows the details of Sovereign Chen Ling’s current physical condition.”

At this point, Ancient Sage Mo Ling paused for a moment to organize his thoughts before continuing. “Ancient Sage Lan Ya has been following Sovereign Chen Ling ever since he was very young, and he can be said to be Sovereign Chen Ling’s most loyal subordinate. Even though he’s only at the Bloodline Continuance realm, his standing within Sovereign Chen Ling’s lineage is extremely high!”

Those words caused Zhang Xuan’s eyebrows to shoot up as a glint flashed through his eyes. “Is there a way to lure him out and... get rid of him?”

Since Ancient Sage Lan Ya was able to move freely in and out of the sleeping chamber, he might be able to disguise himself as the other party and infiltrate the sleeping chamber, similar to what he had done with Wu Tao.

In any case, Ancient Sage Lan Ya was part of the belligerent Sovereign Chen Ling’s faction, which bore malicious intentions toward mankind. The weaker Sovereign Chen Ling’s faction was, the safer mankind would be.

“You wish to kill Ancient Sage Lan Ya?” Not expecting the new guild leader to be so decisive, Ancient Sage Mo Ling’s lips twitched a little. He lowered his eyes worriedly for a moment before hesitantly speaking up. “I guess it’s not completely impossible to kill him. However, if Sovereign

Chen Ling senses anything, we will find ourselves facing the full wrath of the entire Sovereign Chen Ling faction...”

Given how highly Sovereign Chen Ling regarded Ancient Sage Lan Ya, if the latter really lost his life, there was no doubt that Sovereign Chen Ling would overturn the entire capital if that was what it took to weed out the culprit. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

Zhang Xuan pondered deeply for a moment before saying, “No one will notice it as long as we make ample preparations beforehand!”

Stealing the dragon blood from Sovereign Chen Ling was as good as completely turning the other party against him. Since it was fated that he would be standing on the opposite side from Sovereign Chen Ling, there was no need for him to hesitate to draw the other party’s fury.

“... I understand. I’ll go and make preparations!” Ancient Sage Mo Ling nodded before returning his soul to his physical body.

Hula!

Zhang Xuan also swiftly placed Vicious and the Infernal Blacksaber back in place. Once that was all done, the space around him blurred, and he found himself standing before countless appraisers and guards once more.

The two of them had entered a unique folded space before carrying on with their fight, so those who were in the hall were painfully oblivious to the major fight that had just happened a moment ago.

As soon as he returned back to the hall, Ancient Sage Mo Ling immediately bellowed, “Men!”

The middle-aged man immediately stepped forward.

“I have checked Wu Tao’s identity and verified that he’s innocent. He isn’t the person we are looking for. For the time being, I want you to continue with the investigation. Make

sure to leave no stone unturned!” Ancient Sage Mo Ling ordered.

“Yes!” The middle-aged man quickly nodded before proceeding to relay orders to his subordinates.

While he found Wu Tao extremely suspicious, if even an Ancient Sage was unable to uncover anything about that man, it was unlikely that he would be able to find anything.

“Appraiser Wu Tao, I happen to have some treasures that I am still having trouble figuring out the identity of in my accommodation. If you have time, why don’t you follow me back to my residence to enlighten me?” After dumping everything onto his subordinates, Ancient Sage Mo Ling turned to Zhang Xuan and extended his invitation.

“It would be my honor to be of assistance to you!” Zhang Xuan’s face visibly beamed in delight as he hurriedly bowed in gratitude.

“I’ll be troubling you then, Appraiser Wu Tao,” Ancient Sage Mo Ling replied with a dignified air before turning to the middle-aged man. “I’ll be taking this man away with me. It won’t cause you any trouble, will it?”

“No, of course not!” the middle-aged man quickly replied.

It was just a single appraiser out of the army of two hundred that he had there. It would not affect the progress of the valuation going on.

“Good. As for the rest of you, I’ll be counting on you to continue the investigation. I believe I need not explain what will happen if the intruder foils Sovereign Chen Ling’s plans... Appraiser Wu Tao, follow me!”

After giving the guards a stern reminder, Ancient Sage Mo Ling waved his hand, and Zhang Xuan suddenly felt a force wrapping around him, pulling him up into the sky. Before he knew it, he was already standing before a stately building.

“This is the Hall of Sweetspring. It contains a natural spring that is rich in spirituality. Recently, Ancient Sage Lan Ya has been visiting this place at a fixed time every single day to fetch some water. My guess is that it has something to do with

Sovereign Chen Ling's current physical condition!" Ancient Sage Mo Ling said.

Pushing the door open, Zhang Xuan entered the building. At the very center of the room was a massive spring.

Gu, gu!

The water in the spring splished and splashed.

The water in the spring was transparent and rich in spiritual energy. Zhang Xuan walked forward to try a sip of the water, and it carried a slight hint of refreshing sweetness.

"Not bad!" Zhang Xuan nodded in approval.

Even though this spring water was not as rich in spiritual energy as spirit essence, it was completely free of impurities. If it was used for the forging of pills, it could significantly boost the chances of success.

"Guild leader, are you intending to make a move here? This place is located in close proximity to the sleeping chamber, so there's a good chance that we might alarm others!" Ancient Sage Mo Ling said worriedly.

One should never underestimate the sensitivity of an Ancient Sage's senses. Even though Ancient Sage Lan Ya was not that powerful, such that it was possible for them to kill him in a single blow, if Ancient Sage Lan Ya managed to let out a distress call or something similar, it could render his countless years of infiltrating the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe futile.

It was true that Ancient Sage Mo Ling had pulled Zhang Xuan into a folded space and fought with him earlier without drawing the notice of others, but that was because Zhang Xuan had wanted to hide his identity as well and had no intention of causing a huge fuss. If Ancient Sage Lan Ya attempted something, there was a very good chance that everything could go horribly wrong.

"You're right. We're certainly too close to the sleeping chamber at the moment. I'll set up a formation right now to prevent anything from getting out!" Zhang Xuan said.

“You’ll set up a formation now? Can you make it in time?” Ancient Sage Mo Ling asked with a frown.

Be it setting up a formation or inscribing runes, these were extremely time-consuming activities that required prior preparation. With formation blueprints, for example, one would have to study them for a very long time to thoroughly understand them. Furthermore, a formation that could trap even an Ancient Sage had to be at grade-9 pinnacle at the very minimum, and even the most capable 9-star formation master would require at least one month to pull it off.

It seemed a little too late to be thinking of it then!

“It’s not late at all... Just give me a moment!” Knowing what Ancient Sage Lan Ya was thinking about, Zhang Xuan chuckled softly. He took a look around the room, and with a snap of his fingers, a few hundred formation flags immediately materialized and floated quietly in the air.

“Go!” Zhang Xuan raised his hand.

Hula!

The formation flags began flying in all directions like a loud gale. They pierced themselves into the ground all around the Hall of Sweetspring before vanishing all at once.

“You’re already done? Just like that?” Ancient Sage Mo Ling widened his eyes in disbelief.

Even though he had never seen a 9-star formation master setting up a grade-9 pinnacle formation in person, he had heard things about it. Yet, the young man had managed to complete it just like that!

Everything had happened so quickly that it felt like the young man was just playing a cruel prank on him!

“It has been too long since I last set up a formation, and it seems like I have gotten a little rusty...” Zhang Xuan lowered his head in shame.

He had read quite a number of books recently, which had significantly deepened his understanding of formations. However, it had been quite a while since he had last set up a

formation, thus resulting in significant inefficiency in the set-up process. Otherwise, he would have been able to send the formation flags out right away and finish the set up in a heartbeat.

“Rusty...” Hearing those words, Ancient Sage Mo Ling’s cheeks twitched a little.

If this is how fast you are when you’re rusty, just how fast were you when you were in tiptop condition?

Isn’t this getting a little too exaggerated?

This newly appointed guild leader of ours... doesn’t seem to be a very reliable person!

In the end, Ancient Sage Mo Ling still could not help but doubt the reliability of a formation that had been constructed so quickly. This was similar to how one would not trust a chef who simply tossed a ton of miscellaneous ingredients into a pot and left it to boil afterward!

Deng deng deng!

Just as Ancient Sage Mo Ling was about to raise his doubts regarding the reliability of the formation, footsteps suddenly sounded outside the hall. It sounded like someone was heading their way.

Ancient Sage Mo Ling quickly calculated the time and realized that it was the hour at which Ancient Sage Lan Ya visited the Hall of Sweetspring every day. He immediately sent a telepathic message to Zhang Xuan to warn him, “Ancient Sage Lan Ya is coming...”

Hearing the footsteps too, Zhang Xuan knew that there was no time to be lost. “Take seven steps back and rein in your aura. Make a move only when I tell you to!”

“Take seven steps back?”

Ancient Sage Mo Ling had no idea what Zhang Xuan was up to, but he decided to obey the other party’s commands for the time being on the grounds that the other party was the guild leader.

Jiya!

Barely after they got into position, the door of the Hall of Sweetspring creaked open. A towering figure came into sight.

He was none other than Ancient Sage Lan Ya.

Ancient Sage Lan Ya habitually cast his gaze around the room before walking straight for the spring.

Seeing this, Ancient Sage Mo Ling could not help but narrow his eyes in shock.

He was simply standing still on the spot, not concealing himself at all... but it seemed like Ancient Sage Lan Ya could not see or even perceive his presence?

When had the other party become so blind?

# 1809 How Fragile Life Is

The shocked Ancient Sage Mo Ling swiftly turned his gaze toward Zhang Xuan, and what he saw left him even more flabbergasted.

At that very moment, Zhang Xuan was standing less than three meters away from Ancient Sage Lan Ya, but it was as if the latter could not see him at all. It was truly a baffling sight to him.

Ancient Sage Mo Ling quickly figured out what was going on.

It's the work of the formation...

Due to his high cultivation, it would have been understandable if Ancient Sage Lan Ya had been unable to detect his presence if he hid himself. But the fact that Ancient Sage Lan Ya was unable to notice Zhang Xuan—despite being in close proximity to one another—could only mean to say that the formation was really overpowered!

Ancient Sage Mo Ling carefully extended his Spiritual Perception, wanting to see the principles behind the formation that concealed their presence. However, when his Spiritual Perception swept across Ancient Sage Lan Ya and Zhang Xuan, he astonishingly received no feedback at all. In other words, it was as if the two of them were illusions that did not exist in the world!

He could clearly see them with his eyes, but he could not perceive them with his Spiritual Perception...

Is this... a Spatial Formation?

Ancient Sage Mo Ling narrowed his eyes in astonishment.

He had long mastered Soul Traverse, and he could even pull others into folded spaces together with him, showing that his comprehension of spatial laws was not low at all. However, the Spatial Formation right before him had far surpassed whatever he had seen before.

For even Ancient Sages like them to be unable to detect or see through the Spatial Formation... could it be that Zhang Xuan had mastered the legendary Spatial Quintessence?

No wonder he was so confident in his formation. It turned out that he had the capability to back up his words.

It was laughable how, a moment ago, he had been wondering if Zhang Xuan was exaggerating his claim.

“Now!”

While Ancient Sage Mo Ling was still deep in thought, a voice sounded in his mind. He immediately raised the Soulcruising Ruler in his grasp and sliced it across the air to strike Ancient Sage Lan Ya.

But before his offense could strike its target...

Putong!

Ancient Sage Lan Ya had already collapsed to the ground.

He was dead.

Seeing this, Ancient Sage Mo Ling anxiously turned his gaze toward Zhang Xuan, only to see the latter standing with a sinister saber in his grasp. With an embarrassed look on his face, the latter said, “My bad. I didn’t think that this fellow would be so weak, so I ended up killing him unintentionally...”

Knowing that the other party was an Ancient Sage, he had thought that it would require the collaboration of Vicious and Ancient Sage Mo Ling to slay the other party silently. Yet, who could have thought that all it would take was an Infernal Blacksaber to the other party’s heart?

To die without uttering any lines at all... this had to be the most pitiful death ever!

“Ancient Sage Lan Ya is an Ancient Sage 1-dan Bloodline Continuance realm expert. How could he have been killed so easily?”

Zhang Xuan was not the only one pondering over the matter. Ancient Sage Mo Ling also bore some doubts toward this

peculiar outcome.

Even though Ancient Sage Mo Ling had never fought Ancient Sage Lan Ya before, many years of acquaintanceship allowed him to know roughly how powerful the latter was. With Zhang Xuan's Sempiternal realm consummation cultivation, such a thing should not have been possible!

He could understand it if Zhang Xuan, paired with the Infernal Black Saber, was able to escape or even put up a fight against Ancient Sage Lan Ya, but to actually kill the latter with a single strike... taking the life of an Ancient Sage was not such child's play!

Could Ancient Sage Lan Ya possibly be faking it? Should he step forward and deal the other party a few strikes of his ruler?

With such thoughts in mind, Ancient Sage Mo Ling came out of his concealment and rushed over to Ancient Sage Lan Ya's side. Scanning the latter's body with his Spiritual Perception, his lips began twitching once more.

Ancient Sage Lan Ya... was indeed dead. His soul had dissipated, such that there was not the slightest bit of vitality left in his body. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

"This is really bizarre..." Ancient Sage Mo Ling rubbed his glabella in frustration as he found himself unable to rationalize the situation before him.

Ancient Sages were beings who stood at the very top of the world, be it the Master Teacher Continent or the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe. While Zhang Xuan had indeed landed a critical hit on the other party's vitals, the other party should not have died that easily. To breathe his last breath without even saying a word or letting loose a scream...

It almost felt like a supernatural case.

"Could he possibly be a fake?" Zhang Xuan asked.

"No. I have known him for several thousand years now, and I would recognize him even if he was reduced to ashes. My

guess is that he might have suffered some severe injuries that shook his foundation prior to this, such that he didn't even wield a tenth of his usual strength," Ancient Sage Mo Ling replied contemplatively.

Taking a closer look, he realized that Ancient Sage Lan Ya's body was extremely feeble. It was faint at this point in time, but he could sense the scent of deterioration from the other party's body.

It was apparent that the other party's foundations had already been shaken. Even if they had not made a move, the other party was unlikely to have been able to live for long.

But... when he met Ancient Sage Lan Ya not too long ago, the latter had still been overflowing with energy. According to the other party's triumphant bragging, it seemed like he was close to reaching Ancient Sage 2-dan too... How did he land himself in such a state all of a sudden?

Unable to figure out the cause behind the deterioration, Ancient Sage Mo Ling could only shake his head and turn back to Zhang Xuan. "What should we do now?"

"I'd planned on capturing him alive and conducting a Soul Search so that I could figure out Sovereign Chen Ling's current condition and the location of the dragon blood. But since he's already dead, I guess I have no choice but to drop the initial plan," Zhang Xuan said bitterly.

He felt disappointed. He had prepared so many ways to deal with whatever Ancient Sage Lan Ya threw at them, but everything had been concluded so quickly that it felt like his diligence had gone to waste.

What a letdown!

"Do you still intend to disguise yourself as him?"

"Of course! How else am I going to get into the sleeping chamber?" Zhang Xuan replied.

With a thought, his bones and muscles began warping. Even his soul aura started to change into the likeness of the collapsed Ancient Sage Lan Ya.

Then, he took off Ancient Sage Lan Ya's clothes and put them on himself. He did not forget to take Ancient Lan Ya's storage ring and place it on his finger.

When Ancient Sage Mo Ling looked at Zhang Xuan once more, his heart could not help but jolt in amazement.

He had thought that the other party's disguise would only stop at identical outer appearances, but it was far more elaborate than that. Be it in terms of gestures, disposition, soul aura, or even the state of mind, the person standing before him was Ancient Sage Lan Ya. If not for the naked corpse lying right next to them, he would have really been fooled by the disguise!

This was truly an eyeopener!

Paying no heed to Ancient Sage Mo Ling's astonishment, Zhang Xuan calmly asked, "Where would Ancient Sage Lan Ya normally take the spring water?"

"He would usually enter the sleeping chamber. As for exactly where he would go and what he would do, I'm afraid that I don't really know," Ancient Sage Mo Ling replied.

"I see. I should head over to the sleeping chamber and take a good look at it!" Zhang Xuan said as his eyes lit up in excitement.

Since it was part of Ancient Sage Lan Ya's daily routine to enter the sleeping chamber, he could walk right in without any fear.

With a wave of his hand, he took out the gourd that Ancient Sage Lan Ya had prepared in his storage ring and filled it with the clear spring water.

After that was done, Zhang Xuan turned to look at Ancient Sage Mo Ling and said, "It'll be too dangerous for you to follow me into the sleeping chamber, so I'll just head in alone!"

As Sovereign Chen Ling harbored some doubts toward Ancient Sage Mo Ling, it would be hard for the latter to enter the sleeping chamber together with him. Since that was the case, it would be more convenient for him to proceed alone.

Otherwise, it was likely that they would be doubted and dealt with as soon as they entered the sleeping chamber.

“But that’s too dangerous! Something might happen to you!” Ancient Sage Mo Ling exclaimed worriedly.

Zhang Xuan’s cultivation was only at Sempiternal realm consummation. Based on what he knew about the sleeping chamber, there were at least three Ancient Sages stationed in the area. If someone noticed that Zhang Xuan was an impersonator, he would be killed without any doubt!

“Don’t worry. If anything really happens, I’ll send a signal for you to rush in and save me,” Zhang Xuan said with a smile as he threw Ancient Sage Lan Ya’s body into his storage ring.

The body of every Ancient Sage was a treasure, so he could not allow it to go to waste.

Ancient Sage Mo Ling also knew that his current position was a little awkward, and attempting to forcefully tag along would only bring them greater trouble. Thus, he hesitantly agreed with a slight nod.

Putting aside the fact that Zhang Xuan was the guild leader of the Soul Oracle Guild, just on the very basis that he was the most talented master teacher of the Master Teacher Continent, he could not allow any harm to come to the other party.

“Un!”

Having made his decision, Zhang Xuan took a deep breath and walked out of the Hall of Sweetspring. He quickly recalled the outline of the palace before heading in the direction of the sleeping chamber.

# 1810 Is the Dragon Blood Here?

Previously, Zhang Xuan had roamed all around the palace with his Primordial Spirit, allowing him to commit the outline of the entire area to memory. Thus, it did not take him too long to arrive at the sleeping chamber.

He took out a token from his storage ring and pressed it lightly against the entrance. An opening slowly appeared in the seal, and he lifted his feet and made his way in.

The first thing that came into Zhang Xuan's sight was a vast courtyard with all kinds of lush plants growing. Taking a closer look, he realized it was a herb garden, and every single one of the plants growing out was an invaluable medicinal herb.

Zhang Xuan discreetly extended his Spiritual Perception around the courtyard to take a look, and soon, a slight frown emerged on his forehead.

There were several hundred different kinds of medicinal herbs in the herb garden, and every single one of them boasted incredible medicinal energy. However, the Dragonscale Grass that Ancient Sage Hao Xun spoke of was nowhere in sight.

Could it be that there was really no dragon blood there?

Instructing the Dragonbone Divine Spear, which was wrapped around his waist disguised as a belt, to carefully sense for the presence of any dragon blood in the area, Zhang Xuan slowly walked along the paved path while carefully scanning the area.

“Lan Ya, what are you dilly-dallying for? Hurry up!”

Just as Zhang Xuan was slowly checking the area with his Spiritual Perception, a voice suddenly reverberated in the herb garden. Turning his head over, he saw an elder looking at him with an infuriated look on his face.

This elder appeared to be in his sixties, and as if reflecting the many years that he had lived, his eyes were a little murky. While the aura that he emanated did not seem to be too powerful, the pressure that he commanded seemed to seep right into one's soul, commanding the obedience of others.

Ancient Sage 2-dan Great Philosopher realm... Zhang Xuan could immediately see through the other party's cultivation.

Back at the Temple of Confucius, Zhang Xuan had met dozens of Ancient Sages, and his storage ring had plenty of Great Philosopher realm Ancient Sage corpses. He was already well-versed with the various realms of Ancient Sages.

Despite the unflattering appearance of the elder, he was actually stronger than Lan Ya in terms of cultivation.

Such thoughts flashed through Zhang Xuan's mind in an instant as he hurriedly nodded and walked over. "Yes!"

Noticing that something was amiss with the other party's behavior, the elder stared at Zhang Xuan intently with a deep frown on his face. However, there was no mistake about it—the person standing before him was indeed Lan Ya. Thus, he lowered his voice and sternly reminded, "Today is the very last day. Nothing can go wrong, or else our heads will roll!"

"I understand!"

Even though Zhang Xuan had no idea what the elder was talking about, he was not dumb enough to ask about it. Thus, he nodded before following the other party into the main hall.

The main hall had neither Night Illumination Pearls nor candles or the sort for lighting, so the area appeared to be peculiarly dark. Stepping into the room felt like stepping into another world; everything around him seemed to vanish all of a sudden, be it auras or sounds.

What a powerful seal! Zhang Xuan thought as he discreetly scanned his surroundings with a stoic expression.

As expected of Sovereign Chen Ling's true nest, there were literally runic inscriptions everywhere that isolated this space from the rest of the palace. It was almost like a fortress within a fortress.

Had he not walked through the door, not even an Ancient Sage 3-dan Blood Reincarnation realm expert would have been able to peer through the seals to see what was happening inside.

At the very center of the hall was a round altar with a blazing flame burning menacingly above it. Over a hundred black-armored Otherworldly Demons were seated around the altar, and they were all Great Sage experts.

Seeing this elaborate set up, Zhang Xuan's eyebrows shot up as an ominous feeling weighed on his heart.

Even though Great Sage cultivators were not as rare as Ancient Sages, they were still considered the top experts of the world. Even among the army of 110,000 that had planned to invade the Master Teacher Continent back then, there had only been dozens of Great Sage cultivators. Yet, over a hundred of them were gathered at that very moment.

Did Sovereign Chen Ling really have so many cards up his sleeves?

"Where is the spring water?" Seeing that Lan Ya had fallen into a daze, the elder berated furiously him. "What are you waiting for? Hurry up and pour it in!"

"Ah, here is the spring water!" Zhang Xuan took out the gourd with a flick of his wrist and passed it over to the elder.

"Why the heck are you giving it to me?"

The elder was caught off guard by the unexpected response from the other party, but he still instinctively caught the gourd.

"You can put it in instead!" Zhang Xuan said.

He had no idea what he was supposed to do with the spring water. If he made a mistake, he might just give his identity away. Since that was the case, he might as well dump the responsibility on the elder.

"Sovereign Chen Ling personally instructed you to do it. It will be inappropriate for me to do it in your place!" the elder said with a frown.

"It's fine! His Majesty won't mind such trivialities," Zhang Xuan said with a dry laugh.

You must be joking! If I knew how I was supposed to use the spring water, do you think that I would waste my breath on you?

“You...” hearing those words, the elder immediately flew into a rage. He was just about to give Lan Ya a good lecturing when the ground suddenly tremored, and the altar began to sway violently.

“There’s no time to waste...”

Seeing that, the elder’s eyes widened in alarm. He hurriedly uncorked the cap of the gourd and lightly shook the gourd.

Hula!

The spring water flowed onto the altar and traced the uniquely patterned grooves onto its surface. Very quickly, it formed an insignia.

Xiong xiong xiong!

As soon as the flame came into contact with the flowing water, it immediately released a burst of astonishing heat as it crackled with greater fervor than before.

With the intensification of the flame, the insignia began to transform.

“Begin!” the elder ordered.

The Great Sage Otherworldly Demons around the altar immediately made incisions on their fingers and flicked their blood into the flame.

Weng!

With the blood tribute, the temperature of the flame immediately shot up, such that the surrounding space started to distort under the immense heat.

Only at that moment did Zhang Xuan realize that there was a puddle of fresh, crimson blood being burned above the flames. It seemed like it was being refined through some kind of unique method.

This puddle of blood was roughly the size of a fist, and an indignant energy was roaring furiously from it. It felt as if a

massive dragon was circling around it.

Just as a thought came into Zhang Xuan's mind, an anxious voice sounded in his mind. "Master, that's the dragon blood... They seem to be refining the dragon blood!"

The Dragonbone Divine Spear trembled in agitation around his waist. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

"That's the dragon blood?" Zhang Xuan widened his eyes.

He had thought that it would take a great deal of effort to find the dragon blood, but who could have known that it would be presented right to him?

The only problem was that there were too many people surrounding the altar at the moment. Given the current circumstances, it would be nigh impossible for him to steal the dragon blood and get away safely.

It's good that I have managed to locate the dragon blood... but what are they doing? Zhang Xuan wondered silently.

To place the dragon blood on top of the altar and use the blood of Great Sage Otherworldly Demons to fuel the flame, it was clear that the other party was trying to refine the dragon blood. However, what were they trying to refine it into?

"It's our turn, Lan Ya. Hurry up and get over here!" the elder yelled.

Turning around, Zhang Xuan saw the elder creating an incision on his finger and flicking a droplet of blood essence toward the altar.

He knew that he would be suspected if he delayed at all, so he quickly squeezed out a droplet of blood and flicked it into the altar as well.

Tzzzzz!

As soon as the altar devoured the elder's blood, the elder began withering as if someone was sapping him dry. His face turned ghastly pale, and his cheeks sunk inward.

Zhang Xuan hurriedly turned his gaze toward the other Great Sage Otherworldly Demons. They were also trembling intensely as energy was swiftly drawn from their bodies.

Not only does the altar consume blood, it's also able to devour one's spirit, vitality, and psyche through tracing the blood!

Zhang Xuan narrowed his eyes in horror. He finally understood why he had been able to kill Ancient Sage Lan Ya so easily.

Just by contributing a droplet of blood, his spirit was already feeling extremely withered, and a great deal of his energy had been consumed. From the looks of it, it was apparent that Lan Ya had been sustaining the altar all that time, contributing his blood essence to it every now and then. With such depletion, it was inevitable that his physical state had depleted to the point where he had become far weaker than a typical Ancient Sage.

To encounter a surprise assault from a Sempiternal realm consummation expert wielding an Ancient Sage artifact while being in such a condition... no wonder Lan Ya had collapsed after a single attack!

Roar roar!

After devouring Zhang Xuan and the elder's blood essences, the dragon avatar within the dragon blood grew clearer and clearer. At the same time, its vague cries grew into distinct roars, and it seemed as if it would soar into the air at any moment.

"This..." Seeing that, the Dragonbone Divine Spear trembled in agitation as it cried out, "They aren't just refining the dragon blood! Rather, they are trying to use a special method to nourish the dragon blood so as to enhance it by a tier!"

# 1811 Enhancing the Tier of the Dragon Blood

“They are raising the tier of the dragon blood?” Zhang Xuan asked with a frown.

“There is a strict hierarchy within the Dragon Tribe, so there’s a difference in the purity of a dragon’s blood,” the Dragonbone Divine Spear replied.

Zhang Xuan nodded.

Based on what he had seen thus far, it seemed like the Dragon Tribe worked in a manner similar to the Sage Clans on the Master Teacher Continent. The purer a dragon’s bloodline was, the more talented and powerful it would be.

With the Netherworld Azure Dragon Beast, for example, even though there was the word ‘dragon’ in its name, the truth was that the purity of its dragon blood was extremely low. To put it in terms of Sage Clans, it would be like a member of the side family, hardly worth a mention at all. It was due to this that it had swiftly succumbed to the Eight Notes of Heavenly Dragon and submitted to him.

The puddle of dragon blood before him was likely to be the same one that Ancient Sage Hao Xun had told him about, the one that belonged to an Ancient Sage black dragon. As expected, it was much purer than the bloodline of the Netherworld Azure Dragon Beast.

“Raising the tier of dragon blood is usually impossible. However, they have added the blood essence of many Ancient Sages and cultivators into the dragon blood while using the cleanest water to remove impurities and catalyze the fusion. It’s hard to tell right now, but I feel like they might just be able to pull it off,” the Dragonbone Divine Spear said in agitation.

Just as the Dragonbone Divine Spear had said, it was usually impossible to raise the tier of any bloodline. What the group

was doing was effectively dumping everything nourishing in the dragon blood, hoping to force an upgrade. That, as well, would usually be an impractical course of action, but with two Ancient Sages and many Great Sage cultivators devoting their lives to this upgrade, they might just succeed.

Hong long!

All of a sudden, a resounding roar echoed in the air. After fusing Zhang Xuan and the elder's blood into the mixture, the aura of the dragon blood grew stronger and stronger, such that it was starting to show signs of running amok.

“It's working!” The eyes of the elder lit up in agitation. He hurriedly stood up and looked at Zhang Xuan. “Lan Ya, we are on the verge of success. Hurry up and make the offering!”

“Make the offering?” Zhang Xuan scanned the surroundings, but there was no offering to be seen.

He had no idea what he was supposed to do right now, and that left him with a splitting headache. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

He had witnessed one of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe's rituals before back at the Temple of Confucius, but he had never hosted one before. There was no way that he would know what the typical steps of their rituals consisted of. At that rate, he was really going to be exposed!

After all, no matter how convincing his disguise was, he was not a real Otherworldly Demon. If he was really able to conduct the ritual to summon the Spirit God by himself, he would not have followed Sovereign Chen Yong over to the otherworldly battlefield.

His previous action of tossing the gourd to the elder had already incurred the latter's suspicion. If he continued delaying the ritual, the elder might just make a move on him.

Thus, Zhang Xuan stiffened his body up and directed his blood up his throat, causing his cheeks to redden.

“Pu!”

Fresh blood spurted out of his mouth, and his entire body wobbled weakly for a moment before collapsing to the ground.

“You...” Not expecting Ancient Sage Lan Ya to give in at a crucial moment like that, the elder’s face puffed red in fury. “I’ll surely report this matter to Sovereign Chen Ling afterward. Just wait to be punished!”

Following which, he turned his gaze away from Zhang Xuan and raised his hand up.

Hula!

In the blink of an eye, countless surges of sword qi appeared above him. Following which, he abruptly brought his hand down.

Puhe! Puhe! Puhe!

The sword qi whizzed through the air, slaughtering the hundred Great Sage cultivators seated around the altar.

Along with the decapitation of hundred heads, a stream of fresh blood flowed steadily into the altar.

Seeing that, Zhang Xuan’s eyebrows shot up.

To slaughter a hundred Great Sage cultivators just like that... No wonder he had been unable to find any offerings earlier—the offerings were actually the lives of those Great Sage cultivators!

This was truly an abominable ritual!

Weng weng weng!

As the blood filled the uniquely patterned groove on the altar, a thunderous howl echoed in the air. Countless fragments of light descended from the sky and gathered around the elder.

“O noble god, I humbly offer these lives to you. All I wish for is to purify this dragon blood...” The elder’s voice echoed resoundingly in the air.

He spoke in the primordial language of the Spirit Tribe, which carried a sinister vibe that seemed to permeate one’s body.

A voice spoke slowly from amid the congregation of light. “I shall grant your wish!”

Zhang Xuan quickly traced the light up into the sky, wanting to see if the person was Luo Ruoxin. Yet, the blinding radiance of the light rendered him unable to see any silhouette at all. At the same time, the voice sounded exceptionally rich, making it difficult to discern whether it belonged to a male or a female.

Boom!

Right after the voice had given its answer, the light abruptly intensified. A surge of unique energy descended from the sky and fused into the dragon blood, causing it to billow furiously.

As if having devoured some kind of nourishment, the size of the dragon avatar in the dragon blood expanded in an instant. At the same time, the aura that the dragon avatar emanated seemed to grow significantly denser and more powerful.

While it might have been impossible for ordinary cultivators to raise the tier of dragon blood, such a feat was not beyond the means of the gods!

To think that the other party had gathered so much energy together and sacrificed so many lives all to summon the gods!

Gugugugu!

As the avatar of the dragon bulked up, the puddle of blood diminished in volume. Despite being around the size of a fist initially, it was only roughly the size of a fingernail at that very moment.

While its volume had reduced considerably, the energy that it harnessed had become much denser and more powerful, and it emanated an imposing pressure in its surroundings. It felt as if its power was on the verge of exceeding the limits of the world, and it would depart to a higher world very soon.

He had felt such a sensation from Luo Ruoxin once before.

Back in the Temple of Confucius, as her strength had far exceeded what the Master Teacher Continent could endure, she had been left with no choice but to turn around and leave.

Clearly, the dragon blood before him had also surpassed the bottleneck of the Blood Reincarnation realm to reach a higher level!

“Master, if I can devour that dragon blood, not only will I be able to undo my seal, I’ll even be able to advance a step further and push for a breakthrough to Ancient Sage 4-dan!” the Dragonbone Divine Spear exclaimed in agitation.

Zhang Xuan’s face also reddened in agitation, but he took a deep breath to calm himself before instructing the Dragonbone Divine Spear, “Hold on for a moment. We’ll make a move after the power from the gods dissipates!”

He had thought that it would be a great blessing if he could unseal the Dragonbone Divine Spear, but who would have thought that he would happen upon the other party’s ritual of enhancing the tier of the dragon blood?

If the Dragonbone Divine Spear was able to devour the assimilated dragon blood, it would surely undergo major transformative changes and ascend to a greater level!

In that case, as long as he had the Dragonbone Divine Spear in hand, Sovereign Chen Ling would be no threat even if he returned to his peak!

Even the strongest experts would be destroyed by a jab of his spear!

However, if he wanted to devour the enhanced dragon blood, he would have to wait for the power from the gods to recede first. Otherwise, if the gods flew into a rage over his impatience and punished him, the consequence was not something that he could bear.

“Un!” The Dragonbone Divine Spear agreed, and it trembled uncontrollably around Zhang Xuan’s waist. It was hardly able to curb its excitement.

It had never chanced upon such an opportunity before even back in those days when it was pursuing Ancient Sage Ran Qiu.

With such dragon blood along with his superior fighting prowess, even if he was still unable to match the almighty

Kong shi, he would at least be able to put up a fight against Vicious.

Hong long!

While the two of them were communicating with one another, the aura of the gods retreated from the atmosphere. Following which, the glow on the altar was beginning to dissipate as well.

Amid the blazing flame, there was only a single droplet of the dragon blood left. With a scarlet color reminiscent of fire, this single droplet of blood harnessed so much power that it felt as though it had become a sentient being. Out of instinct, it attempted to charge out of the altar and leap into the endless sky.

However, with a powerful formation swiftly closing in on it, there was no way that it would be able to escape.

The eyes of the elder reddened as he cried in agitation, “We’ve succeeded!”

After nearly an entire month of hard work, their efforts had finally come to fruition. The elder suddenly felt exhaustion assaulting his entire body, threatening to pull him down to the ground.

“Invite Sovereign Chen Ling over!” the elder bellowed loudly with tightly clenched fists.

“Now! We need to snatch the dragon blood right now!”

Upon hearing the elder’s words, Zhang Xuan’s face immediately warped in horror. Once Sovereign Chen Ling appeared, it would be impossible for him to lay his hands on the dragon blood anymore.

With a slap of his hand, the Dragonbone Divine Spear immediately darted forth from his waist.

It seemed to know the urgency of the current situation as well, so it warped into a black skeletal dragon without any hesitation and bolted right for the altar.

Seeing the black skeletal dragon and recalling the bizarre actions of the other party throughout the ritual, the elder

widened his eyes as he exclaimed in disbelief, “Y-you... You aren’t Ancient Sage Lan Ya? Who the hell are you?”

He immediately raised his arm to stop the black skeletal dragon from reaching the altar.

Huala!

The power of an Ancient Sage poured forth. It swiftly gathered in midair to form a barrier so as to block the black skeletal dragon from reaching the altar.

# 1812 And the Dragon Blood Goes to...

“Break!”

Seeing that the elder had managed to stop the Dragonbone Divine Spear, Zhang Xuan’s face turned grim. At such a moment, he could not afford to hide his identity any longer. Taking out the Infernal Blacksaber, he raised his arm and slashed at the barrier.

Even though the elder was at Ancient Sage 2-dan Great Philosopher realm, he had expended himself greatly while trying to purify the dragon blood. As a result, his strength paled far in comparison to before.

All it took was an instant for the Infernal Blacksaber to tear through the barrier.

“Pu!”

Fresh blood spewed from the elder’s mouth, but the elder firmly stood his ground. His eyes turned crimson as he raised his palm once more.

He released a tremendous amount of zhenqi to stop the Dragonbone Divine Spear from reaching the dragon blood despite the poor physical state that he was in. His desperate act worked, and in a moment’s time, he actually managed to halt the Dragonbone Divine Spear once more.

“Persistent b\*stard!”

Not expecting the elder to be so stubborn despite being in such a weakened state, Zhang Xuan’s face reddened in fury as he swung the Infernal Blacksaber once more.

As long as he killed the elder, the barrier that the latter had formed around the Dragonbone Divine Spear would dissipate.

“Humph!” Knowing that Zhang Xuan would launch such an attack, the elder slid his palm forward.

Something reminiscent of a woven piece of silk darted forth and encircled itself around the incoming saber.

It was an artifact—a Half-Ancient Sage artifact. Even though it was not a true Ancient Sage artifact, it was tailored purely for hypnosis and binding. As a result, Zhang Xuan immediately felt the zhenqi in his body slowing down, as if something was blocking it. Even exerting his zhenqi felt incredibly arduous.

Hula!

An Otherworldly Demon Ancient Sage suddenly appeared right before Zhang Xuan and blocked the woven piece of silk. It pulled its arm backward before launching a powerful punch aimed right at the woven piece of silk.

It was none other than the Otherworldly Demon Ancient Sage corpse that Zhang Xuan had forged a while back!

Si la!

Despite only being a corpse, it possessed superior physical abilities as a Soulless Metal Humanoid. That single punch caused the space in its path to collapse, and the crimson silk was swiftly torn into shreds.

Pu!

A second mouthful of blood was spewed from the elder's lips.

In the first place, he was in no state to fight given his current physical condition, and it was only sheer willpower and desperation that had been driving him on. His frail body was sent flying by the impact, and he landed heavily on the ground amid a cloud of dust. From the looks of it, he would be incapacitated for quite a while. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

Zhang Xuan swiftly swung the Infernal Blacksaber once more to tear down the barrier set up by the barrier before bellowing, “Go!”

“Yes!”

The Dragonbone Divine Spear immediately bolted forward as fast as lightning.

In the blink of an eye, the massive skeletal dragon arrived before the dragon blood, and it widened its mouth to devour the dragon blood.

Hu!

Just as the dragon blood was about to flow into the body of the skeletal dragon and assimilate together with it, its movements suddenly froze in place. It was a bizarre sight—a completely motionless skeletal dragon with a droplet of dragon blood floating quietly in the midst of its mouth.

“Sh\*t!” Zhang Xuan narrowed his eyes in alarm.

He quickly lifted his head and saw a figure drifting right above them. The figure was pointing one of his fingers toward the skeletal dragon.

It went without saying that it was the figure who had frozen the surrounding space to limit the Dragonbone Divine Spear’s movements.

Sovereign Chen Ling!

They were still a step too slow in the end!

At that moment, Sovereign Chen Ling’s face was still a little pale, which indicated that he had not fully recovered. Despite that, there was still no denying that he was a Blood Reincarnation realm expert. There was no way that the Dragonbone Divine Spear could be a match for him!

After halting the movements of the Dragonbone Divine Spear, Sovereign Chen Ling turned his gaze upon Zhang Xuan. His eyes reflected the raging anger that was burning within him. If looks could kill, everything in the area would have disintegrated in the blink of an eye.

“Are you Zhang Xuan? I didn’t think that you would have the guts to sneak into my palace and kill my trusted subordinate. You are really courting death!”

The Dragonbone Divine Spear and the Infernal Blacksaber were artifacts unique to Zhang Xuan. No matter how

ingenious his disguise as Ancient Sage Lan Ya was, those artifacts would still give him away in an instant.

“Vicious!”

Sensing great danger from the figure floating above him, Zhang Xuan brought out his strongest trump card without any hesitation.

The Book of Heaven’s Path materialized, and one of Vicious’ arm reached out from the book and flicked its finger.

Si la!

The sealed space immediately began flowing once more, and the massive mouth of the skeletal dragon swiftly clamped shut.

Kacha!

The sound of the skeletal dragon’s teeth clamping shut echoed throughout the entire room. However, the skeletal dragon did not experience the feeling of immense power coursing through its body as it had anticipated.

“A human actually managed to make it in here?” A provocative feminine voice echoed in the room. “Sovereign Chen Ling, it seems like your palace isn’t as safe as you thought...”

Following which, a young lady with a seductive figure appeared in the room. Rotating slowly at the tip of her finger was the droplet of dragon blood.

Clearly, she had stolen the dragon blood from the skeletal dragon’s mouth in the moment that it tried to devour the dragon blood.

This young lady appeared to be in her early thirties. At first glance, her cultivation felt unfathomable, giving off a similar sensation to the elder presiding over the ritual earlier. In other words, she was an Ancient Sage 2-dan Great Philosopher realm cultivator.

Zhang Xuan’s eyebrows shot up in astonishment.

He had known that there would be several Ancient Sages standing on guard in Sovereign Chen Ling’s sleeping chamber,

but he did not think that they would come so quickly.

“Get the dragon blood back!”

Knowing that the danger would only worsen with every passing second, Zhang Xuan hurriedly issued another order to Vicious.

Sou!

The arm coming from the Book of Heaven’s Path darted right toward the Great Philosopher realm young lady with lightning speed.

The young lady was caught off guard from the unexpected agility of the arm. Before she knew it, the space around her was already sealed, rendering her unable to move at all.

Peng!

A palm thrust landed squarely on the young lady’s chest, and the latter was immediately sent flying into the distance.

“Take it!”

Knowing that she would be unable to retain possession of the dragon blood in the face of such a powerful enemy, the young lady anxiously flung the droplet of dragon blood toward Sovereign Chen Ling.

Sovereign Chen Ling swiftly flitted forth to grab the droplet of dragon blood, but the arm in the Book of Heaven’s Path was not slow in its reaction either.

Thus, the two powerhouses collided with one another, causing a devastating shockwave to ripple into the surroundings. Under the humongous force, the formations in the area reached the limits of their durability and shattered.

“What happened?”

“Sovereign Chen Ling seems to be fighting with someone else...”

Huala!

The collapse of the formations meant that they were no longer fighting in an isolated environment. Hearing the commotion,

another two Ancient Sages swiftly flew over to inspect the situation.

Just like the young lady, they were Great Philosopher realm experts. Individually, they might not be a threat to Vicious, but when coordinating with one another, there was no doubt that they were a force to be reckoned with.

Due to Sovereign Chen Ling's injuries, Vicious clearly held the upper hand in the clash, and he was on the verge of obtaining the droplet of dragon blood. However, with those two Ancient Sages joining the fray and supporting Sovereign Chen Ling, the scales were balanced. Vicious found himself unable to take a single step forward no matter how much he exerted himself, almost as if someone had nailed him to the spot.

Even though Vicious was unable to reach the droplet of dragon blood, he was able to prevent the others from reaching it as well. Desperate, Sovereign Chen Ling clenched his teeth together and bellowed, "Formation, activate!"

Weng!

The formations that were set up all over Sovereign Chen Ling's sleeping chamber began churning into action. Innumerable shimmering beads of light materialized in the area, and they swiftly converged on Vicious in the blink of an eye.

Sovereign Chen Ling had spent innumerable years carving the inscriptions and setting up the formations within his sleeping chamber so as to ensure that he would have a trump card to deal with Sovereign Chen Yong if they ever fell out with one another.

While Vicious had recovered to Blood Reincarnation realm consummation, it was still beyond his means to breach the formation quickly.

Seeing that Vicious had been trapped within the formation, Sovereign Chen Ling heaved a sigh of relief.

"I have paid a heavy price in order to refine this droplet of dragon blood, so how could I allow an outsider like you to

snatch it from me?” he harrumphed coldly.

With a grasp of his hand, the droplet of dragon blood fell right into his hand, emanating rampaging energy.

Sovereign Chen Ling tapped his finger lightly on the droplet of blood, and the dragon avatar shrouding it released a deep, pained moan. It was as if someone had just slain its will.

Without any hesitation, he opened his mouth to swallow the dragon blood.

He had sustained severe injuries that had devastated his very foundations, and it was only a matter of time before he lost his life. The only way that he could recover was through the nourishment of the refined dragon blood.

“No! It’s mine!”

Seeing that a rare opportunity to achieve a breakthrough was about to slip right through his fingers, the Dragonbone Divine Spear roared desperately. It charged right toward Sovereign Chen Ling without any hesitation, intending to take the dragon blood back by hook or by crook.

It rammed heavily into Sovereign Chen Ling, causing the latter to stagger. The dragon blood also slipped past the latter’s finger to fall to the floor.

“You’re courting death!” Sovereign Chen Ling spat as he thrust his palm toward the Dragonbone Divine Spear.

Padah!

How could the Dragonbone Divine Spear possibly withstand the attack of a Blood Reincarnation realm expert? It was planted right into the ground with a huge hole around it.

“Humph!”

After knocking away the Dragonbone Divine Spear, Sovereign Chen Ling raised his hand and summoned the dragon blood back into his grasp. After that, he brought his hand to his mouth, ready to drink the dragon blood, when he suddenly felt a chill on his fingers. It was as if a gust had just blown through his fingers.

Before he knew it, the dragon blood had vanished from his hand once more.

“What?”

Sovereign Chen Ling’s head nearly blew up in that instant. He hurriedly turned his head to look where the gust of wind had departed to, only to find himself faced with a floating gourd. The body of the floating gourd caved inward to form a depression as the dragon blood was drawn into the depression to be assimilated into its body.

Just like that, the dragon blood was devoured.

# 1813 Ancient Sage Mo Ling Makes a Move

“You...”

Sovereign Chen Ling was immediately rendered dumbstruck.

Similarly, Zhang Xuan was rooted to the spot as he felt countless divine beasts stampeding through his mind, leaving a cloud of dust obscuring his thoughts.

That gourd was the Dongxu Gourd, which had once hidden in his dantian. After he fed it a meteorite piece, the other party had been resting in his storage ring, hardly moving at all. Why would it suddenly leap out to join the commotion at a time like this?

Not to mention... it had even devoured the droplet of dragon blood!

That was the crux to removing the seal on the Dragonbone Divine Spear! Without it, the Dragonbone Divine Spear would not be able to regain its true strength, and with just the prowess of Vicious, it would be impossible for him to get out of there safely. In the worst-case scenario, he might even meet his end there!

“My blood... My dragon blood...”

The collapsed Dragonbone Divine Spear twitched in horror upon seeing this sight, and tears flowed freely down its sunken eyes.

That was the key for it to return to its prime, but it had been swallowed by a mere gourd.

Ridiculous! A gourd did not have a mouth, so how could it swallow anything at all?

“Urp!”

After devouring the dragon blood, the Dongxu Gourd burped loudly before heading back in Zhang Xuan’s direction with a

satisfied shake of its bottom.

Sovereign Chen Ling finally returned to his senses, and insanity overwhelmed his rationality. He charged over furiously as his palm large swathes of space around him.

“Give my dragon blood back!”

Seeing that, Zhang Xuan nearly fainted on the spot.

With his current strength, getting involved in a fight between Ancient Sage 3-dan Blood Reincarnation realm experts was as good as committing suicide. Thus, it had never crossed his mind that he could charge forward to snatch the dragon blood.

As a result of that, he had been observing the battle carefully the whole time. If the situation ever turned against him, he would immediately turn tail and flee. Yet, who could have thought that the gourd would snatch the dragon blood and return to his side, not neglecting to pull Sovereign Chen Ling’s aggression to him in the meantime?

You b\*stard! Just what in the world did I do to you for you to do this to me?

It was out of goodwill that I allowed you to stay in my dantian and nourished you. I even gave you the meteorite... but this is how you repay me?

Profanities that would leave even the most foul mouthed of individuals reddening in shame flashed through Zhang Xuan’s mind. Of course, his body did not freeze in space. He swiftly moved to distance himself from the Dongxu Gourd so as to avoid Sovereign Chen Ling’s wrath, but before he could make a move, the Dongxu Gourd had already dived back into his dantian and found a comfortable spot to rest.

“You...” Zhang Xuan’s head nearly burst apart from frenzy in that instant.

However, this wasn’t the moment to confront the Dongxu Gourd. He quickly activated the Zhang Clan bloodline, causing time to slow down. At the same time, he executed the Heaven’s Path Movement Art and darted forward with incredible agility, reaching Vicious’ side within a heartbeat.

The only reliable card that he had against Sovereign Chen Ling was this fellow.

“Die!”

Seeing the gourd that had stolen the dragon blood disappearing into Zhang Xuan, Sovereign Chen Ling immediately realized that the gourd was one of the other party’s possessions. With his lips twitching in rage, he pulled both of his hands downward forcefully.

The next moment, it felt as if the surrounding air had been sapped dry. Zhang Xuan felt his stiffening body flying in Sovereign Chen Ling’s direction, as if he was offering his life up to the other party.

“Master!”

Seeing such a sight, Vicious could not possibly continue allowing himself to be tied down by those two Ancient Sages. His other arm flew out of the Book of Heaven’s Path to grab Zhang Xuan’s shoulder, thus preventing the latter from flying toward Sovereign Chen Ling.

At the same time, the other arm pushed against the Book of Heaven’s Path, dragging out an incomplete skeletal frame from within.

Given that he was bound to Zhang Xuan by a soul contract, if Zhang Xuan died, he would lose his life as well. As such, he had to save Zhang Xuan regardless of the cost.

Huala!

As soon as the skeletal frame appeared, spiritual energy began surging over, creating a hurricane in the room. The skeletal frame lifted its palm and pressed it downward onto the incoming Sovereign Chen Ling.

Leaving the Book of Heaven’s Path had boosted Vicious’ fighting prowess significantly. As soon as he collided with Sovereign Chen Ling’s offense, the latter was sent flying into the distance. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

Perhaps, Sovereign Chen Ling might not have feared the unrecovered Vicious prior to him getting injured, but in his current state... he simply did not stand a chance at all!

Seeing that Vicious was indeed able to stop Sovereign Chen Ling, Zhang Xuan heaved a sigh of relief. He focused his attention onto dantian and berated, "Didn't you agree not to enter my dantian?"

Previously, he had given the meteorite to the Dongxu Gourd in exchange for this condition, and the latter had given its word. Who could have known that the latter would renege on its promise at such a vital moment?

Furthermore, it had even provoked Sovereign Chen Ling and drawn the latter to him!

What the heck was with that?

If not for his swift reaction to activate the Zhang Clan bloodline and escape to Vicious' side, Zhang Xuan would have already lost his life.

"There's no need to sweat over minor details. I'm just resting in here for a moment." The Dongxu Gourd shook its bottom leisurely, as if it was completely unbothered by the situation.

Gritting his teeth angrily, Zhang Xuan was just about to continue giving the darned gourd a good tongue lashing when he suddenly felt a chill behind his back. Knowing that danger was approaching him, he activated the Zhang Clan bloodline once more and charged forward.

Boom boom boom!

A moment after he stepped away from his original spot, the space where he had been standing suddenly collapsed inward, leaving behind an empty void in its place. The shockwave from the abrupt collapse of space struck his back, causing fresh blood to spurt from his mouth.

He hurriedly turned around and saw the two Ancient Sages who had been holding down Vicious a moment earlier standing not too far away from him.

They might barely have been able to hold their ground against the powerful Vicious, but if they could not even get rid of a Sempiternal realm consummation cultivator, they would truly be worthless to Sovereign Chen Ling.

“Manipulation of temporal laws? He’s indeed that darned human fellow. Let’s rip him to shreds!” Seeing that his assault did not work, one of the Ancient Sages frowned slightly before raising his palm once more.

The other Ancient Sage swiftly launched a punch in coordination with his partner.

Before the palm strike and punch could land, the surrounding space began warping inward to Zhang Xuan. It was as if he was standing in the eye of a hurricane; he could not run away even if he wanted to.

Knowing that Vicious had his hands full dealing with Sovereign Chen Ling, Zhang Xuan flicked his wrist as he spat through gritted teeth, “Tsk. You really think I’m a pushover, don’t you?”

Hula!

Two Ancient Sage corpses appeared before him, blocking the palm strike and punch.

Back at the Temple of Confucius, when Sovereign Chen Yong was battling with multiple Ancient Sages at once, Zhang Xuan had taken away quite a number of Otherworldly Demon corpses with him. He had not been able to forge them into Soulless Metal Humanoids as he had been severely injured over the past few days, but they could still act as temporary shields.

Peng! Peng!

The two attacks ended up landing on the corpses instead and sent them flying.

Even though Zhang Xuan had survived the ordeal for the time being, he knew that this was not a long-term solution. It was just a matter of time before he ran out of shields, and by then, he would be a goner. As such, he was prepared to bring out his final golden page to kill at least one of the two Ancient Sages

when he suddenly heard a hurried gust of wind coming from behind him.

Following which, a chilling aura wrapped itself around him like a rope before forcefully tugging him out of Sovereign Chen Ling's sleeping chamber.

“Guild leader, hurry up and leave!”

It was Ancient Sage Mo Ling.

He had also noticed that something was amiss, so he had drawn his soul out from his body and dashed right in.

“Where do you think you're going?”

How could the two Ancient Sages within Sovereign Chen Ling's sleeping chamber allow Zhang Xuan to get away so easily? They immediately flitted over to pursue him.

In response, Ancient Sage Mo Ling retaliated with a powerful palm strike.

The clash between the two sides caused a powerful shockwave to ripple through the sleeping chamber, tearing down the resilient building. A cloud of dust rose into the air, obscuring everything from sight.

After pushing away the two Ancient Sages, Ancient Sage Mo Ling made use of this momentary reprieve to grab Zhang Xuan and flee from the sleeping chamber.

Being a Blood Reincarnation realm expert, he was far stronger than the two Ancient Sages. As long as Sovereign Chen Ling did not make a move, it would be impossible for those two to stop him.

After escorting Zhang Xuan out of the sleeping chamber, Ancient Sage Mo Ling hurriedly instructed, “Guild leader, I have already activated the formation outside, so you'll be safe for the time being. You should quickly leave. I'll block those two for you...”

“The Dragonbone Divine Spear and Vicious are still inside,” Zhang Xuan replied anxiously. “If I leave now, they won't be able to get away.”

The Dragonbone Divine Spear had sustained significant injuries whereas Vicious was held down by Sovereign Chen Ling and the formation. Considering that they were in Sovereign Chen Ling's palace, the situation would only turn against them as more reinforcements arrived. If he fled, those two would be doomed!

Putting aside everything else, those two were his strongest trump cards. He could not afford to lose them!

# 1814 I'll Set Up a Formation

“Guild leader, I hate to say this, but you’ll have to let them go. It won’t be long before the other Ancient Sages in the capital arrive in the palace. Once that happens, we’ll all go down together!” Ancient Sage Mo Ling advised anxiously.

Of the Ancient Sages siding with Sovereign Chen Ling, there were still another five of them who were not there yet. The only reason that they still were not there was because the formation around the sleeping chamber had prevented any pulsation of energy from slipping out. However, with the collapse of the formation, there was no doubt that all of the Ancient Sages were already on their way here.

Once they arrived, it would be impossible for them to escape!

As powerful as Ancient Sage Mo Ling and Vicious were, there was no way that they would be able to survive an encirclement of so many experts. Even Sovereign Chen Yong had nearly lost his life, let alone them!

Exhaling deeply, Zhang Xuan forced himself to calm down before swiftly going through the situation once more. “If I make a getaway right now, I’ll only be put in an even more disadvantageous position against Sovereign Chen Ling, especially without Vicious and the Dragonbone Divine Spear. Furthermore, given that they have learned that I have come to the capital, they will spare no effort in rooting me out. That might undo all of my earlier preparations. The only reason for Sovereign Chen Ling being so docile at the moment is that he has not recovered his strength yet. Once he has recovered, it’ll be a calamity for mankind. We don’t have any time to spare...”

There were many defensive mechanisms within the capital, such as formations on the city walls. Of course, given Zhang Xuan’s means, he would be able to circumvent them easily. If he wanted to, he could even disguise himself as one of the

civilians, and it would be difficult for anyone to uncover his true identity.

However, the issue was that he was not the only one around. Sovereign Chen Ling would surely conduct a massive investigation operation after this matter, and that could possibly root out Sovereign Chen Yong and Ancient Sage Hao Xun. Liu Yang might even be held hostage to deal with Sovereign Chen Yong.

Understanding the intentions behind Zhang Xuan's words, Ancient Sage Mo Ling asked, "What should we do then?"

Zhang Xuan pondered for a brief instant before replying, "Hold them back for ten breaths, and you can leave the rest to me."

"Ten breaths?" Ancient Sage Mo Ling was taken aback. However, he eventually nodded. "Leave it to me!"

Huala!

Driving his soul energy, Ancient Sage Mo Ling pulled the surrounding spiritual energy and wrapped it around him like a vortex before charging toward the two incoming Ancient Sages. As the powers of the three collided, the surrounding space shattered layer after layer.

As Ancient Sage Mo Ling fought, he shot occasional glances toward Zhang Xuan, curious to see what plans he had in mind. What he saw was the latter floating into the sky and bringing out several thousand formation flags.

They were some of the treasures that Zhang Xuan had harvested from the Temple of Confucius. Every single one of those formation flags had reached the level of grade-9 pinnacle.

Seeing Zhang Xuan's actions, Ancient Sage Mo Ling nearly plummeted from the sky. "Is he intending to set up a formation right now? Is he certain that he will be able to make it in time? Furthermore..."

It was true that Zhang Xuan's prowess in formations was formidable; he had witnessed it with his own eyes. However... they were not in any ordinary location.

They were in Sovereign Chen Ling's palace!

The entire area was filled with inscriptions and formations, and all of them were hindering factors. If Zhang Xuan wanted to set up a formation there, he would have to take all of those formations into account and deduce a feasible way to fit his formations among them all.

Putting aside ten breaths, even if there were a hundred 9-star formation masters, they might not even succeed even if they had a year's time!

The calculation that was required for this compound formation to work was simply too great—well beyond a human's ability!

Hu hu hu!

Before Ancient Sage Mo Ling could recover from his shock, the young man in the sky waved his hand, and the formation flags shot off in all directions.

In less than three breaths, the several thousand formation flags were planted all around Sovereign Chen Ling's sleeping chamber and disappeared from sight.

After doing all of that, Zhang Xuan turned to Ancient Sage Mo Ling and exclaimed, "I'm done. Retreat!"

"Alright!" Ancient Sage Mo Ling hurriedly flew toward Zhang Xuan.

Of course, the other two Ancient Sages fighting him would not allow him to leave as he pleased, so they quickly followed up with a barrage of attacks, attempting to tie Ancient Sage Mo Ling down.

Wuuuuu!

At that moment, a resounding bellow sounded in the air.

"Oh? Sovereign Chen Ling, who are these people? They seem to be quite formidable to be able to corner you to such an extent."

"Hahaha! I trust that you'll give us what you promised us for helping you. After all, a person as great as you won't renege on your promise, right?"

Following which, several wills swiftly suffused the sleeping chamber, and an incredible pressure pushed down from above.

The five remaining Ancient Sages had arrived together!

“Cut the cr\*p. I want them alive. Make sure that none of them escape here... If you can do that, I’ll do what I promised all of you. If a single one of them manages to slip away, our previous deal will be struck off!” Sovereign Chen Ling roared.

He was able to stand against Vicious’ skeletal frame for the time being with the assistance of the formation in the sleeping chamber, but his injuries were already starting to burden him. He would only continue to grow weaker.

At that rate, he might really lose his life!

Thus, he was willing to pay any price to keep Zhang Xuan and the others there. If he could not, he would really suffer a huge loss!

If he could not get back the dragon blood that he had refined with great difficulty, who knew how long it would take him to recover?

“That isn’t any trouble at all!”

The Ancient Sages lowered their heads to look at Vicious and Ancient Sage Mo Ling with smirks plastered on their faces.

Seeing this, Ancient Sage Mo Ling felt his heart turning cold. He muttered in desolation, “It’s too late. There’s no way we’ll be able to get away now...”

Against just the two Ancient Sages before him, he might still have stood a chance at escaping, but against so many Ancient Sages at once... it was certain death for him.

With a pale complexion and a faint smile, Zhang Xuan remarked, “What are you talking about? I intentionally waited for them to come here. Otherwise, we would really be unable to get away...”

To plant so many formation flags at once, even if he had the Library of Heaven’s Path and nearly unlimited zhenqi, he still could not help but feel depleted from such exertion.

“You were intentionally waiting for them?” Ancient Sage Mo Ling was taken aback.

Is this really the time to be joking around?

Our lives are at stake!

Paying no heed to the panicking Ancient Sage Mo Ling, Zhang Xuan raised his head to address the figures in the sky. “You are the Ancient Sages assisting Sovereign Chen Ling? I am Sovereign Chen Yong’s friend, and I can tell you for certain that he isn’t dead yet. Sovereign Chen Ling colluded with the humans to assassinate him, but the plan eventually failed, and Sovereign Chen Ling ended up incurring severe injuries...”

It might be a futile attempt, but it would be best if he could rally any of them over to their side.

“Don’t listen to his nonsense. He’s a master teacher, a human spy. Hurry up and kill him!” Sovereign Chen Ling bellowed furiously, cutting off Zhang Xuan’s words.

He had planned on keeping Zhang Xuan alive to interrogate him, but he no longer cared that much.

It might have appeared that those Ancient Sages were loyal to him, but their loyalty was based on a relationship of mutual benefit. If Sovereign Chen Yong were to promise them even greater benefits, there was no saying whether these Ancient Sages would turn against him.

“He’s a master teacher?”

The Ancient Sages looked at one another with livid looks on their faces. It was unthinkable to them that a master teacher would actually go to their capital and infiltrate Sovereign Chen Ling’s heavily fortified palace.

“I am a master teacher? Sovereign Chen Ling, do you even believe the words that are coming out of your mouth? Given my pure Zhenqi of Slaughter and my noble bloodline, how dare you claim that I’m a master teacher! Watch your mouth!” Zhang Xuan sneered coldly as he furiously drove his zhenqi.

In an instant, a killing intent so concentrated that it was comparable to even the Three Sovereigns' poured out of Zhang Xuan's body.

"This..."

"What concentrated Zhenqi of Slaughter! Is a human really capable of emulating something like this?"

"If they were able to disguise themselves in such a manner, our Spirit Tribe would have already been destroyed a long time ago."

The other Ancient Sages frowned doubtfully.

The main identifying factor of an Otherworldly Demon was their Zhenqi of Slaughter. The more concentrated one's Zhenqi of Slaughter was, the purer one's bloodline was. There was no doubt that the Zhenqi of Slaughter exerted by the person before them was far more concentrated than theirs. Could such a person really be a master teacher?

Noticing the hesitation among the Ancient Sages, Sovereign Chen Ling gritted his teeth and bellowed, "Kill him, and I'll double what I previously promised you!"

"Are you certain?" Hearing those words, the eyes of the five Ancient Sages widened in astonishment. "Since that's the case, there's nothing for us to hesitate over. Kill him!"

The society of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe was very different from that of the Master Teacher Continent. Rules and principles were held in high regard on the Master Teacher Continent, but among the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe, rules were only social constructs that were followed when it was convenient to them.

Ultimately, all that drove them was benefits.

Whether the other party was friends with Sovereign Chen Yong or a master teacher, it made no difference to them at all.

What Sovereign Chen Ling was promising them was something that Sovereign Chen Yong would never be able to give them.

Since that was the case, why would they hesitate?

The path that they should take was clear.

# 1815 Escape

Boom!

Incredible might swept over the area and crushed Zhang Xuan.

With the five Ancient Sages exerting their prowess simultaneously, it felt as if the apocalypse had come. The world turned pitch black as the surrounding space dissipated into dust. If one got close, one would be torn apart by the massive force that they were exerting and vanish from the world.

Seeing such force, Ancient Sage Mo Ling's face paled as he trembled in fear. "We need to leave now..."

It was apparent that the five of them had practiced some kind of collaborative formation, or else it would have been impossible for them to exert such immense strength.

It was questionable whether or not Blood Reincarnation realm consummation experts would be able to survive that strike, let alone him.

He had been thinking that the tables were starting to turn in their favor now that a new guild leader had appeared in their Soul Oracle Guild. They would be able to return to their original identity and allow their descendants to stand proudly on the Master Teacher Continent once more. Yet, who could have known that this fellow was actually so unreliable?

They had only met a moment ago, but this fellow was already charging into the gates of hell!

What the heck?

Ancient Sage Mo Ling hurriedly rushed to Zhang Xuan's side and grabbed the latter's palm, hoping to pull him to safety. However, the latter shook his head and flung his arms to shake free from his grip.

"Come at me then!"

Perplexed, Ancient Sage Mo Ling turned to look at the young man, only to see the latter looking at the five Ancient Sages in the air with a provocative smile on his lips. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

“ ... ”

Ancient Sage Mo Ling felt his hair standing on end.

Just what the heck did their soul oracles do to deserve such an unreliable guild leader?

Ancient Sage Mo Ling felt so stifled that he could have imploded on the spot. He hesitated for a moment, but he still could not let the future hope of the soul oracles lose his life. Thus, he gathered his strength to grab Zhang Xuan once more, but before he could come into contact with the latter, the latter had already raised both of his arms and bellowed, “Activate!”

Boom!

At the same time, the black force also crashed into Zhang Xuan. However, contrary to what Ancient Sage Mo Ling expected, the latter did not dissipate into dust. Instead, just as the attack reached less than two centimeters away from him, it suddenly split into five portions and was assimilated into the surroundings.

“This is... the effect of his formation?” Ancient Sage Mo Ling narrowed his eyes in shock.

Sensing an incredible energy protecting the young man, Ancient Sage Mo Ling hurriedly turned his gaze downward, only to see that all of the inscriptions had lit up simultaneously. In other words, all of the formations had come to life at once to protect Zhang Xuan.

An unimaginable amount of spiritual energy had gathered above the young man to form a five-sided energy barrier.

The attack launched by the five Ancient Sages was absorbed by this very energy barrier and into the formation.

“This is... a barrier that absorbs any force as energy?” Ancient Sage Mo Ling was stunned.

He knew just how powerful the five Ancient Sages were when they were collaborating with one another. Even if there were three of them working together, it would still be impossible for him to withstand their might.

But not only did the young man manage to withstand their attack, he even absorbed their energy. Was this really a formation that was set up within ten breaths?

It was already tough enough to construct a formation on top of all of the miscellaneous formations in the area, but the massive formation that he had constructed actually complemented all of the other miscellaneous formations in the area to boost its prowess.

This was a feat that could only be described with the word ‘miraculous’!

Oblivious to Ancient Sage Mo Ling’s shock, Zhang Xuan turned his palm toward the five Ancient Sages and uttered, “Return!”

The five-sided energy barrier immediately gathered the energy that had just been absorbed to form an energy prison around the five Ancient Sages before swiftly closing in on them.

“This...”

“Cr\*p, this is really bad...”

The five Ancient Sages did not expect their collaborative offense to be undone that quickly. Not only so, the young man had even returned the favor to them in his own way.

Their faces paled in horror, and they quickly put their strength together once more to deal with the energy prison that was swiftly shrinking toward them.

Boom!

The forces of both sides collided with one another. The five Ancient Sages spurted blood simultaneously as they retreated under the impact.

In the first place, the formations in Sovereign Chen Ling’s sleeping chamber were designed to withstand an attack from even the strongest Blood Reincarnation realm experts. Put

together with Zhang Xuan's formation, the prowess that the formations harnessed was far beyond anyone's expectations. Even the collaboration of the five Ancient Sages was insufficient to overcome it.

"Vicious, get the Dragonbone Divine Spear and come with me!"

Even though Zhang Xuan's attack had worked, he did not press on with his offense. Instead, he turned to Vicious, who was still fighting with Sovereign Chen Ling, and beckoned him over.

At the same time, a streak of black light gathered at the corner of the five-sided barrier before zapping Sovereign Chen Ling.

Vicious successfully freed himself from Sovereign Chen Ling's relentless offense. With a wave of his arm, the Dragonbone Divine Spear and the three Ancient Sage corpses on the ground flew into his hands.

"Let's go!"

After that was done, Zhang Xuan waved his arm once more, and the five-sided barrier created a spatial passageway. Vicious, Ancient Sage Mo Ling, and Zhang Xuan leaped into the spatial passageway and vanished without a trace.

Seeing that Zhang Xuan had gotten away, Sovereign Chen Ling nearly exploded on the spot. He turned to the five Ancient Sages and bellowed, "What are you all doing? Quick, chase them!"

"You'd better look into how he's able to control the formations in your sleeping chamber first!"

"Given how powerful this formation is, we'll get injured if we try to breach it forcefully!"

The five Ancient Sages replied impassively, showing no interest in pursuing Zhang Xuan.

As tempted as they were to obtain what Sovereign Chen Ling had promised them, they would not put their lives on the line for him. In any case, they knew that Sovereign Chen Ling still

needed them, so there was bound to be some other way that they could get it from him.

As such, after they were knocked back by the formation, they halted their offense and stepped back. It was not because they were unable to win but because they were not willing to put themselves at risk.

“Humph!”

Sovereign Chen Ling’s face turned white with rage. He knew that his relationship with the other Ancient Sages was more like an alliance than one of subordination. It was not bad that they had been willing to help him stall Zhang Xuan; to make them risk their lives to pursue Zhang Xuan was indeed expecting too much of them.

The Otherworldly Demonic Tribe was born with superior strength and longevity. Given the natural advantages that their race wielded over mankind, it should have been very easy for them to reconquer the Master Teacher Continent. The only reason they had not been able to succeed even after the passing of tens of thousands of years was that each of them was simply too selfish!

Given that none of them were willing to put themselves at risk, there was no way that they could unite!

This did not apply just to the Three Sovereigns but the many Lords under them as well. If they had been able to join together to fight valiantly alongside one another just like the master teachers, they would not have remained confined to the otherworldly battlefield for so many years.

Of course, what was even more important was that they lacked a decisively strong leader who could unite all of them under the same flag, like Vicious in the past.

Even though Sovereign Chen Yong was known as the strongest expert in the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe, his strength was only slightly above that of the other two Sovereigns. As a result, he was unable to get the other two Sovereigns to submit to him.

Sovereign Chen Ling took out a pill and swallowed it. When his complexion finally recovered a little, he finally turned his gaze back to the formation beneath him.

The formation of the sleeping chamber was something that he and his predecessors had devoted much time and effort to. Only Sovereign Chen Ling and those who obeyed him were granted the ability to control it, so why would it follow that fellow's commands to block the five Ancient Sages?

Furthermore, the prowess that it had displayed was beyond ordinary.

Unable to figure anything out, Sovereign Chen Ling cut his finger and squeezed out a droplet of blood.

The key to controlling the formation was his bloodline. As long as he brought out his blood, he would be able to re-establish full control of the formation.

Weng!

As soon as he squeezed out his blood, the formation beneath began whirring into action. Surges of energy shone brilliantly as they converged swiftly at the center.

Just as he was able to control the energy to form a huge protective dome around him as he recovered from his exertion, a loud grinding noise suddenly rumbled from below. It was so loud that it sounded as if it would pop one's eardrums.

Boom!

All of a sudden, a tremendous amount of energy burst forth from the center of the formation. Countless historical buildings in Sovereign Chen Ling's palace, which had stood for tens of thousands of years, collapsed in the face of the tremendous burst of energy, turning into rubble.

The formation beneath had run out of control and self-exploded!

# 1816 Spit It Out!

“My palace...”

Looking at the collapsed palace, Sovereign Chen Ling finally came to his limits and spurted blood.

He and his predecessors had spent many millenniums building that palace, but to think that it was blown to smithereens just like that...

Can anyone tell me what's going on?

“Sovereign Chen Ling...”

The two Ancient Sages who had been fighting with Ancient Sage Mo Ling earlier flew over. One of them whose face was exceptionally pale lowered his head and reported, “Your Majesty, the person named Zhang Xuan set up a formation with over a thousand formation flags. When he activated his formation, the formations in the palace came to life as well. Could the explosion also be his doing?”

“Wait a moment... he managed to set up a formation here?”  
Sovereign Chen Ling was stunned.

The whole of Sovereign Chen Ling's palace was filled with tens of thousands of inscriptions and several hundred formations of different sizes. It was due to these formations that he had been confident in going against Sovereign Chen Yong and the others. Its destruction effectively meant that his final defense line had been breached, and he was exposed to the public.

The fact that he was severely injured at the moment only made the situation far worse than it was. At this rate, if Sovereign Chen Yong really made a comeback, would he not be powerless?

Sovereign Chen Ling clenched his jaws and bellowed, “Bring all of the artifacts that the appraisers have valued over!”

“Your Majesty, we have yet to verify the actual value of the artifacts,” the pale-faced Ancient Sage replied anxiously.

In response to that, Sovereign Chen Ling waved his hand impatiently and exclaimed, “There’s no time for that anymore! I will have already died by the time they are done appraising everything!”

“But... Your Majesty, you are also aware of the rules. If we fail to value the artifacts properly, I fear that not only will your injuries not recover, we might even end up placing ourselves in a worse predicament...”

“Cut the nonsense and bring the artifacts here. We don’t have time anymore! Our survival banks on this final gamble!” Sovereign Chen Ling roared furiously.

Since the dragon blood had been stolen from him, he had no choice but to resort to the riskier method. It had not been easy for him to come so close to victory, and he would do anything to ensure that he was the last one standing.

The five Ancient Sages might look as if they were on his side, but if he really became powerless, there was a good chance that the first ones to make a move on him would be them!

“Yes!” Hearing that Sovereign Chen Ling was adamant on the matter, the pale-faced Ancient Sage hesitated for a moment before nodding slightly. He quickly turned around and left the area.

“I won’t lose this fight. There’s no way I can lose this fight...” Sovereign Chen Ling clenched his fists tightly as a vicious glint flashed across his eyes.

...

Weng!

Some distance away from the capital, the space suddenly wavered before a crack materialized. From the depths of the crack, Zhang Xuan rolled out and crashed heavily onto the floor.

“Guild leader!”

A soul oracle swiftly rushed to his side to support him. Following which, the soul oracle scanned his surroundings, and an incredulous look appeared on his face. He could not help but turn to Zhang Xuan with a look of awe.

Despite only being at Sempiternal realm consummation, he had actually managed to create such a huge commotion and flee from so many Ancient Sages...

He was probably the only one who had the ability to perform such a feat.

Zhang Xuan suddenly recalled something and asked in alarm, "Where's your physical body?"

"One of the greatest weaknesses of a soul oracle is the risk of having the physical body assaulted while the soul is drawn out. Thus, I specially crafted a small space that my soul can carry around," Ancient Sage Mo Ling replied with a smile.

It was only then that Zhang Xuan realized that there was a spatial ring made out of soul energy on Ancient Sage Mo Ling's finger.

Hu!

With a thought, Ancient Sage Mo Ling brought out his physical body before diving right into it.

"Not bad!" Zhang Xuan's eyes lit up.

He had never thought of doing something like that before. If he could bring his physical body around with him, he would indeed be in a much safer position.

"Judging from our surroundings, we should be at the Battlefield of Firefeather, which is roughly about a million li away from the capital. I don't think that Sovereign Chen Ling and the others will be able to track us here... Guild leader, what do you intend to do now?"

Ancient Sage Mo Ling had already turned against Sovereign Chen Ling, so there was no way that he could return anymore. Thus, all he could do was follow the new guild leader.

"For the time being, let's rest and recover our strength before deciding on our next course of action!" Zhang Xuan said with

a wave of his hand.

Setting up and activating the formation earlier had depleted him greatly, so he needed to rest and recover his strength. More importantly, now that he was out of danger, he really had to have a good heart-to-heart with the gourd about their future.

Otherwise, if that fellow appeared at random moments and made shocking moves each and every time, it was only a matter of time before his heart popped from the immense stress.

“You’re right. We should take a rest first!”

Hearing Zhang Xuan’s words, Ancient Sage Mo Ling also felt exhaustion setting into his body. He quickly set up an isolation barrier in the area before sitting down to replenish his depleted soul energy.

Seeing that Ancient Sage Mo Ling had started to cultivate, Zhang Xuan also quickly placed the Book of Heaven’s Path back into the Library of Heaven’s Path and the Otherworldly Demon Ancient Sage corpses back into his storage ring before diving into cultivation.

Through using the Great Codex of Spring and Autumn in the Library of Heaven’s Path, he was able to speed up his recovery rate by ten times. As a result, all it took was several minutes for him to be fully revitalized.

With that done, he took a deep breath before turning his consciousness toward his dantian.

At that moment, the gourd was lying leisurely inside in a seeming comfortable position. It did not seem like it had any intention to leave at all.

Seeing how the gourd had been resting lazily after messing around and putting him in great danger, Zhang Xuan suddenly felt rage surging into his head. He roared angrily, “Hurry up and spit out the dragon blood!”

Even though the gourd did manage to snatch the dragon blood away from Sovereign Chen Ling’s hands, the problem was that it was of no use to him even if the gourd did assimilate the dragon blood!

If the Dragonbone Divine Spear had swallowed it, there would be no need for him to escape anymore. He might have been able to defeat everyone in the Sovereign Chen Ling's palace, and even Sovereign Chen Ling could have been killed with a single pierce.

"Calm down, young lad... The zhenqi in your dantian is really comfortable. Don't worry, I'll leave after I finish assimilating the dragon blood..." The gourd shook its bottom slightly as it replied lazily.

"Get out right now! Back then, when I gave you the meteorite, didn't you promise me that you wouldn't enter my dantian anymore? Are you reneging on your promise?" Zhang Xuan was so furious that it felt as if his carotid artery might just burst.

This is my dantian! Why are you lazing around in here? Get out!

How in the world did a person so prim and proper like me end up taking in a shameless treasure like you?

"Fine, fine! I'll go out then, happy? I, the Great Dongxu Gourd, am a gourd that honors its promises!" Seeing that Zhang Xuan was on the verge of losing his temper, the Dongxu Gourd murmured in displeasure before leaving his dantian.

"Where's the dragon blood?" Glaring down at the Dongxu Gourd, Zhang Xuan questioned coldly. "Spit it out right now!"  
Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

The Dongxu Gourd shook its bottom lazily and replied, "I have already assimilated it!"

"Assimilated it? Didn't you say a moment ago that you'll only leave my dantian after you finish assimilating the dragon blood?"

"This... Well, I have already assimilated a portion of it at least. Besides, I was the one who swallowed the dragon blood, so there should be no question that it's mine," the Dongxu

Gourd replied indignantly, as if Zhang Xuan was a bully trying to steal sweets from a young child.

“No matter how much you have assimilated, spit out whatever’s remaining and give it to the Dragonbone Divine Spear. Otherwise, don’t blame me for getting nasty with you.” Zhang Xuan harrumphed coldly.

“But I was the one who snatched it away from that tall fellow back then! Do you have any conscience threatening a weak plant like me like this?”

At this point, the Dongxu Gourd suddenly straightened its body, and its voice changed from a whiny one to a solemn one. “But I think what you have just said makes perfect sense. The dragon blood isn’t of much use to me. It’s just that I found it particularly hateful, so I wanted to eat it. I’ll spit it out for you right now... Here you go. So, can you move the saber away now?”

With a cold harrumph, Zhang Xuan finally pulled the Infernal Blacksaber away from the Dongxu Gourd.

Humph! Continue spouting nonsense, and I’ll sever you into two!

With a look of pity on its face, the Dongxu Gourd’s body protruded outward before a tiny droplet of dragon blood was squeezed out from within.

Just like the Dongxu Gourd had said, it had already assimilated a large portion of it, such that there was not even a fifth of it remaining.

Even though there was less than a fifth remaining, due to the enhancement ritual conducted, the pressure that it emanated was still impressive. Zhang Xuan quickly waved his hand and took out the Dragonbone Divine Spear.

“Go and swallow the dragon blood. Let’s see if it’s enough for you to undo your seal!”

While it was a pity that there was much less dragon blood, it was still better than nothing.

# 1817 A Breakthrough

“Yes!”

Seeing that there was still some dragon blood remaining, the Dragonbone Divine Spear trembled in agitation. It swiftly warped back into a skeletal dragon and swallowed the remaining dragon blood.

As soon as the dragon blood surged into its body, the massive body of the Dragonbone Divine Spear began quivering in agitation. It looked as if there were countless streaks of lightning flowing on its surface, and its aura swiftly grew stronger. It was only a matter of time before it broke free of its seal to recover its strength as a true Ancient Sage artifact.

Knowing that it would take some time for the dragon blood to be fully assimilated, Zhang Xuan turned his attention back to the gourd with a doubtful frown.

He had known that this Dongxu Gourd was exceptional for possessing sentience and being able to speak human speech, but to think that it would even be able to snatch the dragon blood from Sovereign Chen Ling’s grasp...

There was no doubt that it was an extraordinary being!

Could it be a Great Sage artifact... or perhaps even an Ancient Sage artifact?

Unable to stand the suspense any longer, Zhang Xuan asked, “What in the world are you?”

Given that the other party possessed sentience, there was a chance that it knew of its true identity.

“I am a gourd!” the Dongxu Gourd replied with a shake of its bottom.

Black lines streaked across Zhang Xuan’s face. Somehow, whenever he spoke with the Dongxu Gourd, he felt like pummeling the latter!

It took a moment of deep breathing to keep his impulse to draw his saber under control before he continued his questioning. “What I’m asking is, what tier of artifact are you?”

The Dongxu Gourd paused for a moment after hearing those words. “I don’t know.”

“You don’t know?”

“I have barely gained sentience, such that my self-awareness is at the level of a child... I need to eat a lot of things in order to recover. Un, that’s right. As long as you give me sufficient food, I’ll know what tier I am as soon as I recover!” The Dongxu Gourd shook its bottom as saliva seemed to drip from its cork.

“...” Zhang Xuan.

Where’s my saber?

I should just slice this darned fool in two and spare myself the trouble!

That fellow had eaten two things so far, the meteorite and the dragon blood. Given that it was unaware of the tier of the meteorite, there was no reason to talk about it. However, the dragon blood was something that could potentially allow the Dragonbone Divine Spear to reach Ancient Sage 4-dan Dimension Shatterer realm, such that even the severely wounded Sovereign Chen Ling would have been pushed to his limits in order to protect himself.

Yet, swallowing such a valuable treasure isn’t even enough for you to recover your strength?

Really, I should just toss you away and forget all about you!

However, as Zhang Xuan’s rage subsided, curiosity began to get the better of him.

Based on what the Dongxu Gourd had said, it seemed like only things on the tier of the dragon blood could catch its interest. If so, just what kind of formidable artifact could the other party be?

He had not thought much about it before, but thinking back, it was indeed weird that someone as powerful as Ancient Sage Qiu Wu would set up a folded space and use the spiritual energy of the world to nourish a mere Dongxu Gourd for tens of thousands of years.

From the looks of it, nothing was as simple as it seemed.

Perhaps the Dongxu Gourd was even an artifact on the level of the Nine Hearts Lotus!

Zhang Xuan stretched his hand out to touch the Dongxu Gourd, hoping to compile a book on it in the Library of Heaven's Path. But contrary to his expectations, nothing appeared at all.

Perhaps, it might have been because the Dongxu Gourd was considered a living being that the Library of Heaven's Path was unable to analyze its information. Unless the Dongxu Gourd executed a battle technique or had its consciousness destroyed, it would be impossible to compile a book on it.

In the end, Zhang Xuan had no choice but to shake his head.

Regardless of what tier the Dongxu Gourd was, it was relieving to hear that it might still be of some use in the future, even though it still was not reliable.

“Alright. You should take a rest for now...” Seeing that it was impossible to get anything out of the Dongxu Gourd, Zhang Xuan could not be bothered to waste his breath. He stowed the other party into his storage ring before taking out the remaining Otherworldly Demon Ancient Sage corpses.

The two corpses that he had used as a shield against the two Ancient Sages earlier were already filled with cracks, so they could not be used anymore. However, there were still a couple that were completely undamaged. This was a good time to start forging them.

Zhang Xuan drew out his soul and dived right into one of the Great Philosopher realm consummation corpses.

In less than an hour, he had successfully forged it.

After that, he moved on to the next one...

In four hours, he had already managed to turn all of the Otherworldly Demon Ancient Sage corpses into Soulless Metal Humanoids.

The strongest of the four corpses was at Ancient Sage 2-dan consummation whereas the weakest was at Ancient Sage 1-dan consummation. With them, he would not have to panic as much if he encountered the same situation as before. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

After forging the last corpse, he heaved a sigh of relief. Looking at the sky, he noticed that dark storm clouds had gathered in the area. The surrounding space had begun warping, and it felt like a storm was going to descend upon the world very soon.

“This is the Ancient Sage Ordeal! The Dragonbone Divine Spear is going to achieve a breakthrough...” Ancient Sage Mo Ling also halted his cultivation and stood up.

Looking over, Zhang Xuan noted that flesh and blood had grown on the skeletal dragon, and pitch-black scales were starting to form on its body. Looking at those scales was like staring into the abyss, and it felt like one would sink into it.

“Even releasing its seal brings a heavenly tribulation?” Zhang Xuan was perplexed.

The Dragonbone Divine Spear was already an Ancient Sage artifact, just that its strength had been sealed by Ancient Sage Ran Qiu. Why would there be an Ancient Sage Ordeal when it was just returning to its true strength?

“Under normal circumstances, the seal should only have been released when you achieved a breakthrough to Ancient Sage. However, the fact that flesh and blood are growing out of its skeleton means that it is not its seal that had been undone but that it had managed to achieve a real breakthrough!” Ancient Sage Mo Ling said.

“It achieved a real breakthrough?” Zhang Xuan was stunned. That made sense as well.

Even in its sealed state, the Dragonbone Divine Spear was already stronger than the Infernal Blacksaber before its breakthrough to Ancient Sage. With the nourishment of such formidable dragon blood, even if its seal was not undone, it was perfectly normal that it would achieve a breakthrough to Ancient Sage!

As for Aeon of Ancient Sage... in the first place, the Dragonbone Divine Spear was an Ancient Sage artifact. Even though its strength was sealed, there was bound to be some Aeon of Ancient Sage harnessed within it. As such, it did not require Zhang Xuan's help to break through.

While the two of them were chatting with one another, the heavenly tribulation descended upon the world. It was a devastating force consisting of a mixture of heavenly flames and lightning bolts.

In the face of such power, the skeletal dragon—perhaps it should be called a black dragon now—roared furiously and charged toward the heavenly tribulation. Its massive body swam freely amid the destructive forces, allowing the lightning bolts and heavenly flames to temper its body. Gradually, its scales grew more and more radiant.

“As expected of a weapon created by Ancient Sage Ran Qiu! Despite having just achieved a breakthrough to Ancient Sage, it is able to push for a breakthrough to the Blood Reincarnation realm just from its sheer accumulation, reaching a level even higher than me!” Ancient Sage Mo Ling also recognized the Dragonbone Divine Spear, and he could not help commenting.

Ancient Sage Ran Qiu was known as the strongest individual under Kong Shi's lineage, and the Dragonbone Divine Spear was also famed to be the number one spear in history. Naturally, there was bound to be something extraordinary about it.

If Zhang Xuan could release its seal, it could very well achieve a breakthrough to the level that all cultivators dreamt of, the Dimension Shatterer realm!

A thought suddenly surfaced in Zhang Xuan's mind. Could this be the real reason that Ancient Sage Ran Qiu sealed the Dragonbone Divine Spear's cultivation?

If he achieved a breakthrough to Ancient Sage right now and helped the Dragonbone Divine Spear undo its seal, the latter might just be able to push for a breakthrough to higher realms.

Perhaps this was what Ancient Sage Ran Qiu had intended from the start!

“They said that there's value in not rushing for a breakthrough to Ancient Sage. Only with sufficient accumulation will one be able to reach greater heights. It seems like that's indeed the case!”

There were benefits to be earned from each time one challenged the Ancient Sage Ordeal. The more times one challenged it, the higher one would be able to climb in the future.

It was through challenging the Ancient Sage Ordeal multiple times that Kong shi had managed to obtain unparalleled strength.

The Dragonbone Divine Spear had challenged the Ancient Sage Ordeal once in the past. Right now, with its cultivation sealed, it had gained the opportunity to push for a breakthrough once more. If it put the strength that it had gained from the two breakthroughs together, its fighting prowess would surely surge to a whole new height.

Watching as the Ancient Sage Ordeal was gradually worn down against the resilience of the Dragonbone Divine Spear, Zhang Xuan's eyes lit up with excitement.

“Even though I am unable to decipher its seal and allow it to reach Ancient Sage 4-dan, its current might is already enough for me!”

At that moment, the Dragonbone Divine Spear had already gained strength comparable to Blood Reincarnation realm consummation cultivators. In terms of fighting prowess, it did not lose out in comparison to the current Vicious. As long as

he had the Dragonbone Divine Spear in hand, there would be no need for him to fear anyone!

Even if he encountered Sovereign Chen Ling once more, he would be able to defeat the latter with ease!

Hula!

As the lightning clouds dissipated, the black dragon in the sky warped its body back into the form of a spear before flying back in Zhang Xuan's direction. It lowered itself before Zhang Xuan respectfully.

“Master!”

# 1818 Looking for Ancient Sage Allfire

Zhang Xuan nodded as he reached out to grab the Dragonbone Divine Spear.

In an instant, he felt boundless strength surging into his body from the body of the spear. It felt as if a simple flick of his wrist would allow him to pierce through space to enter a much deeper world.

The powerful Ancient Sages that were way out of his league in the past had become existences whom he could slay with a single pierce, barely a challenge at all.

Zhang Xuan turned to Ancient Sage Mo Ling and asked, “Do you know where Ancient Sage Allfire lives?”

“Ancient Sage Allfire? Why are you looking for him? He’s one of the old ancestors of the Beast Tribe. Many years back, he fought with Sovereign Chen Yong and ended up getting chased out from his place of residence. If I recall correctly, he’s currently living in exile somewhere close to the Battlefield of Firefeather!” Ancient Sage Mo Ling replied with a perplexed tone.

Even though he was not an Otherworldly Demon, he had lived in the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe for many years, so he knew quite a lot about the otherworldly battlefield.

“He’s in the vicinity? Take me to his nest then!” Zhang Xuan said.

The main motive for him wanting to upgrade the Dragonbone Divine Spear was so that he could tame Ancient Sage Allfire. Since the latter happened to be in the vicinity, it was a good time to get it over and done with.

“This...” Ancient Sage Mo Ling felt conflicted upon hearing Zhang Xuan’s request. “I heard that Ancient Sage Allfire has quite the temper... Why are you looking for him?”

Honestly, he really found it hard to follow the train of thought of the guild leader. Why would he suddenly look for Ancient Sage Allfire?

“We still need more people on our side in order to guarantee a victory against Sovereign Chen Ling. Since Ancient Sage Allfire is in the vicinity, taming him would be great!” Zhang Xuan replied with a smile.

“Tame him?” Ancient Sage Mo Ling was rendered speechless.

The other party was the old ancestor of the Beast Tribe, such that even Sovereign Chen Yong was unable to make him submit...

Are you pulling my leg?

“Guild leader... I know that you have an exceptional aptitude in formations, but beast taming isn't as easy as it seems. It takes a long time to nurture goodwill and build intimacy before a beast is willing to submit to you,” Ancient Sage Mo Ling advised.

He acknowledged that the new guild leader was indeed very formidable, but if he had to pick a bone with him, it was that his thoughts were scarily impractical.

If it was that easy to tame the old ancestor of the Beast Tribe, Sovereign Chen Yong would not have had such a headache dealing with him before.

Too lazy to explain the matter, Zhang Xuan simply replied with a smile. “I know where you're coming from, but how do you know it won't work without giving it a try?”

“... Very well then!”

Seeing that the guild leader's obstinacy was working up once more, Ancient Sage Mo Ling knew that he would not be able to change the other party's mind, so he decided to say no more. Whipping out a map and a compass, he quickly verified their location before pointing in a certain direction. “Ancient Sage Allfire and the members of the Beast Tribe live roughly two hundred thousand li away from here!”

“Two hundred thousand li away from here? Alright then!”

Zhang Xuan nodded.

He flicked his spear and pierced the space before him lightly.

Si la!

A spatial passageway materialized, and Zhang Xuan quickly leaped in. “Let’s go!”

When they left the spatial passageway, they were already two hundred thousand li away. A barren mountain towered ahead, and countless beasts soared above them.

There were few differences between the beasts in the otherworldly battlefield and the beasts on the Master Teacher Continent. However, under the effects of the blood moon, their eyes were slightly red, making them seem exceptionally violent and savage.

There was a large variety of beasts flying around the mountain, and their numbers were astounding.

Instead of entering the mountain straight away, the two of them halted before the entrance. Zhang Xuan turned to Ancient Sage Mo Ling and said, “Send a letter over saying that we’re here to pay a visit to Ancient Sage Allfire!”

Ancient Sage Mo Ling nodded. A name scroll flew forth from his fingertips and darted toward the barren mountain. A thunderous voice echoed from the name scroll and reverberated across the entire valley.

“Soul Oracle Mo Ling—together with the new leader of the Soul Oracle Guild, Zhang Xuan—has come to pay a visit to Ancient Sage Allfire!”

Hong long long!

The unexpected arrival of guests caused the many beasts flying in the sky to simultaneously turn their heads over to look at Zhang Xuan and Ancient Sage Mo Ling with hostility reflected in their eyes.

They were already filled with hatred toward Sovereign Chen Yong for driving them toward this barren land.

They had never heard of Guild Leader Zhang Xuan before, but Ancient Sage Mo Ling was still a person whose name resounded far and wide within the otherworldly battlefield.

A Sempiternal realm beast flew over and said, “The old ancestor is currently in seclusion, so it’s not convenient for him to meet any guests. Please come back another day!”

“It’s not convenient for him to meet us? Tell your old ancestor that we come bearing goodwill. We intend no harm toward the Beast Tribe, and we believe that we could potentially help the Beast Tribe out of its current predicament!” Zhang Xuan said.

“You are going to help us out of our current predicament?” the Sempiternal realm beast sneered coldly. “Am I to believe that you are so kind as to help us without asking for anything in return? Please leave right now, or else I’ll lose my temper!”

Huala!

Many of the beasts flying in the air quickly gathered around with killing intent flaring from them.

“I can assure you that your worries are unfounded!” Seeing how wary the beasts were, Zhang Xuan calmly placated them. “Have you heard the news about Sovereign Chen Yong being killed by the humans and that Sovereign Chen Ling and Sovereign Chen Xing have sustained severe injuries and are on the verge of death? If so, you should know that the entire Spirit Tribe is on the verge of a massive revolution!”

Not expecting to hear such words from the young man, the Sempiternal realm beast paused for a moment before replying, “I have heard bits and pieces of it!”

Even though they had been exiled to such a remote location, they were still able to acquire some news about huge events in the otherworldly battlefield.

“Since Sovereign Chen Yong has been killed, the previous promise with him doesn’t have to be kept anymore. This is the ideal opportunity for the Beast Tribe to return to its homeland. Do you really want to live your life in this barren land, which lacks spiritual energy and delectable food? At this rate, it’s just

a matter of time before the entire Beast Tribe falls!” Zhang Xuan replied.

“This...” The Sempiternal realm beast fell into deep thought.

The other party was right.

The lack of delectable food was not an issue to them, but the scarcity of spiritual energy would cause the advancement of their cultivation to slow, and their eventual accomplishment would be limited as well.

This was not an issue in the short term, but it was certain that the entire Beast Tribe would weaken as time went on.

Eventually, they would become completely helpless against the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe!

“I know that you are unable to make the decision, so I’ll have to trouble you to relay what I have said and the news that you have heard to the old ancestor. I believe that he will be able to come to a wise decision as to whether he should meet me or not!” Seeing the look on the Sempiternal realm beast’s face, Zhang Xuan advised with a wave of his hand.

“... Alright, I’ll inform the old ancestor of this matter!”

Knowing that there was some truth to what the other party was saying, and that it was indeed a good opportunity for their Beast Tribe to break out from its current predicament, the Sempiternal realm beast hesitated for a moment before nodding. Its massive body turned around and flew into the depths of the mountain range.

Watching as the Sempiternal realm beast left, Zhang Xuan softly chuckled.

In order to tame Ancient Sage Allfire, he would have to get a meeting with the other party first, and in order to do so, he would need to offer the Beast Tribe something tangible.

Roughly an hour later, the Sempiternal realm beast finally returned. With a wave of its massive claws, it said, “Our old ancestor invites you in!”

“Thank you!”

Zhang Xuan and Ancient Sage Mo Ling quickly proceeded into the mountain range.

It really had to be said that the mountain range was truly barren. There were only sparse patches of plants, and they were all filled with spikes. There were hardly any medicinal herbs or greenery to be seen at all.

If not for the boulders and the soil, they might have thought that they were in a desert.

As there was no stream within the mountain range, the atmosphere was rather arid. This was indeed a climate that was unsuited for survival.

Zhang Xuan could not help but notice that the beasts he encountered along the way had starved looks on their faces.

This was a natural phenomenon. It was similar to how if powerful beasts headed to the Tianxuan Kingdom and resided there for too long, it would only be a matter of time before their cultivation began plummeting due to starvation of spiritual energy.

Even the smartest business elite would become no different from a barbarian when stranded on a remote island.

The crowd soon arrived before a cavern. The Sempiternal realm beast stopped at the entrance of the cavern and said, "The old ancestor is in this cavern. I'll be standing guard outside."

"Alright!" Zhang Xuan nodded before heading in with Ancient Sage Mo Ling.

Before even getting far, they felt a gust of warm air blowing in their direction, threatening to set someone's hair alight... Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

# 1819 All You Have to Do Is Become My Tamed Beas

Ancient Sage Allfire's main body was an Inferno Behemoth. It was through using lava to temper his body that he had managed to overcome his bottleneck and achieve a breakthrough to Ancient Sage.

As such, it was inevitable that his presence resulted in searing heat filling the area.

After walking for a moment, droplets of sweat were starting to form on Ancient Sage Mo Ling's head.

As a soul oracle, his body was chilling in nature. Extreme heat was one of his nemeses. If not for the fact that he had already reached Ancient Sage, his soul might already have been jolted out of his body.

He discreetly turned to look at the guild leader, and he could not help but be deeply impressed.

The other party was only a Sempiternal realm consummation cultivator, but it was as if he was completely impervious to such searing energy.

Not only was there not the slightest droplet of perspiration, his soul was also extremely stable, showing no signs of fluctuations as a result of the heat.

At this moment, Ancient Sage Mo Ling could not help but recall how the other party's body-soul compatibility rate was an astounding one hundred. Unable to withstand his curiosity, he asked through zhenqi telepathy, "Guild leader, is your soul... unafraid of the heat?"

"There was a time when my soul was afraid of the heat," Zhang Xuan replied. "However, after the tempering of the heavenly flame, heat of such level can't faze me anymore!"

"Tempering of the heavenly flame? Wait a moment... You put your soul into the heavenly flame?" Ancient Sage Mo Ling's

eyes were on the verge of popping out.

“Isn’t there a Heavenly Flame Ordeal at the Aureate Body realm? Didn’t you use the heavenly flame from the cultivation ordeal to temper your soul?” Zhang Xuan asked doubtfully.

This should not be a big deal at all, so why was the other party reacting in such a manner?

“Well...” Ancient Sage Mo Ling took a deep breath to calm his nerves after hearing what Zhang Xuan had said before explaining slowly. “It’s true that what you have said is the typical way for ordinary cultivators. What we, soul oracles, often do is to have our Soulless Metal Humanoid endure the heavenly flame in our place.”

“Such a thing is possible as well?” Zhang Xuan was perplexed.

“This is how it works...” Ancient Sage Mo Ling began explaining the entire process to Zhang Xuan.

Due to the chilling nature of soul oracles, chances were that they would be burned to cinders if they challenged the Heavenly Flame Ordeal. As such, soul oracles who had reached the Introspective Convalescence realm would usually possess an Aureate Body realm expert and seal a contract with the latter, thus turning the latter into their Soulless Metal Humanoid.

The person who was possessed would have their soul preserved as well. When the Heavenly Flame Ordeal descended, the physical body of the Aureate Body realm cultivator would serve as the first line of defense, and the heavenly flame would naturally focus the bulk of its attack on them. After that, the soul oracle would use the possessed soul to replace them.

And that was how soul oracles overcame the Heavenly Flame Ordeal of Aureate Body realm despite their fear of heat.

Even though it was heartless and sinister, it was effective in ensuring the survival of the soul oracle. It was something that the soul oracles had come up with after infiltrating the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe.

The lineage that Zhang Xuan had inherited was something that Lu Chong had taken from the Ancient Domain of Soul Oracles, so it did not contain such information. As such, he was unaware of this method.

Fearing that the guild leader would misunderstand, Ancient Sage Mo Ling hurriedly added, "I understand that such a method is unconventional and savage, so we have always used the bodies of Otherworldly Demons for our breakthroughs."

"I see... Such a method does lower the danger significantly, but having Introspective Convalescence realm soul oracles possess the body of an Aureate Body realm cultivator is also extremely dangerous. Alright, I'll impart a cultivation technique to you. In the future, as long as soul oracles cultivate according to it, they will be able to overcome their weaknesses of flame, lightning, and yang attribute energy!" Zhang Xuan flicked his finger and sent a set of cultivation techniques over.

It was the refined Heaven's Path Soul Art that Lu Chong was practicing as well.

Since he was the leader of the Soul Oracle Guild, and this occupation had willingly sacrificed itself time and time again to protect mankind, they more than deserved to receive those cultivation techniques from him.

"Cultivation techniques?"

Ancient Sage Mo Ling initially did not think too much of Zhang Xuan's cultivation techniques. However, when he took a closer look at them, he suddenly jolted in shock. Even his soul started fluctuating as a result of his intense emotions.

As an Ancient Sage who had studied soul arts his entire life, there was no doubt about his eye for soul cultivation techniques. The techniques that had been imparted to him by the guild leader were incredibly profound, such that if one cultivated in accordance to them, one would be able to break free of the Five Soul Declines and truly become an eternal being!

At that moment, he even felt an urge to destroy his own cultivation to rebuild it from scratch.

Seeing through Ancient Sage Mo Ling's thoughts, Zhang Xuan sent another set of cultivation techniques over with a tap of his finger. "It's already too late for you to cultivate from scratch, but I have made some modifications to resolve the flaws in your cultivation technique. These are my suggestions for you."

Ancient Sage Mo Ling immediately browsed through the content, and before he knew it, his body was trembling in agitation.

It was as if the other party had explored his body thoroughly and uncovered all of its weaknesses. Every single word in the book was directed toward one of his openings, leaving him incapable of refuting it.

It could be seen that if he cultivated according to the technique imparted, all of his flaws would swiftly be resolved. He might even be able to achieve a breakthrough soon.

Despite only being at Sempiternal realm consummation, he was able to see through my weaknesses and formulate solutions to resolve them. This is really...

Ancient Sage Mo Ling looked at the young man in front of him with utter astonishment.

He had known that the new guild leader was extraordinary from his exchanges with Jiang Fangyou, but he did not think that the other party would actually be so overpowered!

Everything had far surpassed his expectations.

Just as Ancient Sage Mo Ling was still in shock, a thunderous voice suddenly echoed in his ears. "Ancient Sage Mo Ling, can I trust your words?"

Swiftly lifting his head, he saw a beast spanning ten meters in length floating above large swathes of lava. There were many cracks reminiscent of a lava crater on his golden exterior, and he emanated a frightening aura. In terms of strength, he seemed to be on par with even Sovereign Chen Ling at his peak.

It was no wonder that he had been able to unite the Beast Tribe together to stand against Sovereign Chen Yong!

“Pleased to meet you, Ancient Sage Allfire!” Understanding the other party’s prowess, Ancient Sage Mo Ling chose to put himself in a humble position. He bent his body and clasped his fist respectfully. “This matter is a directive of our guild leader, and I am only following his instructions!”

He had no idea why the guild leader had chosen to make such a move, and he had even felt a hint of doubt earlier. However, the cultivation techniques provided by the guild leader had given him a glimpse into the young man’s miraculous abilities, and unknowingly, a sliver of expectation had sprouted in his heart.

Perhaps, if it was the guild leader, he might be able to tame this massive fellow. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

If that was the case, their lineage of soul oracles would gain a far greater say in the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe. With such prowess, they would be able to stand their ground even if they turned against the Three Sovereigns!

In the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe, rules could be flouted at any time as long as greater interests were on the line. The only thing that could truly be relied on was one’s strength.

It was the one who commanded the greatest strength who would be crowned king.

“Guild leader? You mean that Sempiternal realm little brat standing beside you?” Ancient Sage Allfire turned his massive head toward Zhang Xuan and sneered coldly. “I thought that you soul oracles were so prideful that even Kong shi was unable to make you submit? When did you fall so low as to recognize such a weakling as your guild leader?”

Ancient Sage Mo Ling’s face immediately darkened upon hearing those words. “Ancient Sage Allfire, you may insult me if you want to, but you risk turning the entire Soul Oracle Guild against you by insulting our guild leader!”

Sensing the underlying rage in Ancient Sage Mo Ling’s voice, Ancient Sage Allfire was stunned for a moment. “Oh? He

really is your guild leader?”

He directed his gaze to Zhang Xuan once more, but no matter how he looked at the other party, all he could see was an average cultivator. However, he suppressed the doubts in his mind and said, “I have heard the news concerning the Three Sovereigns, but I know them very well. I have fought Sovereign Chen Yong, and I know the tricks that he has up his sleeves. There’s no way that he could have been killed that easily!

“Besides, the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe doesn’t just consist of the Three Sovereigns. Even if all three of them died, there are still many other Lords to take their places. If we return, the chances are that we’ll only face a massacre. Since Ancient Sage Mo Ling acknowledges you as the leader of the Soul Oracle Guild, I would like to hear how you intend to bring our Beast Tribe back to our homeland.”

“It’s very simple...” Zhang Xuan smiled. “All you have to do is become my tamed beast!”

# 1820 Battling Ancient Sage Allfire

Boom!

The cavern shook, and lava billowed furiously. Ancient Sage Allfire's eyes narrowed as he spoke with a voice that seemed to crush the world, "What did you say?"

Alarmed, Ancient Sage Mo Ling quickly rushed to Zhang Xuan's side and asked, "What are you trying to do?"

He did not expect the guild leader to be so direct. However, since he had already chosen to follow the guild leader's bidding, he would not back down no matter what the latter said.

"I'd heard that you soul oracles are an arrogant bunch. It's because you refused to submit to Kong shi that your kind ended up getting slaughtered by the Master Teacher Pavilion and was forced to escape here... I thought that it was just a legend, but it seems like it's all true!" "Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

Ancient Sage Allfire took a step forward, and powerful heatwaves gushed into the surroundings.

It had been several thousand years since he had become the head of the otherworldly battlefield Beast Tribe, but this was the first time anyone tried to take him in as their tamed beast. Not even Sovereign Chen Yong had dared to utter such words, but a Sempiternal realm brat actually dared to say that... How audacious!

If he did not teach the other party a lesson, what would become of his dignity?

"It's not your place to discuss whatever our soul oracles have done!" Ancient Sage Mo Ling harrumphed coldly.

“Is that so?”

A massive head leaned in, and a brilliant stream of flames poured down from above. Ancient Sage Mo Ling narrowed his eyes in astonishment as he quickly stepped forward and raised both of his arms to defend against the stream of flames.

Peng!

The stream of flame created a huge depression beneath Ancient Sage Mo Ling, and the sheer pressure forced him back dozens of steps.

He had not thought that the other party would make a move without any warning at all. Infuriated, Ancient Sage Mo Ling gathered his power and flitted forward furiously. All of a sudden, a chilling gale whipped up within the cavern, threatening to cover the entire area in a layer of frost.

Even though soul oracles were afraid of flames, just by driving the cultivation technique that the guild leader had imparted to him, he could feel the burning sensation gradually being alleviated. With this, he felt that he would stand a chance even if he fought a real battle against the other party!

Before Ancient Sage Mo Ling could get close to Ancient Sage Allfire, a voice suddenly sounded from beneath.

“Don’t worry, leave it to me!”

He swiftly halted in his footsteps before looking at the massive Inferno Behemoth standing before him warily.

Hula!

Zhang Xuan stepped onto the edge of the lava and looked at Ancient Sage Allfire floating in the air before saying, “Why don’t we make a wager?”

Ancient Sage Allfire did not respond right away, choosing to eye the young man before him intently instead.

It had never met Ancient Sage Mo Ling before, but based on the rumors, he was one of the strongest soul oracles in the world. For him to follow the orders of this young man so loyally, the chances were that the young man possessed extraordinary means.

“My wager is very simple. I’ll have a fight with you, and if you lose, you’ll have to submit to me and become my tamed beast. On the other hand, if you win, I’ll bring Sovereign Chen Yong here personally and have him agree to terms that are favorable to your Beast Tribe!” Zhang Xuan said.

“How about it? Surely you can’t be afraid to fight with someone at my power level, right?”

“Humph!” Ancient Sage Allfire harrumphed as he raised his massive claws and swiped them toward Zhang Xuan. “Let me witness the prowess of the guild leader of the Soul Oracle Guild!”

Boom!

As Ancient Sage Allfire brought his claws down, the surrounding space seemed to have shattered apart. Incredible energy gathered around Zhang Xuan, keeping him firmly in place.

Seeing such a sight, Ancient Sage Mo Ling clenched his fists tightly in agitation.

The strength that Ancient Sage Allfire could exert was greater than he had expected. Even he would have trouble coping with strength of such caliber. Could it be that Ancient Sage Allfire’s cultivation had advanced once more after several thousand years of absence?

“No...” Ancient Sage Mo Ling swiftly came to a realization. “It’s due to the advantage of the terrain.”

Even the smallest breakthrough for experts at their level was an incredibly arduous task.

The main reason that Ancient Sage Allfire seemed exceptionally powerful was because he could tap into the power of the lava within the cavern, thus allowing him to fully draw out his strength as an Inferno Behemoth.

In such a state, he would definitely be no match for Ancient Sage Allfire.

The best he could do was escape and preserve his life.

Considering that even he did not stand a chance at all, what about the guild leader?

Ancient Sage Mo Ling quickly turned his gaze over and saw the guild leader whipping out a spear with a light chuckle.

With a powerful leap off, he stepped against the lava crater ahead of him and flew upward. Devoting his spirit into his spear, he seemed to warp into a massive dragon soaring through the nine heavens, charging toward the enemy before him furiously.

Boom!

A momentary dragon roar sounded in the air, and cracks swiftly appeared all over the cavern under the immense pressure. Countless fragments fell down from the ceiling.

“This is... the Eight Notes of Heavenly Dragon?” Ancient Sage Mo Ling was stunned.

There was only one roar that he had heard of that could crush the will of enemies and render them irrational, and that was the Eight Notes of Heavenly Dragon. However, it was said that only Pureblooded Dragons were able to voice those notes.

Did the Dragonbone Divine Spear not achieve a breakthrough not too long ago?

Furthermore, its bloodline was not pure, so how could it make such a roar?

Deng deng deng deng!

While Ancient Sage Mo Ling was still in shock, Ancient Sage Allfire was also in a state of disbelief. He was forced to retreat several steps, and shock was reflected in his eyes.

As he did not possess the Dragon Bloodline, the Eight Notes of Heavenly Dragon did not pose any intrinsic pressure to him. Nevertheless, the instinctive fear toward the emperor of all beasts still caused cracks in his state of mind, making him afraid of standing against the enemy before him.

Hula!

Barely after taking a step back, the black dragon whipped its powerful tail, and the lava beneath began billowing furiously. A hurricane gushed through the cavern, raising dozens of lava dragons.

Shaking his head, Ancient Sage Allfire had to take another look before he realized that it was not the might of the black dragon. Rather, the young man was still standing on the spot while swiftly shaking up the lava with his spear, sending massive dragons in his direction.

“This is my territory. If you think that you can use my own sphere of domain against me, you are really underestimating me!”

Not expecting the other party to make use of his own battlefield against him and even bringing forth such astounding prowess, Ancient Allfire’s huge nose breathed out a bundle of flames as he raised his legs and stomped down forcefully.

Weng!

A golden ripple spread into the surroundings, and the innumerable lava dragons swiftly turned back into lava and plummeted back into the lava pool upon coming into contact with it.

Ancient Sage Allfire had lived there for several thousand years, and the lava in there had been refined by him time and time again. While the other party did gain control over the lava for a short period of time, as long as he took charge, he would be able to wrestle back control.

Retracting his spear, Zhang Xuan asked with a smile, “Is that so?”

It did not seem like he was discouraged just because the other party had undone his attack. Instead, he was filled with absolute confidence.

After all that had happened, Ancient Sage Allfire dared not underestimate the young man before him. “You are indeed an extraordinary individual to be able to become the leader of the Soul Oracle Guild... However, it’s also a fact that your

cultivation is only at Sempiternal realm consummation. The main reason that you are able to draw forth such astounding fighting prowess is due to the spear in your hand, isn't it?"

The short fight they had earlier allowed him to see that the so-called leader of the Soul Oracle Guild was not too strong. The reason that the other party was able to fight with him at all was due to the spear in his hand.

"Indeed!" Zhang Xuan admitted frankly.

Hearing Zhang Xuan's admittance, Ancient Sage Allfire nodded in satisfaction. "A weapon is unable to showcase its greatest prowess without someone wielding it. The fact that you are able to execute such a powerful move and nearly drive me into a corner shows that you are indeed an incredible person..."

At that moment, his tone took a sharp turn as he harrumphed coldly. "However, if that's all you have, I must say that you are too naive to dare challenge me!"

The lava began bubbling once more as it gushed up furiously, reminiscent of a tsunami.

# 1821 Ancient Sage Allfire's Pride

Not only so, countless balls of flames descended from the ceiling of the cavern, turning the entire area into a fiery inferno.

In the face of such intense heat, Ancient Sage Mo Ling was forced to retreat.

Even though he had received the guild leader's cultivation technique, which boosted his fire resistance considerably, it was still impossible for him to withstand that sea of flames. It was fortunate that he was still in his physical body. If his soul had been out at that moment, he might have sustained severe injuries!

Is the guild leader fine? Ancient Sage Mo Ling thought worriedly.

Following which, he heard a loud peal of laughter before spotting the silhouette of the guild leader floating calmly in the air. Instead of evading the descending balls of flame, he took a sharp intake of breath instead.

“Not bad!”

Hula!

Following which, a powerful suction force suddenly came from the young man's body. As if a whale taking in water, the flames all around the area began gushing furiously in his direction.

The sudden influx of searing energy caused the young man's body to expand swiftly. In an instant, he had already grown to a height of roughly ten meters. He stood powerfully on the lava with a crimson body, reminiscent of a flame giant.

“You...”

Ancient Sage Allfire did not expect Zhang Xuan to be so powerful. He was taken aback for a moment before swiftly recovering to launch his ultimate move. However, at that moment, the flames in the young man's body suddenly spurted out.

Xiong xiong xiong!

The crimson flame that spurted out of the young man's body burned intensely as soon as it came into contact with the surrounding air. The crimson flame slowly took on a darker shade, gradually making the transition to black.

“This is... Empyrean Heavenly Flame?”

Sensing the temperature emanated from the black flame, Ancient Sage Allfire felt goosebumps rising all over his massive body as he hurriedly backed away.

As a being that thrived in flames, the Inferno Behemoth feared not the Heavenly Flame Ordeal, which struck deep fear in the hearts of other cultivators.

But... that was only taking normal heavenly flame into account. For something on the caliber of Empyrean Heavenly Flame, not even Inferno Behemoths could withstand something like that!

Tzzzzzzzzzz!

It was just a simple touch, but Ancient Sage Allfire felt as if his body was burning. A charred smell wafted from him as he hurriedly retreated once more.

To his astonishment, he was actually frightened the young man's move!

He had thought that given his natural advantage against the yin attribute soul oracles, he would be able to defeat the other party easily. This was also why he had invited Ancient Sage Mo Ling into his lair without fear.

Who could have known that even the flames that he specialized in would end up being used against him?

Empyrean Heavenly Flame was an entity that could set anything in the world alight. Not even Blood Reincarnation

realm experts would dare face it directly.

Seeing that Ancient Sage Allfire on the verge of hitting the other end of the lava pool, Zhang Xuan chuckled softly as he raised the Dragonbone Divine Spear and charged forth.

“Didn’t you say I was too naive for challenging you with what I have? If that’s the case, why don’t you stop cowering away?”

Wuuuuuuu!

The furious roar of a black dragon filled the cavern as the black flames all over the area billowed under its dance, threatening to annihilate everything in its path.

By that point, Ancient Sage Mo Ling had already fled out of the cavern, knowing that he might just lose his life if he got involved in the battle.

Given how he was unable to even withstand ordinary flames, getting into close contact with Empyrean Heavenly Flame would really cost him his life!

However, to use the flames that Ancient Sage Allfire specialized in to subdue him... how in the world did the guild leader manage to do it?

In truth, Zhang Xuan also did not expect such an outcome, and it had not been his intention to make such a move. However, when Ancient Sage Allfire summoned his flames, the physical body and soul that he had tempered through the Empyrean Heavenly Flame had suddenly begun trembling in agitation, seemingly craving to devour the other party’s flame.

Thus, he had drawn the flame into his body. To his shock, as soon as the other party’s flame came into contact with his Heaven’s Path zhenqi, it had actually swiftly transformed into the Empyrean Heavenly Flame.

The Heaven’s Path zhenqi was like oxygen fueling the flame, causing the flame to release heat of even greater intensity.

Peng peng peng peng!

Cornered by the black flame to the corner of the cavern, Ancient Sage Allfire’s hair had already been completely burned clean at this point in time. His flesh and blood were

already beginning to evaporate, revealing parts of his golden bones here and there.

From the looks of it, it was only a matter of time before the old ancestor who was renowned for his expertise in flames would be reduced to cinders. Ironic.

“Do you submit or not?” Zhang Xuan asked calmly.

“Not over my dead body!” the obstinate Ancient Sage Allfire spat.

As the old ancestor of the Beast Tribe, a Blood Reincarnation realm expert, he had his own pride.

This was not just about his own dignity but the reputation of the entire Beast Tribe! If the leader of the otherworldly battlefield Beast Tribe submitted to a Sempiternal realm consummation minor figure, the entire tribe would become laughingstock!

“In other words, you aren’t going to abide by the rules of the wager,” Zhang Xuan uttered impassively.

“You are the one who one-sidedly decided on the wager. I never agreed to it!” Ancient Sage Allfire harrumphed coldly.

It was true that Zhang Xuan had proposed a wager, but he had never given his consent to the matter.

“Do you really wish to die?”

Under the relentless attack of the Dragonbone Divine Spear and the searing heat of the Empyrean Heavenly Flame, Ancient Sage Allfire’s wounds were worsening at an alarming rate. Yet, the latter showed no sign of submitting.

Zhang Xuan could not help but frown in response.

His Beast Pummeling Taming Method worked not just because his strength surpassed the beast itself but because the Heaven’s Path zhenqi was able to nourish the beast and refine its bloodline, thus removing its bottleneck.

To put it in simpler terms, it was like the carrot and the stick.

Through the Dragonbone Divine Spear and the Empyrean Heavenly Flame, he was indeed able to corner Ancient Sage

Allfire. However, due to his limited cultivation, the effect of his Heaven's Path zhenqi was extremely limited on the latter.

Without that, it meant that he was simply relying on threats to make the other party submit. Naturally, the effectiveness of the technique was greatly reduced.

Not to mention, the other party was the old ancestor of the Beast Tribe and was already used to freedom. He would rather die than relinquish his freedom and become the subordinate of a human.

“Show me your worst! However, my descendants have never offended you, and as the leader of the Soul Oracle Guild and an Ancient Sage, I hope that you won't lower yourself to dealing with them too!” Ancient Sage Allfire gritted his teeth.

It was his own fault for being weak, and he was willing to accept his death, especially after having lived for so many years. However, his many descendants outside represented the future of the Beast Tribe. If this young man went on a massacre, the otherworldly battlefield Beast Tribe might just go extinct.

However, even though the otherworldly battlefield obeyed the rule of survival of the fittest, the act of Ancient Sages slaughtering the weak was still an action deeply frowned upon among major powers. He believed that the other party would not cast aside his dignity to commit such shameless acts!

“Your descendants?” Those words brought a ray of hope to Zhang Xuan's eyes.

“I think you're mistaken. I am not an Ancient Sage but a Sempiternal realm cultivator, so I don't really have much of a reputation to uphold. I advise you to think it through. Submit to me, and I'll lead your Beast Tribe out of this wretched mountain range. Continue opposing me, and once you die, I believe you should know that even if I don't make a move, the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe will make use of this opportunity to get rid of your descendants once and for all!”

He would have been completely helpless if Ancient Sage Allfire had no desire in the world at all, but it seemed like

there was still something that he could use to negotiate with the latter.

“Life and death are predestined. I might be able to protect them for the moment, but I can’t protect them forever... If that is the fate that awaits our Beast Tribe, there’s nothing I can say,” Ancient Sage Allfire replied in resignation.

Seeing that the other party’s attitude was resolute, not yielding in the least, Zhang Xuan lowered his head to ponder for a moment before remarking, “You’re reluctant to submit to me because there’s an entire race looking up to you. As their old ancestor, there’s no way you could sully the reputation of your race by submitting to a human. However... what if all of your descendants are supportive of you becoming my tamed beast?”

Not expecting to hear such words, Ancient Sage Allfire scoffed in disdain. “My descendants are prideful individuals. They won’t even submit to me, so how could they possibly allow me to submit to you? You are dreaming!”

Did the young man’s head get hit by a boulder? No matter how foolish his descendants were, there was no way that they would watch as their old ancestor became another person’s tamed beast!

If so, what would it say about their entire race? They would be forced to lower their heads in shame!

“Oh? Shall we watch and see then?” The edges of Zhang Xuan’s lips edged upward as he flicked his wrist and retrieved the Dragonbone Divine Spear. He turned to the exit and instructed, “Ancient Sage Mo Ling, I’ll leave it to you to look after Ancient Sage Allfire here. Make sure that he doesn’t leave this cavern. I’ll be heading out for a moment...”

With that, he swiftly flitted out of the cavern.

# 1822 Submit to Me!

“What do you intend to do?”

Seeing the young man rushing out of the cavern, Ancient Sage Allfire suddenly felt a bad premonition. He wanted to stop the young man, but a chilling aura suddenly crushed down on him.

Under normal circumstances, he would have been able to overcome such power with ease and even launch a powerful counterattack. However, with the severe injuries that he had sustained, he found himself unable to exert the slightest power.

“Ancient Sage Mo Ling, you b\*stard! I swear that I’ll kill you once I recover to full strength!” Ancient Sage Allfire roared frenziedly.

“I’ll be waiting!” Ancient Sage Mo Ling replied nonchalantly as he continued exerting strength on the other party, pinning him firmly to the wall.

Roar roar! Wu wu!

While the two Ancient Sages were stuck with one another, countless beast calls reverberated outside the cavern. It was as if the young man had started a massacre right after leaving the cavern.

“No, you b\*stard! I swear I’ll tear your flesh into shreds and sear your soul to oblivion!” Hearing those cries of agony, Ancient Sage Allfire’s body trembled in utter rage and desolation as he roared furiously. “You scoundrel! How can you prey on the weak like that? Where is your dignity?”

His voice reverberated loudly throughout the entire mountain range, but it seemed like the young man could not hear him at all.

The cries of agony continued echoing loudly in the air.

Seeing that he was unable to escape and his shouts were not reaching at all, Ancient Sage Allfire frantically turned to the soul oracle before him and made his case. “Mo Ling, you are

an Ancient Sage just like that. Even though we have never met one another, I have heard about your affairs and know a bit about your temperament. You are righteous person who can't stand oppression... Are you going to watch quietly as your guild leader commits genocide? Is that how far the Soul Oracle Guild has fallen?"

"This..." Ancient Sage Mo Ling lowered his head in shame.

Clearly, he did not expect the guild leader to rush right out and use his superior strength to oppress those ordinary beasts either.

Even in the lawless otherworldly battlefield, there were some unspoken rules. If Ancient Sages were allowed to target the younglings of one another, it would be a guaranteed recipe for mutually assured destruction, thus the convention against such actions.

However, as a subordinate, Ancient Sage Mo Ling had already made up his mind to follow the orders of the young man no matter what they were. So, despite harboring doubts in his mind, he chose to stay out of the matter.

"I apologize, but I'm simply following orders!" Ancient Sage Mo Ling shook his head as he continued exerting his strength to pin the other party to the wall.

"You..." Ancient Sage Allfire was so furious that his voice began quivering. "If I get out of this alive, I swear I'll eradicate your entire lineage of soul oracles!"

He was truly furious.

An expert whom even he was no match for had actually gone to the extent of massacring his juniors. This was such a shameless act!

He roared on and on furiously but to no avail. The cries of agony that reverberated in his ears seemed to continue for an eternity before everything fell silent. In that instant, Ancient Sage Allfire's heart turned cold with despair.

The young man soon returned with a relaxed look on his face.

“You b\*stard! You killed my tribesmen and destroyed my lineage. If I get out of here alive, I’ll surely destroy everything that you hold dear!” Ancient Sage howled with a warped look on his face. Overflowing resentment flowed out of his eyes, wanting to drown everything in sight.

“Killed your tribesmen?” Seeing how furious Ancient Sage Allfire was, Zhang Xuan stunned for a moment before shaking his head helplessly. “You’re overthinking it. I am a gentle and loving person who is passionate for peace, so how could I possibly commit genocide? Ancient Sage Mo Ling, let go of him and allow him to go out and take a look!”

“This...” Ancient Sage Mo Ling hesitated for a brief moment before retracting his strength.

Hula!

Ancient Sage Allfire fell from the wall. He hurriedly got to his feet before rushing out of the cavern. Zhang Xuan and Ancient Sage Mo Ling followed leisurely behind him.

Outside of the cavern, the light from the crimson moon was slightly glaring. Ancient Sage Allfire quickly scanned his surroundings, only to see many of his descendants gathered outside, alive and kicking. Every single one of them was roaring passionately, their red eyes reflecting excitement.

“Your cultivation...” Ancient Sage Allfire was stunned.

Having spent countless years with his descendants on this barren mountain, he was extremely clear about their cultivation. After being forced to this land, due to the sparse spiritual energy in the area, it was already a blessing that they had maintained their current level of cultivation. Any advancement was pretty much impossible...

But at that moment, the tens of thousands of beasts had made breakthroughs in their cultivation, such that their overall prowess had grown significantly!

This was especially for those that he held in high regard. Not only was there a rise in their cultivation, it seemed like they had happened upon an epiphany. It felt like they were ready to

push further into higher realms as soon as the opportunity presented itself.

Furthermore, they were no longer yellow-skinned, malnourished beasts. Each of them looked physically powerful and spiritually revitalized, as if they had been born anew.

It was just a short moment of absence, but it felt like everything had changed!

“Paying respects to the old ancestor!”

The many beasts swiftly bowed down to pay respect to Ancient Sage Allfire.

“You...” Ancient Sage Allfire’s lips quivered. There were countless questions on the tip of his tongue, but he was too shaken to say anything.

The beasts that had brought Zhang Xuan into the cavern earlier lowered themselves to the ground and said, “Old ancestor, our master is a compassionate man, and we have already submitted to him. We beseech you to make a decision swiftly!”

“You have already submitted to him?” Ancient Sage Allfire felt as if he was dreaming. “All of you have acknowledged him as your master?”

“That’s right!” The beasts nodded simultaneously. They turned to Zhang Xuan and bowed down once more. “Paying respects to Master!”

“Un!” Zhang Xuan nodded in satisfaction before turning his gaze back to Ancient Sage Allfire. “How is it? Your tribesmen have already acknowledged me as their master, and they are supportive of you submitting to me as well. Is there anything else that you are hesitant about?”

“Old ancestor, we beseech you to join us!”

The eyes of the beasts gathered were glimmering in excitement.

“All of you...”

Ancient Sage Allfire felt as if a mini explosion had just erupted in his head. He took several steps back as he looked on at the sight before him in disbelief, wondering if what he was seeing was truly reality.

These were the elites of his descendants. Back then, during the battle with Sovereign Chen Yong, they had savagely torn Otherworldly Demon after Otherworldly Demon apart, not yielding to any opponent. Yet, they had all submitted to a single soul oracle...

Ancient Sage Allfire was not the only one who had such an expression on his face. Even Ancient Sage Mo Ling looked as if he had seen a ghost.

How long had it been since the guild leader had left the cavern?

Ten minutes? Twenty minutes?

Within that short span of time, he had actually managed to tame tens of thousands of beasts...

Even if someone was just scattering food to feed a couple of chicks, they would not be that fast, right? Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

He had known that the guild leader was able to set up formations swiftly, but he did not think that the other party would be even faster when it came to taming beasts!

“Old ancestor, if you acknowledge our master, we’ll be able to raise our cultivation swiftly... You mustn’t hesitate!”

“The rise of our tribe depends on your decision! Please don’t reject our master’s goodwill!”

“Under our master’s leadership, we’ll be able to cleanse ourselves of our previous humiliation, and our Beast Tribe will swiftly grow stronger over time!”

Many beasts roared in agreement.

Ancient Sage Allfire was rendered speechless.

Previously, he had still thought that his descendants had backbone and would not submit easily. Who could have known that all of them would defect so quickly?

From the looks of it, if he did not agree to it, his descendants would continue heaping pressure onto him until he finally succumbed.

“You value your dignity because you wish to set a good example for your descendants and allow them to live a prideful life. I am able to give your tribe what you want to give them. Acknowledge me as your master, and I swear that I won’t let you down!” Zhang Xuan said.

“I won’t force you into making a decision right now. I have a cultivation technique here that will not only allow you to recover to your peak, you’ll also be able to exert incredible fighting prowess without tapping into the lava in your cavern!”

Before Ancient Sage Allfire could react, he suddenly felt a jolt in his head. A new cultivation technique had appeared in his head.

“This...”

Upon taking a look at it, Ancient Sage Allfire’s body suddenly began trembling uncontrollably. He was so agitated that he was unable to voice his words properly.

# 1823 Sovereign Chen Yong Arrives

The cultivation technique that the young man had just imparted to him not only resolved the flaws in his cultivation, it even complemented his strengths. If Ancient Sage Allfire cultivated according to it, even without the lava in its cavern, he would easily be able to reach Ancient Sage 4-dan or even higher!

It was no exaggeration to say that this cultivation technique was tailored just for him! As long as he cultivated according to it, he would grow by leaps and bounds.

After carefully going through the cultivation technique in his mind, Ancient Sage Allfire finally came to a realization. There was no doubt that the young man was a person with great capabilities, and he would eventually rise to the top of the world. Thus, he lowered his body on the ground and sent a droplet of blood essence into the young man's glabella. "Allfire pays respects to Master!"

Although he had been hesitant previously, at that very moment, all doubts had been removed from his mind. Despite the other party's young age and lower cultivation, he was qualified to become his master. Following behind the other party would surely bring him to greater heights.

On the other hand, Zhang Xuan heaved a sigh of relief after assimilating the blood essence.

It seemed like his trip had not been wasted. A Blood Reincarnation realm Ancient Sage with so many tamed beasts... Even if he encountered Sovereign Chen Ling once more, he would have the power to protect himself!

...

Several figures were flitting swiftly in the air.

They were Sovereign Chen Yong and Ancient Sage Hao Xun, who had separated from Zhang Xuan a while back.

Following behind them were four Ancient Sage 2-dan Great Philosopher realm cultivators.

Even though they were weaker than the two leading the way, there was no doubt that they were the strongest experts on the Master Teacher Continent. In a battle, their might would be something to behold.

They were the Ancient Sages whom the two of them had managed to rally to their side within this period of time.

Seeing the space before him shattering again and again as they surged forward, one of the Ancient Sages following behind could not help but ask, “Your Majesty, where are we heading right now?”

“We’re heading to the Battlefield of Firefeather!” Sovereign Chen Yong replied calmly.

“Battlefield of Firefeather?” The Ancient Sage who had just asked the question pondered for a moment before replying. “Given how remote that place is, there shouldn’t be any Ancient Sages there, right?”

“If I recall correctly, the Beast Tribe’s Ancient Sage Allfire resides there,” another Ancient Sage added.

“Ancient Sage Allfire?”

Upon hearing this name, the remaining members of the group recoiled in horror a little before swiftly turning their gazes toward Sovereign Chen Yong.

There was no one on the otherworldly battlefield who had not heard of the conflict between Ancient Sage Allfire and Sovereign Chen Yong. Yet, to run over right now to look for the other party... was that not courting death?

“I don’t deny that there’s a grudge between me and Ancient Sage Allfire. However, if we wish to expose the crimes of Sovereign Chen Ling and Sovereign Chen Xing, there’s no doubt that we’ll need that fellow’s strength!”

Since he had already rallied those Ancient Sages to his side, he had no intention of hiding anything from them.

“But the conflict back then caused the relationship between the two of you to turn so stale...”

“There’s no choice no matter how stale it is. I can only hope for the best...” Sovereign Chen Yong shook his head.

If he had a choice, he would not have wanted to forsake his dignity to request help from his enemy. He knew that he would definitely be humiliated, and it might even backfire on him. However, given the current circumstances, he did not have any other choice.

Ancient Sage Hao Xun turned his gaze over and asked, “Didn’t Elder Zhang Xuan say that... he’ll find a way to tame Ancient Sage Allfire after finding the dragon blood? Are we not waiting for him?”

“Tame?” Hearing those words, Sovereign Chen Yong shook his head. “Do you think that Allfire will ever allow himself become another person’s tamed beast?”

Ancient Sage Hao Xun fell silent.

He could not say for sure when it came to other beasts, but Ancient Sage Allfire was one hell of an obstinate fellow. In the past, Sovereign Chen Yong had used all kinds of methods on the latter, but the latter had seemed completely impervious to his bait and threats. He would even rather migrate to this barren land with scarce spiritual energy than submit to the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe...

From this, it could be seen just how prideful Ancient Sage Allfire was.

Was it even possible for such a prideful beast to submit to a person who had not even reached Ancient Sage?

“The Young Master has never met Allfire before, so it’s no surprise that he’s unfamiliar with his temperament. On the other hand, as people who have met and interacted with him, we are very clear that it’s impossible to tame him!”

At that point, Sovereign Chen Yong sighed deeply. “Since that’s the case, rather than hope for the impossible, we might as well head over and have a good talk with Allfire. Back then, I was the one who forced him into exile, so I should be the one undoing the damage!”

“I guess we can only hope for the best!” Ancient Sage Hao Xun nodded.

Given that Sovereign Chen Yong was the culprit who had turned Ancient Sage Allfire against the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe, if they wanted to placate Ancient Sage Allfire and bring him over to their side, it would indeed be good to start with him.

“We’re here...”

Amid their discussion, the Ancient Sages finally arrived at a location in proximity to the Battlefield of Firefeather. A barren mountain range unfolded before their eyes.

“This is the Battlefield of Firefeather? Is it really possible to live in such a place?” one of the Ancient Sages remarked in shock, sensing the incredibly thin spiritual energy in the air.

Without any resources and spiritual energy, the only thing one could do in such a place was survive. There was no way one could advance one’s cultivation in a place like this!

Considering how Sovereign Chen Yong had driven Ancient Sage Allfire to such a barren place, it seemed unlikely that they would be able to engage his help to deal with the other two Sovereigns. The situation simply did not look too good.

Noticing the crowd’s worry, Sovereign Chen Yong shook his head bitterly. “Let’s find a beast and ask him where Ancient Sage Allfire is!”

With a flicker, he appeared right before one of the beasts loitering around the mountain range.

The beast immediately recoiled in alarm.

Sovereign Chen Yong hurriedly stopped the beast from shouting for help and sent a zhenqi telepathic message. “I am a

friend of your old ancestor, Ancient Sage Allfire. Is it possible for you to take me to him?”

Suppressed to the point where it was completely unable to send out any signals, the beast had no choice but to reply obediently. “Our old ancestor... is currently in the midst instructing our tribesmen to pack up...”

“Pack up? Where are you all heading?”

The group of Ancient Sages looked at one another in bewilderment.

It was true that the condition of the Battlefield of Firefeather was horrendous, but they had managed to live there for many years. Why were they suddenly packing up at that moment?

“We are heading to the capital!” the beast quickly replied.

This beast was only at Saint 1-dan, and it had lived in the outer perimeters of the mountain range. As such, Zhang Xuan could not be bothered to tame it.

“You are returning to the capital?” Hearing those words, Sovereign Chen Yong’s face warped in horror. “Could it be that... Sovereign Chen Yong has made a move ahead of us and successfully rallied Ancient Sage Allfire over to his side?”

It was no wonder that it harbored such thoughts. The capital was currently under Sovereign Chen Ling’s control, and considering how Ancient Sage Allfire had a feud with him, it was not unthinkable for Sovereign Chen Ling to try rally the latter against him.

“Have any guests come here recently?” Sovereign Chen Yong asked.

The beast pondered for a moment before replying. “Not too long ago, an Ancient Sage named Mo Ling came over along with our old ancestor’s master! They should still be around at the moment!”

“Wait a moment... Master?”

Sovereign Chen Yong was just about to ask who the master was when Ancient Sage Hao Xun suddenly spoke up.

“Ancient Sage Mo Ling is the strongest expert among the soul

oracles at the moment, and he's one of the trusty aides of Sovereign Chen Ling. He played a huge role in planning the encirclement against you..."

Ancient Sage Hao Xun had received a fair bit of insider news from his subordinates and descendants after leaving the Primal Lodestone Mountain, so he was privy to a lot of specifics.

As a Blood Reincarnation realm expert serving under Sovereign Chen Ling, it was inevitable that others would keep tabs on Ancient Sage Mo Ling in an attempt to figure out Sovereign Chen Ling's plans.

"Considering how Ancient Sage Mo Ling is subordinated to Sovereign Chen Ling, and Ancient Sage Allfire has acknowledged that person as his master... Could that person be Sovereign Chen Ling? Did Sovereign Chen Ling really manage to tame Ancient Sage Allfire?"

Gedeng!

Sovereign Chen Yong's heart skipped a beat.

If that was truly the case, they were in deep trouble.

After asking a few more questions to confirm Ancient Sage Allfire's location, Sovereign Chen Yong tapped his finger on the beast's head to knock it out before turning his head around and instructing, "Let's head there secretly. We have to make sure that Ancient Sage Allfire doesn't notice..."

Given that Sovereign Chen Ling was still in the vicinity, they had to head over to take a look no matter what.

"Alright!"  
Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

Knowing how serious this matter was, the crowd quickly nodded. They concealed their auras and proceeded forward while flying close to the ground so as to prevent themselves from getting noticed.

—

Discord chat group link: <https://discord.gg/ATHVehx>

# 1824 Returning to the Capital

After passing through several mountains, the group soon spotted a massive group of beasts floating before a cavern in a terribly neat formation, almost as if an army waiting for a command.

“Isn’t this place scarce in spiritual energy? Why is the spirit of these beasts so united? Furthermore, it seems like their fighting prowess has also improved considerably from before.” Sovereign Chen Yong was stunned once more.

When he drove these beasts into exile, he had led his great army to battle them. While the beasts had been fairly strong opponents, they had hardly been as strong as they were at that very moment.

He had thought that it would already be a blessing if they could maintain their cultivation realms after being exiled there, but to think that they had managed to grow so much ever since then!

In his moment of shock, he saw a spatial distortion in front of the cavern, and two figures materialized there.

The first figure was completely cloaked its flames. Black streaks could be seen on its golden exterior, an indication that it was slowly changing colors.

The incredible heat coming from made it feel as if it was cooking the surrounding space-time.

“Such prowess...” Sovereign Chen Yong clenched his fists grimly.

Without a doubt, the figure before him was the very Ancient Sage Allfire whom he was intending to rally to his side. During the war back then, he had exchanged blows with the other party, so he knew the other party’s cultivation very well. He had thought that it would be nigh impossible for the other

party to advance any further after being forced here, but who could have known that Ancient Sage Allfire would actually make such a huge leap in his cultivation?

In terms of prowess, the other party could be said to be close to being on par with his peak!

To think that the Beast Tribe would be so resilient as to continue growing stronger even when they had been exiled to such remote land...

What in the world was going on?

Previously, Sovereign Chen Yong had thought that he would still be able to lure the other party over to their faction by offering them some favorable terms, but with Ancient Sage Allfire's current strength, it was unlikely that their terms could move him anymore.

"Is that person over there Ancient Sage Mo Ling? How did he grow so much stronger? I met him three years ago, but he wasn't so strong back then!" one of the Ancient Sages exclaimed.

It was only after hearing that voice that Sovereign Chen Yong finally turned his attention toward the other figure standing beside Ancient Sage Allfire. With just a glance, his eyebrows immediately shot up in astonishment.

He had met Ancient Sage Mo Ling as well, and the latter was indubitably a rather troublesome opponent to deal with. Fortunately, it was extremely difficult for soul oracles to advance their cultivation, so the latter had never posed too great a threat to him. However, somehow, the latter's cultivation had also advanced to an unimaginable level.

Were the heavens really signaling that his era had come to an end?

"Master, we are deeply grateful for your benevolent enlightenment. We shall brave through any peril with you without uttering a single word of complaint!"

It seemed like Ancient Sage Allfire had not noticed Sovereign Chen Yong and the others, who were hiding behind the

mountain. Instead, he clasped his fist and bowed deeply toward the cavern before him.

After acknowledging his new master, he did not rush into leaving their area of exile. Instead, he chose to make use of the underground lava to recuperate from his injuries.

Using the technique that his master had imparted to him, not only did he recover swiftly from his wounds, he felt like his cultivation had advanced considerably. It left him with a feeling of indescribable exhilaration, and the feeling of gratitude toward his young master deepened as well.

“There’s no need to stand on ceremony!” a young man said calmly as a silhouette slowly flew out of the cavern.

Upon seeing this silhouette, Sovereign Chen Yong’s body jolted.

He had been thinking that the person who would come out was going to be Sovereign Chen Ling, and he had been prepared to find a chance to end the other party’s life. However, when he took a closer look, what he saw left him astounded instead.

“Young Master...”

It was the Young Master who had left for the capital in search of dragon blood!

Did he not go to Sovereign Chen Ling’s palace?

Why would he be there?

Could it be that the master whom Ancient Sage Allfire was speaking of earlier was actually referring to him?

In other words, the Young Master had already managed to tame Ancient Sage Allfire!

Despite being the number one Otherworldly Demon Emperor of the Spirit Tribe, he suddenly found his mind incapable of comprehending what was going on before him.

In the midst of his astonishment, Sovereign Chen Yong heard a chuckle not too far away.

“Come over since you are already here!”

Even though Ancient Sage Allfire and the others did not notice a thing, Zhang Xuan had sensed the power of magnetism lingering in the area. Activating his Eye of Insight, it did not take him long to notice Sovereign Chen Yong's tracks.

Hu!

Seeing that he had been found, Sovereign Chen Yong flew out without any hesitation. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

"Sovereign Chen Yong..." Upon seeing his old nemesis, Ancient Sage Allfire narrowed his eyes in fury. Flames swiftly surged forth from his body, and it seemed like he would turn the entire mountain range into a living hell in an instant.

"Stop!" Zhang Xuan quickly raised his hand and stopped him.

"Yes!" Ancient Sage Allfire did not dare blatantly disobey his master's instructions, but that did not stop the fury from burning in the depths of his hearts. Just as he was perplexed as why his master would stop him, he saw the number one Otherworldly Demon Emperor of the Spirit Tribe clapping his fist, bowing deeply, and greeting, "Young Master!"

"Young Master?"

Taken aback by what he had heard, Ancient Sage Allfire quickly turned his gaze over to Ancient Sage Mo Ling, only to see the latter with an equally incredulous expression.

The fact that Sovereign Chen Yong was addressing the young man as 'Young Master' meant that he was subordinated to the young man... but how could that be?

For the great Sovereign Chen Yong, the highest leader of the Spirit Tribe, to willingly serve as the subordinate of another man... something felt really off!

Thus, Ancient Sage Allfire could not help but ask, "Master, is he your subordinate?"

Zhang Xuan nodded with a smile. "Sovereign Chen Yong can indeed be considered my subordinate. Sovereign Chen Yong, I have just accepted Ancient Sage Allfire as my tamed beast, so

I expect you to put aside any conflict you have with him, alright?”

Even though Sovereign Chen Yong was equally shocked, he still subconsciously nodded before looking at Ancient Sage Allfire with a perplexed look on his face. “We meet again...”

They could be considered two of the most outstanding experts in the otherworldly battlefield. There was no one who did not know of the battle that had happened between the two of them, and it had even been proclaimed as the greatest battle that had happened in the past several millenniums!

Yet, of the two of them, one had become a subordinate whereas the other had become a tamed beast...

What was even more frightening was that they were both serving the young man named Zhang Xuan!

Just the thought of it felt ridiculous in itself!

“Un...” Ancient Sage Allfire nodded.

To be honest, he had thought that the young man’s claim that he would lead the Beast Tribe to claim back its rightful land was just an empty promise, but upon seeing that even Sovereign Chen Yong was a subordinate to him, he realized that the young man was serious about it.

“Sovereign Chen Yong, I have already agreed to help Ancient Sage Allfire return to the land that they used to reside in, so I want you to promise to push for the coexistence between the Beast Tribe and the Spirit Tribe. You are not to regard the Beast Tribe as an outsider and ostracize them!” Zhang Xuan instructed.

“I’ll obey your orders, Young Master!” Sovereign Chen Yong quickly nodded in agreement.

Even if he wanted to refute those words, he was already powerless to do so, especially since the young man had Ancient Sage Allfire on his side.

No wonder the Young Master could catch the Spirit God’s eye. He was indeed an exceptional individual!

Ancient Sage Allfire was an opponent whom he would have to tread carefully around, but in the blink of an eye, it had already been tamed so obediently. He really could not help but wonder how it was done.

“Good! With this, we already have the strength to stand against Sovereign Chen Ling and Sovereign Chen Xing! It’s about time for us to return to the capital and end this farce!”

There was still an air of tension between Ancient Sage Allfire and Sovereign Chen Yong, but he knew that it would take much more time for them to resolve the grudges between them. Thus, he did not force the matter.

Right now, they had four Ancient Sage 3-dan experts on their side, namely Sovereign Chen Yong, Ancient Sage Hao Xun, Ancient Sage Mo Ling, and Ancient Sage Allfire. If they factored in the Dragonbone Divine Spear and Vicious, that added up to a total of six Blood Reincarnation realm experts on their side.

As for Ancient Sage 2-dan Great Philosopher realm experts, they had four of them in total.

Taking into account those Soulless Metal Humanoid that Zhang Xuan had forged not too long ago, their total fighting force was already beyond that of Sovereign Chen Ling.

Even if Sovereign Chen Xing sided with Sovereign Chen Ling in the midst of the battle, Zhang Xuan was still confident that they would be able to emerge victorious!

This meant that it was time for them to return to the capital, declare the truth that Sovereign Chen Yong was still alive, and have the final showdown!

“Yes!”

The crowd nodded grimly.

Knowing how important this matter was, Ancient Sage Allfire turned around and instructed, “Children, you will have to wait here. After we resolve the issue at the capital, I’ll take you all back to where we truly belong...”

There was no way that he could take everyone into the capital with him. Otherwise, it could very well incite a full-blown war between the Beast Tribe and the Spirit Tribe, which was not what he wanted.

For the time being, it was best to leave the rest of the Beast Tribe there. As long as they took out the main culprits, Sovereign Chen Ling and Sovereign Chen Xing, and returned power to Sovereign Chen Yong, everything else would be a walk in the park!

# 1825 Sovereign Chen Yong Isn't Dead?

In the capital of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe, there was a sealed room filled with all kinds of seals that isolated the space from the rest of the world, hindering even one's Spiritual Perception from passing through.

Peng!

With a loud smack on the table, a middle-aged man with sharp eyebrows stood up wrathfully, shouting, "That scoundrel! This is no different from a revolt!"

A younger Otherworldly Demon scanned the crowd and furiously bellowed, "The three Sovereigns of the Spirit Tribe have always looked after one another, but that b\*stard actually disregarded the rules and colluded with the humans to kill Sovereign Chen Yong! That wretched traitor of the Spirit Tribe! As proud citizens of the Spirit Tribe, we must come together to overthrow this nonsense!"

If Zhang Xuan was there, he would definitely have been able to tell that this Otherworldly Demon was the student of his that had infiltrated the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe... Liu Yang!

At this very moment, he had assembled a group of 'patriotic warriors' to expose Sovereign Chen Ling and Sovereign Chen Xing's crimes.

Around a month ago, Sovereign Chen Ling had returned to the otherworldly battlefield and announced to the whole world that Sovereign Chen Yong had been assaulted and killed by the experts of mankind. In an attempt to save the latter, he and Sovereign Chen Xing had ended up sustaining severe wounds, but they had been unable to affect the outcome.

Back then, everyone in the Spirit Tribe had taken his words for real, but not too long later, as human cultivators began entering the Subterranean Galleries, another rumor began

floating around. It was said that Sovereign Chen Ling had colluded with the Hundred Schools of Philosophers in order to get rid of Sovereign Chen Yong so that he could usurp the latter!

Initially, everyone had thought that the rumors floating around were a ploy from mankind in order to spark discord within the Spirit Tribe. However, as Sovereign Chen Ling began to take control of Sovereign Chen Yong's troops and massacre the latter's commanders, they swiftly sensed that something was amiss.

And just two hours ago, the appointed successor of Sovereign Chen Yong had suddenly gathered them together and recounted the happenings to them. Everything fitted together like pieces of a puzzle in an instant, and the realization of the truth filled them with rage.

It was due to the unity of the Three Sovereigns that the Spirit Tribe had instilled fear into mankind for many years. Of course, this unity was built upon a fragile balance of power, but it had served them well for tens of thousands of years. Yet, all of a sudden, one of the Sovereigns had colluded with the humans to turn against one of their own. Even among the lawless Otherworldly Demons, this was an unforgivable act of betrayal!

“Sovereign Chen Ling and Sovereign Chen Xing are incredibly powerful cultivators who ranks among the top of all Ancient Sages alive. What difference does it make even if we have learned of their treachery? There's no way we stand a chance against them!” One of the Otherworldly Demons shook his head and poured a bucket of cold water on the riled-up crowd.

He could understand the feelings of those who were gathered there, but no matter how severely wounded Sovereign Chen Ling and Sovereign Chen Xing were, they were still Blood Reincarnation realm consummation experts. They were not opponents whom a bunch of Great Sages like them could deal with!

The reason that the standing of the Three Sovereigns had remained unmovable over the past tens of thousands of years was not just because of their political acuity and the support of their followers; more than that, it was because they wielded the strength to quell any uprisings!

“I understand that as well, but rest assured! All is not hopeless yet! Since Sovereign Chen Yong is still alive, he’ll surely return to clear out those traitors. All we have to do is move on his command and take back control of the various divisions so as to maintain internal stability!” Liu Yang said.

“Indeed! We might not be able to participate in the battle among the Ancient Sages, but we are still able to minimize the losses of the Spirit Tribe through our actions!”

“If things go wrong, mankind could make use of this temporary lapse in our defenses to destroy us. If so, the Spirit Tribe could be ruined!”

A couple of Otherworldly Demons nodded in agreement.

The battle among the Three Sovereigns was already far beyond what they could interfere with, but they could still calm down the armies and populace through their presence and reduce whatever damage would be incurred to the minimum.

Seeing that he had won the support of those present for now, Liu Yang heaved a sigh of relief. “Since we share the same thoughts, I’ll consider this alliance formed. As it’s an alliance, we’ll require a reliable alliance leader to coordinate all of our movements. Otherwise, if we simply move on our own, it could worsen the chaos!”

“I concur! We’ll need an alliance leader to lead us all. Since Brother Yang is the successor of Sovereign Chen Yong and boasts the highest cultivation of us all, it goes without saying that he should assume the role of the alliance leader!”

“You are the only one who can help us wrestle back control over the situation!”

...

The crowd clasped their fists.

Other than the Ancient Sages, the person who boasted the greatest rallying ability was indubitably Liu Yang. If not for his popularity among the Otherworldly Demons, Sovereign Chen Ling would have killed him right away. It was in consideration of Liu Yang only being a Sempiternal realm consummation whom could still be controlled and the repercussions that would come with the other party's death that Sovereign Chen Ling had chosen to spare him for the time being.

It went without saying that Liu Yang was indeed the most suitable figure to serve as the alliance leader.

“Since everyone has nominated me, I'll humbly take on the position. That being said, there's one thing that I would like to say that I hope everyone can keep in mind.” Rising to his feet, Liu Yang placed a clenched fist on his chest and spoke with unwavering determination. “No matter what we do, it's all for the Spirit Tribe!”

After coming to the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe, there was no way that Liu Yang could continue using his original name. Thus, he had become known as ‘Yang Liu’ instead, and he was the Brother Yang whom everyone spoke of.

Since he did not have much of a reputation on the Master Teacher Continent anyway, it was unlikely that anyone would be able to figure out his true identity just through his reversed name.

What he was doing right now was rallying everyone within his sphere of connections and attempting to wrestle power from Sovereign Chen Ling and the others. This was the mission that his teacher had entrusted him with before entering Sovereign Chen Ling's palace.

“No matter what we do, it's all for the Spirit Tribe!”

The other Otherworldly Demons rose to their feet and chanted passionately.

As expected of the successor whom Sovereign Chen Yong had chosen, he was indeed someone who would become a

powerful supporting pillar of the Spirit Tribe in the near future!

“Since we have sealed the alliance, let’s settle on our future course of action...” Seeing that he had won everyone over, Liu Yang was just about to set future directions for their alliance when he suddenly fell silent.

With a frown on his forehead, he flicked his wrist.

Hu!

A Communication Jade Token materialized in his hand. With just a look, his eyes immediately narrowed menacingly.

“Brother Yang, is something wrong?” one of the Otherworldly Demons asked.

Liu Yang was quiet for a moment before he solemnly said, “Sovereign Chen Ling has erected an altar at the center of the capital, and he’s going around capturing cultivators above Saint 1-dan to tribute them. According to the intelligence that I’ve received, there are already more than thirty thousand casualties...”

“Thirty thousand casualties?”

“That beast...”

Hearing such a piece of news, the crowd could not remain calm any longer. They swiftly rose to their feet in anger.

Even with the superior talents of the Spirit Tribe, the number of them who eventually made it to Sainthood was still rather limited. Yet, Sovereign Chen Ling was using their lives as tributes and had even slaughtered over thirty thousand of them in a single shot... Was he insane?

“Brother Yang, what should we do now?”

Everyone in the room quickly turned their gazes to Liu Yang as they waited impatiently for his directives.

“Judging by his actions over the past few days, I reckon that he’s intending to offer a tribute to the Spirit God in exchange for the recovery of his injuries and strength!” Liu Yang said.

The crowd nodded silently in agreement.

While there was no concrete news about Sovereign Chen Ling's physical condition, the fact that he had disappeared from public view for some time had raised some speculation about his current condition. If there was little hope of him recovering from his injuries through normal means, his best bet would be to turn to the Spirit God for help.

However, obtaining the Spirit God's blessing came with an incredibly steep cost. Not only did it require the tribute of countless artifacts, one also had to make an offering of fresh blood.

The laws of the world dictated that a gain had to come with a loss. Not even the Spirit God was an exception to the rule!

The very fact that Sovereign Chen Ling had gone around slaughtering tens of thousands of people meant that he was preparing for a major ritual.

"What we have to do now is gather our forces and hinder the ritual. Otherwise, this could result in an irrecoverable blow for our Spirit Tribe!" Liu Yang harrumphed.

"Alright!"

The crowd nodded in agreement.

They had to stop Sovereign Chen Ling at all costs. It would be one thing if Sovereign Chen Ling recovered to full strength, but who knew how many more lives would have to be sacrificed in order for that to happen?

Hong long long!

Just as Liu Yang was about to tear down the restrictions around him to stop Sovereign Chen Ling's tribute, the ground intensely shuddered. Vaguely, the sound of rumbling thunder could be heard in the atmosphere.

Liu Yang dashed out of the room and headed to where the sound was coming from. Soon, he saw a massive influx of energy gathering at the very center of the capital, where Sovereign Chen Ling was preparing his tribute.

If an explosion occurred over there, did it mean that the ritual was a failure?

“What happened?” Liu Yang turned to a nearby guard.

With an agitated look on his face, the guard exclaimed in a high-pitched voice, “It’s Sovereign Chen Yong... Sovereign Chen Yong isn’t dead yet... He has returned!”

# 1826 Seed of Acquiescence

“Sovereign Chen Yong is really alive?”

“He has really returned?”

The crowd who had followed Liu Yang over exclaimed in astonishment.

They had been a little doubtful while listening to Liu Yang’s story, but upon hearing those words from the guard, all of the doubts vanished from their minds.

It seemed like Sovereign Chen Yong was indeed alive! To put it in other words, the story that Sovereign Chen Ling had told the world was fake as well... To collude with the humans to murder a fellow Sovereign, this was intolerable!

“Quick, let’s head over!” Liu Yang exclaimed with a hint of joy and relief in his voice.

While others might be unaware of what was going on, he had liaised with Sovereign Chen Yong and his teacher in advance, so he knew what the two of them had prepared.

They had gathered every power that they could rally, and the fact that they were there meant that they had already put together a force that could stand against Sovereign Chen Ling’s faction. A battle for supremacy in the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe was about to begin!

Sou! Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

Together with the alliance that had just been formed, he flew right toward the center of the capital.

It did not take them too long to arrive at their destination. At the area where the ritual was conducted, a towering pedestal that pierced right into the clouds could be seen. The winding stairs around the pedestal were coated in a sinister stream of fresh blood.

Flags that rose along the winding stairs fluttered angrily amid the tempest, and dark clouds loomed eerily over the sky. A tornado had formed at the center of the pedestal, drawing endless energy into its eye.

At that very moment, Sovereign Chen Ling was floating right above the pedestal, allowing the raging air currents to swirl around him.

Beneath the pedestal was a massive congregation of Otherworldly Demons. As if they had lost their consciousness, they kneeled in a daze before the pedestal, unfazed by the furious air currents battering them. All in all, there were tens of thousands of them. It was clear that they were the tributes.

Laid out several steps ahead of them were countless precious artifacts, medicinal herbs, and ores. Zhang Xuan recognized some of those items as the ones that he had appraised back at Sovereign Chen Ling's palace as Wu Tao.

Standing opposite Sovereign Chen Ling was Sovereign Chen Yong. He looked upon the floor filled with corpses and fresh blood with a crack of anger on his face.

“Sovereign Chen Ling, you colluded with the humans to assassinate me; that's an act of disloyalty! You have chosen to massacre so many of your tribesmen for your own welfare; that's an act of gross self-centeredness. A person as vile as you does not deserve to live. Today shall be your death date!”

He had known that Sovereign Chen Ling was an extreme individual, but who could have predicted that he would actually commit something so ridiculous?

It was one thing for the other party to conspire with the humans to assassinate him, but to capture a hundred thousand of their tribesmen and offer them as tributes... there was no bamboo scroll large enough to detail the weight of his crimes!

“You wish to kill me?” Sovereign Chen Ling sneered with a hint of disdain in his eyes.

If it had been the Sovereign Chen Yong of the past, he might have feared him. However, the other party was already on the verge of death, such that even clinging on to life was a

difficulty. Yet, the other party still wanted to kill him? Dream on!

“What about the rest of us then?”

Huhu!

A gust of wind blew across the area, and several more silhouettes appeared in the air. They were Ancient Sage Mo Ling, Ancient Sage Allfire, and the others.

“Mo Ling, you treacherous little scoundrel...” Sovereign Chen Ling narrowed his eyes contemptuously. “Sovereign Chen Yong, you actually want to work with someone like him? You must not be aware that he played an integral role in how you ended up in your current state!”

Were it not for Ancient Sage Mo Ling liaising with the Hundred Schools of Philosophers, there was no way that Sovereign Chen Ling, given his limited prowess, would have managed to lay his hands on Sovereign Chen Yong!

“Do you think that such a news makes any difference to me now?” Sovereign Chen Yong harrumphed coldly.

There was no doubt that he hated Ancient Sage Mo Ling as well for scheming behind his back and putting together the plan for his assassination. However, the positions were very clear at the moment. The greatest enemy that he wished to slay right now was Sovereign Chen Ling, and Ancient Sage Mo Ling was someone who would help him to achieve that.

It would be foolish to turn against someone who was his ally at the moment.

“It doesn’t make any difference?” Sovereign Chen Ling burst into cold laughter. “You sure have fallen, Sovereign Chen Yong!”

He turned his gaze toward the massive beast standing next to Ancient Sage Mo Ling, and his face suddenly turned incredibly ugly. “Ancient Sage Allfire, Sovereign Chen Yong was the one who drove you and your tribesmen away from your homeland. I’m sure that you have a bone to pick with him. Do your pride and dignity really allow you to work with your nemesis? As long as you help me, not only will I

maintain peace with your Beast Tribe as long as I live, I'll even return your homeland to you and compensate for all the wrongdoing of our Spirit Tribe over the years!"

If it was just Ancient Sage Mo Ling, he would have been confident that he could emerge victorious. However, if his opponents included Ancient Sage Allfire as well, that would make things extremely difficult.

At his peak, Ancient Sage Allfire had possessed strength that was even greater than his. He was an expert that commanded a fighting prowess second only to Sovereign Chen Yong himself. If he had to face Ancient Sage Allfire in his current state, chances were that it would end in his death.

"Like I told you before, we of the Beast Tribe have our own pride to uphold! If I was willing to collaborate with you, I would have long agreed to an alliance!" Ancient Sage Allfire waved his claws impassively.

In truth, before Sovereign Chen Yong came to look for him, Sovereign Chen Ling had knocked on his door many times before, only to be driven away.

Hearing those words, Sovereign Chen Ling narrowed his eyes.

He had been thinking that given how severely wounded Sovereign Chen Yong was, the latter would only be able to rally a bunch of weaklings to oppose him. Never could he have expected Ancient Sage Mo Ling to openly betray him and Ancient Sage Allfire to actually submit to the latter...

How in the world did Sovereign Chen Yong manage to do it?

"Sovereign Chen Yong, I concede that you do have some tricks up your sleeves. You are more formidable than I thought. However, if you think that you can kill me just like that, I must say that you are really underestimating me!"

Knowing that there was no point saying anything more, Sovereign Chen Ling exhaled deeply before grandly straightening his posture. "You lot should come out as well!"

Huala!

The next instant, the many Ancient Sages whom Zhang Xuan had met at Sovereign Chen Ling's palace gathered together simultaneously and formed a line. They emanated an incredibly powerful aura that shook the air.

“Something's amiss...”

Taking a look at the crowd, Sovereign Chen Yong and Ancient Sage Mo Ling exchanged glances with one another as their faces turned grim.

The reason that those Ancient Sages had chosen to help Sovereign Chen Ling in the past was because their interests coincided with one another. An alliance built on benefits could not possibly be resilient.

But at that very moment, they were guarding the area resolutely, determined to lay down their lives to protect Sovereign Chen Ling.

When had this group of fellows become so loyal?

“He must have controlled them using some trick,” Zhang Xuan said grimly with a deep frown.

Based on his deep understanding of soul arts, he could tell that even though these Ancient Sages still retained their sentience, their consciousness had been taken over by someone else. They had become something reminiscent of a puppet.

If it was just an alliance of benefits among them, they would have been able to undo their partnership by dropping a mixture of threats and tangible benefits. However, the only things that puppets were capable of doing was following orders. It seemed like they would have to go through quite a bit of trouble in order to get to Sovereign Chen Ling!

Most likely, it would be a bitter fight!

“Is he using his soul to control them like puppets? T-this... How is this possible?” Ancient Sage Mo Ling dared not believe what he was seeing.

He had spent his entire life studying souls, and his comprehension of the subject had already reached an

incredibly profound level. Despite that, it was still impossible for him to forcefully bend the will of an Ancient Sage.

Yet, the person before him was manipulating so many Ancient Sages that were not much weaker than him. It was a sight that Ancient Sage Mo Ling found hard to believe even when he was witnessing it with his own eyes.

Sovereign Chen Yong suddenly recalled something, and his body stiffened. "It's the Seeds of Acquiescence!"

Looks of confusion could be seen reflected in the eyes of Zhang Xuan and the others. "Seeds of Acquiescence?"

It seemed like the Seeds of Acquiescence were objects that even Ancient Sage Allfire, Ancient Sage Mo Ling, and the others were ignorant of.

"They're an artifact left behind by an Immortal's Envoy. They can be planted within one's body, and once they're activated, one must unconditionally obey the commands of the person who planted the seed. Otherwise, if a Seed of Acquiescence explodes, one will die without a shred of doubt!" Sovereign Chen Yong explained.

"Immortal's Envoy?"

"Back then, when my grandfather was killed by Kong shi in a decisive fight, my tribesmen were in an extremely vulnerable position, at risk of being eradicated at any moment. Cornered, they began making offerings to the heavens. After paying a hefty price, they managed to summon an Immortal's Envoy from the upper world to descend to the Master Teacher Continent. In order to control the situation, the Immortal's Envoy planted a Seed of Acquiescence in the body of every single Ancient Sage! My father has one of it in his body as well!" Sovereign Chen Yong explained.

"However, the Immortal's Envoy was eventually taken away by Kong shi, and the effects of the Seed of Acquiescence faded, thus sparing everyone from a calamity. Otherwise, the entire Spirit Tribe could have been wiped out!"

# 1827 Immortal's Envoy

“Taken away by Kong shi?” Zhang Xuan felt as if he was listening to an exaggerated fairy tale.

To be able to plant something within Sovereign Chen Yong's father... The strength of the Immortal's Envoy must have exceeded even Blood Reincarnation! If Kong shi was able to capture an expert of such a caliber, just how powerful had he been?

It was no wonder that he had been able to strike fear so deep into the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe that they dared not move for tens of thousands of years. Given his strength, no one would oppose him.

“Even if they are controlled, as long as we go all out, we should be able to defeat them. It's just that...” Sovereign Chen Yong frowned in worry.

“Are you worrying about the origin of the Seeds of Acquiescence?” Zhang Xuan asked.

The Seeds of Acquiescence came with the Immortal's Envoy, and they should have disappeared many years ago. There should not have been any even under the Three Sovereigns' control. Yet, for Sovereign Chen Ling to actually bring them out and even use them at that very moment... Where in the world did he get them from?

What did this signify?

“That's right! The appearance of the Seeds of Acquiescence likely means that... an Immortal's Envoy will appear as well. That's a real Ancient Sage 4-dan expert, capable of shattering dimensions and standing in the midst of a void unharmed. If Sovereign Chen Ling truly has the help of someone of that caliber, we will be completely helpless no matter how many people we have on our side!” Sovereign Chen Yong said.

It might only have been a realm of difference between Ancient Sage 4-dan and Ancient Sage 3-dan, but there was a vast

difference in their levels of existence.

One was capable of shattering space and entering a higher dimension whereas the other was doomed to remain there for life. Just from this alone, the difference in their strengths were apparent.

For tens of thousands of years, while the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe and mankind had not spawned too many Ancient Sages, there should have been several thousand of them. The strongest among them only boasted strength similar to his, Blood Reincarnation realm consummation, and the only ones who had reached 4-dan were Kong shi and Vicious.

As for the others, no matter how hard they struggled, they were simply unable to overcome that final bottleneck.

If even a single Immortal's Envoy appeared at that moment, putting aside exacting vengeance, it was likely that they would all lose their lives there!

At such a level, no number of people would be able to make up for the difference in strength!

"Calm down! Our world has its own rules. An Immortal's Envoy cannot descend to our world that easily. As long as we move quickly and slay Sovereign Chen Ling, there will be nothing for us to worry about!" Ancient Sage Allfire harrumphed coldly.

He was also fearful of Immortal Envoys, but... the other party had not appeared yet, right?

There was no point worrying over what that had not happened. Once Sovereign Chen Ling was dead, what else could he possibly pull on them?

"You're right!" Sovereign Chen Yong nodded solemnly.

Raising his hand, he was just about to instruct everyone to make a move together when Sovereign Chen Ling suddenly turned his gaze over with a smile on his face.

He could tell that they had been discussing something earlier, but he had chosen to leave them be, not interfering at all. It

was either that he was confident of victory or that this was another ploy of his to plant a seed of fear in their hearts.

“Sovereign Chen Yong, do you know why you landed in the current state you are in?” Sovereign Chen Ling asked.

Those words provoked a frown on Sovereign Chen Yong’s forehead.

“It’s very simple, actually. You just aren’t as vicious as me. I admit that I am inferior to you in terms of strength and wits, but I surpass you in terms of callousness. I can sacrifice the lives of countless tribesmen in order to recover from my injuries. I am willing to collude with the humans to have you killed. In fact, I would willingly cast aside my life and soul and serve another just to bring about your death! You don’t have the decisiveness I have to do all that is necessary, and that’s why you failed to achieve anything significant during your reign!” Sovereign Chen Ling sneered.

“Cast aside your life and soul? What do you mean by that?” Sovereign Chen Yong’s eyebrows shot up in astonishment.

He sharply caught onto the anomaly in Sovereign Chen Ling’s words. He knew of the former two incidents, colluding with the humans and sacrificing the lives of countless tribesmen, but he had not heard about Sovereign Chen Ling offering his life and soul to serve another!

What did all of that mean?

“That’s none of your business. All you have to know is that all heroes have a streak of viciousness in them. If one fusses over the small details, one will never come to be anything great. You lack my callousness, and that’s why this battle will definitely end in my victory!” Sovereign Chen Ling laughed heartily before waving his hand imposingly. “Kill them all!”

“Yes!”

Hula!

Hearing the command, all of the Ancient Sages immediately dashed forward to attack Zhang Xuan and the others.

At the same time, Sovereign Chen Ling pressed his fingers downward, and a tremendous strength poured forth from his fingers. In that instant, it felt like the world had approached doomsday.

Peng peng peng peng!

The heads of the kneeling Saint cultivators around the pedestal suddenly burst apart, causing fresh blood to scatter all around the area before dripping down on the stairs. Just like that, the pedestal was dyed with a deeper layer of crimson.

“You...”

Not expecting the other party to be so vicious as to kill so many more of his tribesmen, Sovereign Chen Yong was on the verge of losing his mind. His eyes reddened in fury as he charged straight toward Sovereign Chen Ling, wanting to rip him apart.

Despite the severity of his injuries, he could not have cared less at the moment.

There was only one thought that dominated his heart—either Sovereign Chen Ling would die that day, or he would drag the other party together to hell with him!

Otherwise, the Spirit Tribe would only gradually fall apart under the other party’s leadership, possibly ending in utter destruction.

“Your opponent is me!”

Hula!

However, before Sovereign Chen Yong could make a move, an Ancient Sage suddenly appeared before him. With a long staff in his hand, the Ancient Sage swung his weapon right toward Sovereign Chen Yong’s face.

It was one of the Ancient Sages who was controlled by a Seed of Acquiescence.

Even though this Ancient Sage had only barely reached the Blood Reincarnation realm, given Sovereign Chen Yong’s current physical state, even if he used his full strength, it would be difficult for him to win against the other party.

The staff surged through the air nimbly, leaving many after-shadows in its wake. Reminiscent of a curtain being raised with a stick, the sheer strength behind the movements of the staff caused spatial ripples to collapse toward Sovereign Chen Yong, trapping the latter in place.

Under the Ancient Sage's relentless offense, Sovereign Chen Yong's face turned paler and paler by the second, and even his breathing became slightly ragged.

Had it been in the past, he would have been able to defeat many of such opponents with a wave of his hand. However, all he could do at the current moment was take evasive measures, causing him to completely fall into the other party's flow. Just thinking about how powerless he was at the moment left him deeply stifled.

"Your Majesty, we're here to help you!"

At that moment, a loud bellow sounded from below. Glancing downward, Sovereign Chen Yong saw Liu Yang and the others arriving with countless Otherworldly Demon soldiers.

Boom!

Synergizing their strengths together, their combined might pierced right into the sky and struck the staff of the Ancient Sage, causing it to break apart in the middle.

There was a vast difference between the strength of an Ancient Sage and Great Sage. Under normal circumstances, there was no way that they could even battle with one another; it would be a completely one-sided slaughter.

However, Liu Yang and the others had cleverly put the strength of the ten thousand of them together via a collaborative formation, thus temporarily producing a combined might that could match even a Blood Reincarnation realm Ancient Sage.

If one could put the strength of the masses to good use, even an army of ants could bite an elephant to death! A well-organized army would be able to instill fear even in a Blood Reincarnation realm Ancient Sage!

Of course, power that could only be amassed through a collaborative formation was bound to have many limitations. As long as a Blood Reincarnation realm Ancient Sage was given sufficient time to move around, they would eventually find an opening in the collaborative formation to exploit and defeat the entire army.

“You are courting death!”

Seeing how his weapon had been destroyed by a bunch of Great Sage and Saint cultivators, the Ancient Sage narrowed his eyes in fury. With a deafening roar, he raised his palm and thrust it toward Liu Yang and the others.

As long as the attack struck its target, there was no doubt that Liu Yang and the others around him would be goners!

“Humph!”

But just as the attack was about to strike Liu Yang, a cold harrumph sounded in the air. Following which, a spear shot out of seemingly nowhere.

Puhe!

The tip of the spear impaled the Ancient Sage’s hand, causing fresh blood to spill down.

Following which... just as the Ancient Sage thought that the sudden assailant would press on with his attack and kill him, he saw the other party taking out a jade bottle and carefully collecting the blood that he had spilled.

There was a hint of excitement on the other party’s face as the other party collected his blood droplets with an earnest look on his face.

“...” The Ancient Sage.

# 1828 Harvesting Blood

To Zhang Xuan, it mattered not how many Blood Reincarnation realm Ancient Sages of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe died. What he valued more was their fresh blood.

If he could gather sufficient Ancient Sage blood, it would become easier for him to push for a breakthrough to Ancient Sage.

As such, after piercing the enemy's palm with his spear, he delightedly began harvesting the other party's blood.

“You're asking to be slaughtered!”

On the other hand, the Otherworldly Demon Ancient sage was on the brink of succumbing to lunacy.

Even though he was bound to obey Sovereign Chen Ling's orders due to the Seed of Acquiescence, he still retained some part of his consciousness. It was already a huge insult for him, a Blood Reincarnation realm expert and one of the few Lords of the Spirit Tribe, to be wounded by a Great Sage, but the other party was even treating him like livestock, choosing to harvest his blood instead of pushing on with his attack or fleeing altogether.

This was a flagrant act of humiliation!

Gritting his teeth furiously, the Ancient Sage turned his attention away from Sovereign Chen Yong, Liu Yang, and the others, and he smashed his other palm right down upon Zhang Xuan.

No matter what, he was determined to strike down this arrogant fellow who dared belittle him!

The strength of a Blood Reincarnation realm Ancient Sage was immense, as though countless towering tsunamis pouring forth from the ocean. In the peak of his rage, the sheer might of his offense was greater than ever.

Puhe!

However, before the immense might could crush the young man beneath its prowess, a spear whistled through the air and impaled the attacking palm as well.

Padah! Padah!

Fresh blood gushed out of the impaled spear.

The Ancient Sage yelped in pain as he watched the young man rushing over to carefully collect his fresh blood with a jade bottle in hand. It was almost as if his blood was a commodity so precious that even a droplet lost would be a huge loss to the world.

“ ... ”

With lips quivering in fury, the Ancient Sage drove his zhenqi to seal his veins. Even though his injuries were glaring, no more blood sputtered out of them anymore.

At his cultivation realm, he was more than capable of controlling his physical functions to a precise degree.

“Hmm?”

Seeing that the flow of fresh blood had come to a halt, the young man raised his head to look at the Ancient Sage with an extremely displeased look on his face.

“Brat, how dare you harvest my fresh blood! I swear I shall send you through the gates of the netherworld...” The Ancient Sage glared at the young man savagely as he bellowed vicious words. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

Alas, before he could finish his piece, the displeased young man raised his hand, and the spear shot forth once more.

Seeing the spear charge straight toward him, the Ancient Sage immediately moved to evade the attack. But all of a sudden, there was a momentary spatial disorientation, and before he knew it, the spear was already plunged right into his thigh.

Puhe!

Yet another massive hole was punctured into the Ancient Sage.

The Ancient Sage was taken aback. When he finally came to, the young man was already delightfully hopping around with his jade bottle in hand, collecting droplet after droplet of his blood.

“Screw this sh\*t...”

To be honest, the Ancient Sage was only a step away from bursting into tears.

It was at that very instant that he realized that the other party could kill him at any moment as long as the other party willed it. However, it was just that the other party chose not to make a move, treating him as a sample to harvest blood instead.

Unable to take it any longer, the Ancient Sage decisively turned tail and fled.

Puhe!

A bloodied hole appeared on his bottom as fresh blood continued pouring out.

After filling the first jade bottle, Zhang Xuan proceeded on to fill a second. Just like that, it did not take too long for him to collect more than ten bottles. Each time the Ancient Sage attempted to seal his wound, a spear would shoot forth to create another hole, causing blood to pour forth once more.

It was almost as if the Ancient Sage was a leaking water pipe that simply could not be fixed!

Eventually, it came a point where the Ancient Sage resigned himself to his fate. He gave up on fleeing and chose to sit down on the spot instead, not moving in the least. His eyes gazed dazedly in front of him, and it looked almost as if he had lost his soul. Blood sputtered out from the dozens of holes all over his body, splattering all around the area.

Since any attempt to flee would just cause even more pain to him, he might as well accept his fate.

Soon enough, due to losing too much blood, the Ancient Sage collapsed, plummeting from the sky. He was probably the first

Ancient Sage who was so pitiful as to die as a result of losing too much blood.

After slaying the first Ancient Sage, Zhang Xuan turned his gaze to the other battles occurring around him.

Fortunately, Ancient Sage Allfire, Ancient Sage Mo Ling, and the other Ancient Sages were also standing their ground. Their tight collaboration produced a formidable force that even Sovereign Chen Yong in his peak would have had to think carefully about facing.

However, the Ancient Sages who were controlled by the Seeds of Acquiescence fought desperately, and they had many aces up their sleeves. As a result, it was still a close fight, and it was hard to tell who would emerge victorious.

Cultivators at the level of Ancient Sages were incredibly difficult to kill. Battles among Ancient Sages could easily last for many days. More often than not, the loser would end up getting away through using some hidden ace, and the winner would walk out of the battle with grievous injuries.

For this reason, Ancient Sages, be it for mankind or the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe, were regarded as last resorts. They were mostly used for the purpose of deterrence, and rarely would they get chances to fight.

While an intense battle was underway, Sovereign Chen Ling continued on with the ritual around him. He raised his hands, and all of the artifacts on the stairs around the pedestal simultaneously burst into flames, forming a blazing inferno.

An incredible surge of energy descended from the high heavens and flowed into his acupoints, filling his meridians with power.

With this inflow of energy, Sovereign Chen Ling's wounds began healing at a visible rate. In fact, he seemed to be getting even stronger than before.

"This is bad. We have to stop him! If Sovereign Chen Ling recovers from his wounds, it will make things much trickier for us!" Zhang Xuan frowned.

When they were at their peak, it was true that Sovereign Chen Ling had been weaker than Sovereign Chen Yong, but there was no denying that he was one of the strongest experts of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe. Otherwise, he would not have been able to govern large swathes of land in the otherworldly battlefield and tower above ordinary Ancient Sages.

The current Dragonbone Divine Spear could still defeat him easily in his severely wounded state, but once he made a full recovery, it would not be that easy to kill him.

“Break!”

Knowing that he had to act, Zhang Xuan thrust the Dragonbone Divine Spear straight in the direction of Sovereign Chen Ling. The pitch-black spear tore through the surrounding space in order to impale the latter’s head, a clear attempt to land a fatal blow to end the battle once and for all.

Seeing Zhang Xuan’s actions, Sovereign Chen Yong narrowed his eyes and cried in horror, “Young Master, don’t!”

However, it was already too late. Before the spear could reach Sovereign Chen Ling, an incredible force descended from the dark hole in the sky and collided with Zhang Xuan’s spear. The next instant, Zhang Xuan felt as if the skin between his fingers was being ripped apart, and fresh blood flowed down from his fingers.

At the same time, the Dragonbone Divine Spear was jolted out off his hand.

Weng!

It pierced into the ground, creating a massive crater beneath it.

In the crucial moment, Zhang Xuan activated his bloodline ability and hurriedly retreated, allowing him to dodge the descending force by a hair’s breath. He quickly leaped down to the crater to retrieve the Dragonbone Divine Spear before asking Sovereign Chen Yong doubtfully, “What happened?”

It was a brief collision, but there were slight cracks that could be seen on the body of the Dragonbone Divine Spear. It was clear that it had sustained severe injuries in that short encounter.

Fortunately, for weapons of such tier, as long as they were fed sufficient Ancient Sage blood, they should make a recovery soon enough.

“Young Master, the being connected on the other side of the ritual is a god from the other world. Your act of assaulting Sovereign Chen Ling is viewed as an act of disrespect toward the god, so the god attempted to inflict heavenly retribution upon you!” Sovereign Chen Yong quickly replied.

“An act of disrespect toward the god?” Zhang Xuan widened his eyes in astonishment.

It was no wonder that the powerful Dragonbone Divine Spear had been jolted away in an instant. Who could have thought that there was such a thing?

But thinking about it again, it kind of made sense to him.

The ritual conducted was a ceremony to make offerings to the gods. Depending on the value of the offerings, the god would reward the individual conducting the ritual. At this very moment of the ritual, both worlds were connected together with a small gateway, allowing the power of the gods to seep into their world. To wreak havoc at that moment was no different from undermining the dignity of the god, so naturally, one would have to be punished due to that.

That explained why no one had not gone straight for Sovereign Chen Ling despite the threat that the latter posed. It turned out that there was such a reason behind it.

“But if we don’t stop him, the ritual will be completed, and he will fully recover from his injuries. If things go badly, we might all lose our lives here!” Zhang Xuan said with a frown.

There was no doubt that it was an act of utter foolishness to test the patience of a god, but if they left the ritual be, Sovereign Chen Ling would make a full recovery. That could place them in a dangerous position.

# 1829 A Soul Breakthrough to Ancient Sage 1

“I understand that, but other than waiting, there’s nothing we can do given the current situation!” Sovereign Chen Yong replied helplessly as he pushed an incoming Ancient Sage away with a powerful thrust of his two palms.

He wanted to kill that fellow as well, but once the ritual had started, there was no stopping it. Otherwise, that would be viewed as an act of undermining the god, and it could incur the rage of the divinity.

With their strength combined, they might still stand a chance against the recovered Sovereign Chen Ling. However, against a god, the only possible fate that lay before them was death.

“All we can do for now is kill all of these Ancient Sages or render them powerless. That way, even if Sovereign Chen Ling does make a full recovery, he will be completely alone. We will stand a greater chance at victory then,” Sovereign Chen Yong said.

“I understand.” Zhang Xuan nodded.

Indeed. This was the best that they could do at the moment.

As long as Sovereign Chen Ling did not achieve a breakthrough from the Blood Reincarnation realm after the ritual, with the combined prowess of he, Ancient Sage Allfire, Ancient Sage Mo Ling, and the Dragonbone Divine Spear, they might still stand a good chance at victory.

Hula!

While the two of them were chatting, an Otherworldly Demon Ancient Sage charged toward Zhang Xuan.

The weapon that this Ancient Sage wielded was a for visiting.

“Hehehe!”

Seeing that his strategy worked, the Otherworldly Demon Ancient Sage raised the Judge's Pen in his hand and flicked it once more.

“Guild leader!”

Seeing that Zhang Xuan was in a terrible position, Ancient Sage Mo Ling attempted to rush over to offer his support. However, the next instant, attacks suddenly rained down on him one after another, pinning him firmly in place. It seemed like the Ancient Sage that he was facing had sensed his intentions to back up his comrade, so the other party had decisively launched a series of powerful attacks to hold him down.

The same was happening to Sovereign Chen Yong and the others.

They had all seen how Zhang Xuan had managed to kill their comrade with the spear in his hand, and they knew how frightening an opponent he was. Thus, they had decided to coordinate with one another to end his life.

“Die!”

Knowing his allies would not be able to hold Sovereign Chen Yong and the others down for too long, the Ancient Sage sneered coldly as he raised his palm to crush Zhang Xuan's skull.

This was a strike that harnessed the strength to utterly crush one's body and soul. Even if Zhang Xuan had assimilated the blood of a Blood Reincarnation realm Ancient Sage, there was little hope that he would survive the blow.

“Young Master!”

“Guild leader!”

“Master!”

The three Ancient Sages narrowed their eyes in horror. They wanted to charge forward to save him, but they found themselves utterly helpless in the situation.

Just as they thought that Zhang Xuan would really meet his end, a smile suddenly crept onto the lips of the young man.

Following which, the spear in his grasp suddenly surged forward.

Puhe!

Before anyone could process what was going on, the Ancient Sage's heart had already been impaled by the Dragonbone Divine Spear. The devastating might that he had gathered in his palm dissipated without causing the slightest damage.

Hula!

Fresh blood spluttered here and there.

Whipping out the jade bottles in his storage ring, Zhang Xuan hurriedly collected whatever blood was scattered around.

“...”

Everyone was stunned. Even the Otherworldly Demon tasked with stopping Zhang Xuan was dumbstruck.

It was through the Dragonbone Divine Spear that the Great Sage young man wielded the strength to stand against Blood Reincarnation realm experts like them. Under normal circumstances, he should have been a goner for allowing a Blood Reincarnation realm expert to get into such close proximity to him. Yet, how did the spear end up piercing through the other party's body?

Was the earlier vertigo feigned?

“That was a close one...”

Meanwhile, Zhang Xuan heaved a sigh of relief as he quickly harvested the fresh blood of the slain Ancient Sage.

He had truly been caught off guard by the other party's soul attack, but due to the Stone of Divine Crusade that he had obtained from the Temple of Confucius, he had managed to recover swiftly.

He had bestowed the Seal of Souls to Lu Chong, but he had chosen to keep the Stone of Divine Crusade with him.

The Stone of Divine Crusade had the ability to devour souls and transform them into pure soul energy to nourish one's soul. Typically speaking, given the prowess of the Ancient

Sage's soul attack, he would indeed have been unable to recover in time. However, through absorbing the soul energy using the Stone of Divine Crusade, he had been able to swiftly calm his jolted soul.

After killing the Ancient Sage and harvesting his blood, Zhang Xuan took the Judge's Pen and threw it into his storage ring before whipping out the Stone of Divine Crusade with a flick of his wrist.

Even without the Stone of Divine Crusade, he would have been fine as he still had Vicious serving as his final trump card. Nevertheless, it was still best for him to retain Vicious till he was truly needed.

Lowering his head to look at the Stone of Divine Crusade, he noticed that there was a slight difference with the artifact. It was emanating a faint blue light.

Activating the Eye of Insight, Zhang Xuan swiftly saw innumerable powerful auras drifting within the Stone of Divine Crusades. When he placed his palm on it, he immediately felt a surge of warmth flowing into his soul, as if he had stepped into a hot spring.

"This is concentrated soul energy?" Zhang Xuan narrowed his eyes.

As a soul oracle, he could tell that what was harnessed within the Stone of Divine Crusade was pure soul energy. Through absorbing this soul energy, one would be able to nourish and enhance one's soul.

He clearly remembered that there had been hardly anything left in the Stone of Divine Crusade the last time he had left it there. Why would there suddenly be such a huge amount of soul energy within it?

"Could it be..."

A thought suddenly surfaced in Zhang Xuan's mind. He quickly took a closer look around the Stone of Divine Crusade, and he noticed many thin lines slowly gathering around it.

"The souls of the 100,000 Saint cultivators that Sovereign Chen Ling sacrificed have all been devoured by the Stone of

Divine Crusade...”

How could Zhang Xuan still remain oblivious to what was going on after seeing that?

Just like the Seal of Souls, the Stone of Divine Crusade had the ability to devour souls and refine them into concentrated soul energy. Such an ability was deemed abominable by orthodox cultivators, so it had been banned on the Master Teacher Continent. It was also partly due to this that soul oracles were deeply hated and feared by the populace.

As a master teacher, Zhang Xuan would not resort to such a technique to raise his cultivation, but who could have known that after Sovereign Chen Ling killed so many of their tribesmen, their souls would inexplicably be consumed by the Stone of Divine Crusade?

With so much soul energy, I should be able to push for a breakthrough to Ancient Sage... Zhang Xuan thought in agitation.

The idea of using the Stone of Divine Crusade to devour the souls of others was abominable to him, but what was done was done. It happened that he was in dire need of strength, and the concentrated soul energy within the Stone of Divine Crusade was what he needed.

His soul cultivation had long reached Sempiternal realm consummation, and with so much soul energy as sustenance, he could try pushing for a breakthrough to the level that countless dreamed of reaching!

“Let me give it a try!”

Taking in a deep breath, Zhang Xuan instructed the Dragonbone Divine Spear and Vicious to protect his body while he drew his soul out of his glabella.

Tzzzzz!

As soon as his soul came into contact with the Stone of Divine Crusade, the nourishing soul energy within the latter immediately poured into his soul. In an instant, his stagnated soul cultivation began surging forth.

“Something’s wrong... I haven’t obtained the soul cultivation technique required for me to achieve a breakthrough to Ancient Sage yet!”

Sensing his soul growing larger and larger, to the point that it seemed as if it would pop at any moment, Zhang Xuan’s lips twitched in horror.

Too excited over the notion of a breakthrough, he had forgotten that the only Ancient Sage breakthrough methods that he knew of were for zhenqi cultivation. As for those relating to soul cultivation, he had not even read a single book at all!

He had no idea what steps one had to take in order to achieve a breakthrough and what one would experience in the process!

Zhang Xuan immediately turned to Ancient Sage Mo Ling and asked, “Ancient Sage Mo Ling, do you have any manuals or insights relating to soul oracles achieving a breakthrough to Ancient Sage? Pass me everything you’ve got!” “It’s one of the more unorthodox weapons. It’s a hidden weapon shaped similar to a metal pen, thus the name.

# 1830 A Soul Breakthrough to Ancient Sage 2

“Manuals or insights relating to soul oracles achieving a breakthrough to Ancient Sage?” Hearing those words, Ancient Sage Mo Ling nearly plummeted from the sky.

Aren't you daring!

Without referring to any insights or cultivation techniques, you actually attempted a breakthrough just like that...

Do you think Ancient Sage is just like any cultivation stage where you can easily achieve a breakthrough?

Rendered speechless, Ancient Sage Mo Ling flicked his wrist, took out a pile of books, and flicked them in Zhang Xuan's direction. “Here!”

The soul oracles that had moved to the otherworldly battlefield retained their full heritage, and Ancient Sage Mo Ling himself was an Ancient Sage expert. Naturally, he had plenty of books relating to that topic.

Zhang Xuan formed a massive hand with his soul energy to grasp all of the books before scanning through them swiftly with his eyes. Endless streams of information flowed into his mind and became his own knowledge.

But soon, he shook his head.

Those books did contain the experiences and breakthrough methods of past soul oracles, but they were not of much use to him.

As one who was cultivating the Heaven's Path Soul Art, the path that he had taken was very different from that of the other soul oracles. If he attempted a breakthrough using the conventional methods used by other soul oracles, his cultivation might go berserk.

It looks like I can only depend on myself. Since the first soul oracle was able to find a way by himself to achieve a breakthrough to Ancient Sage, I should be able to pave a way out myself! Zhang Xuan thought as he swiftly threw aside everything that he had read and went into a state of inner calm.

Not everything required the experiences and wisdom of the predecessors to point out a way. Eventually, one had to learn to pave one's own way forward as well.

The soul energy in the Stone of Divine Crusade poured into his soul like a rapid tide, nourishing it. However, too much of anything was a bad thing, and Zhang Xuan's consciousness was starting to blur as a result of the overwhelming influx of energy.

The souls of the 100,000 Saint cultivators formed a congregation of energy so great that it even exceeded the might of Blood Reincarnation realm experts. Even though Zhang Xuan's soul had been tempered by lightning and the Empyrean Heavenly Flame, he still found himself pushed to a corner.

Slowly, hallucinations began appearing right before his eyes.

While the Stone of Divine Crusade was able to wipe away the consciousness within souls and convert them into pure soul energy, it was unable to remove the aura of resentment that lingered within the souls!

Those 100,000 Saint cultivators had cultivated diligently for many years, but their lives came to an abrupt halt just because Sovereign Chen Ling needed some tributes to heal his injuries. It was no wonder that each of those Otherworldly Demons was overflowing with indignation and resentment.

One or two of these souls would not count for much, but when the resentment of over 100,000 souls was combined, the force produced was definitely something that one should stay away from.

“Clarity in the heart, emptiness in the mind!”

Under the influx of resentment, Zhang Xuan felt as if his will was swiftly being corroded. All that was left of him was a hint

of clarity that flowed in his consciousness, guarding everything that he stood for.

Having been through the mountain of books and ocean of learning, he had browsed through countless books and assimilated much knowledge. As such, his soul was much 'denser' than that of most 9-star master teachers and even some of the Ancient Sages. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

His mind was slowly blurring out, but he was still able to firmly hold onto his core.

Countless memories of slaughter and bloodshed flashed through his mind, and it felt as if he was living countless lives simultaneously. No matter how vivid the experiences were, he was still able to remember the fact that he was a master teacher. He could lose his life, but there were simply some principles and values that he had to guard at any cost.

It was also the same for many experts on the Master Teacher Continent.

Back then, after defeating Vicious, Kong shi had possessed the power and means to destroy the entire Otherworldly Demonic Tribe. However, he did not choose to do so.

That was because eradicating an entire race was not something that he believed in. He persisted in his faith that enlightenment was the key to progress, and he sought to uphold that belief.

Zhang Xuan had his own beliefs that he was determined to uphold as well.

However, unlike Kong shi, he was not that much of an idealist. It was not to say that he could not relate to Kong shi's vision, but even if he chose to pursue the same vision one day, it had to be built on the foundation that the safety of those whom he sought to protect was guaranteed.

Thus, aside from investigating Luo Ruoxin's whereabouts, his main aim at the otherworldly battlefield was to resolve the threat of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe once and for all.

Of course, he would prioritize peaceful means if he felt that they were feasible, but ultimately, he felt that it would be too dangerous for mankind if the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe was left to do as it pleased.

“My spirit shall be indestructible, and my will shall live on for an eternity... No matter how far I go, I’ll never forget my roots. This is the real me!”

Everything that Zhang Xuan had experienced in the past year since he had arrived at the Master Teacher Continent flashed through his mind.

Boom!

The indestructible spirit borne within him gradually seemed to warp into a golden droplet, which swiftly revolved around the accumulating soul energy. Soon enough, the golden droplet built up enough momentum to create a vortex around his soul, and it was growing larger and larger by the moment.

Drip! Drip!

The vortex swiftly compressed the soul energy so tightly together that a liquid droplet was squeezed out of the vortex. A second droplet was soon produced, and a third one... It did not take long for droplets to accumulate and flow through his body, nourishing him.

The liquefying of the soul—this is a mark of a breakthrough to Ancient Sage... Zhang Xuan’s eyes lit up.

He knew that he was going to successfully achieve a breakthrough to Ancient Sage soon.

Due to the intangible and formless nature of souls, it was usually impossible for those who were non-soul oracles and did not possess the Eye of Insight to see them unless one used their Spiritual Perception.

However, the liquefying of Zhang Xuan’s soul meant that his soul was losing its intangible nature, taking on the form of a moving fluid.

Of course, this was not liquefying in the truest sense. Rather, it meant that the purity of his soul energy had reached another

level, resulting in a qualitative change in its nature.

The liquid-like form of his soul energy would allow him to exert his might more effectively and powerfully.

Faster!

Feeling his soul, which had been on the verge of exploding just a moment ago, calming down, he hastened the transformation process.

Keeping a close eye on Zhang Xuan's movements, Ancient Sage Mo Ling's eyelids twitched a little. "This..."

He recognized the Stone of Divine Crusade in Zhang Xuan's hands, and he could sense the immense, pulsating soul energy harnessed within it. Even he felt deeply tempted by the power contained within it.

Even as a Blood Reincarnation realm soul oracle, he knew that he would be unable to consume that much power at once. Most likely, he would explode before he could even swallow a tenth of it! Yet, the other party dared to tap into such an overwhelming source of energy just for a breakthrough from Sempiternal realm consummation to Ancient Sage.

How in the world could anyone survive that?

Ancient Sage Mo Ling had thought that Zhang Xuan would stop soon enough, but who would have thought that he would simply continue to absorb more and more soul energy? In less than three minutes, almost half of the soul energy created by the 100,000 souls sacrificed by Sovereign Chen Ling had been devoured.

At that moment, his soul had also reached a size of more than a hundred meters tall, making him appear to be a towering giant.

"Liquefy everything and achieve a breakthrough!"

In Ancient Sage Mo Ling's moment of shock, the massive soul suddenly bellowed furiously, and its towering figure began to shrink at an incredible rate.

At the same time, a painting unrolled itself in the air. From within the painting, an ancient aura could be felt pouring out.

This ancient aura contained a quality that had vanished countless years ago from the Master Teacher Continent.

Aeon of Ancient Sage!

Under the influx of this aura, Zhang Xuan's soul swiftly grew purer, hastening the liquefying process of his soul.

In less than ten minutes, his soul had returned to his own size. However, the sheer concentration of soul energy packed in his soul felt as if he could tear apart space with just a simple wave of his hand. His entire soul emanated an air of history, reminiscent of an immortal.

“Ancient Sage... The guild leader's soul cultivation has reached Ancient Sage!” Seeing this transformation, Ancient Sage Mo Ling cried in agitation as his entire body trembled.

While the breakthrough method used by Zhang Xuan was different from anything that he had ever seen, the fact that his soul could contain so much power and harness such an aura meant that he had already overcome the bottleneck that hindered him and successfully arrived at a brand new realm.

While the soul oracles at the otherworldly battlefield had preserved their lineage, they simply numbered too few. There were too few people whom they could pass on their arts to!

In fact, Ancient Sage Mo Ling was the only Ancient Sage that the Soul Oracle Guild had at the moment, such that it was no exaggeration to say that he was the one propping up the entire guild!

However, the breakthrough of the guild leader signified a new beginning for the Soul Oracle Guild. Under the leadership of the guild leader, he believed that it was only a matter of time before the Soul Oracle Guild rose to greatness once more!

Hong long long!

Along with the pulsations of Zhang Xuan's soul energy, the sky above began to ripple. Huge swathes of ominous clouds were quickly gathering around, and countless streaks of lightning and balls of flames raged within them. A devastating force was swiftly building up above.

The Ancient Sage Ordeal had arrived!

# 1831 Ordeal of Lightning Armamen

Zhang Xuan looked up into the sky and calmly remarked, "It's even more powerful than the Aureate Body Ordeal."

Having weathered the many different woes of life, his state of mind had become calmer than ever. Even though a frightening force was building up above him, threatening to crush him, it did not faze him at all.

"Let me give this a try..."

A glint flashed across Zhang Xuan's eyes as a thought suddenly came to his mind. He swiftly brought his soul back into his physical body.

"What's the guild leader planning to do?"

Seeing such a sight, Ancient Sage Mo Ling felt as if his brain was going to explode.

The only thing that had achieved a breakthrough to Ancient Sage was Zhang Xuan's soul; his physical body was still only at Sempiternal realm consummation! The act of returning his soul back to his physical body meant that he was implicating his physical body in the cultivation ordeal, and this was as good as an act of suicide!

"Is he planning to use the stress from the Ancient Sage Ordeal to temper his physical body and zhenqi so as to achieve a breakthrough to Ancient Sage for those two as well?"

Sovereign Chen Yong narrowed his eyes contemplatively.

The reason for him possessing the tremendous strength that he did later in his life was because he had pushed himself past his limits back when he was younger. It was through such tenacity that he had eventually risen to become the strongest expert of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe.

However, compared to the Young Master, it seemed like his tenacity really came nowhere close!

Given the Young Master's talent, it was only a matter of time before he achieved a breakthrough to Ancient Sage, so there was no need for him to put himself at risk at all. Yet, the Young Master still chose to resort to such extreme means to temper himself and hasten his growth!

To challenge the Ancient Sage Ordeal with a Sempiternal realm consummation physical body and zhenqi was an extremely dangerous act. The slightest mistake could lead to one's death, such that it could be said that the risk was not worth taking at all.

This was really too insane!

Zhang Xuan's actions had successfully caught the attention of everyone present, such that they even subconsciously halted their fights to see what was going on.

Hong long!

As soon as Zhang Xuan's soul returned to his physical body, his zhenqi billowed, and his physical body trembled. Yet another two swathes of ominous clouds were conjured on the spot, and they swiftly merged together with the others.

Heavenly flames and lightning streaks began crashing down furiously upon Zhang Xuan, devouring his entire silhouette.

The flames were black in color, indicating that they were Empyrean Heavenly Flames. Furthermore, they harnessed even greater destructive prowess than what he had faced back when he was challenging the Aureate Body Ordeal. Even Ancient Sage artifacts would swiftly melt before them!

“Aeon of Ancient Sage!”

With a bellow from Zhang Xuan, the painting scroll opened up once more, and Aeon of Ancient Sage swiftly surged into Zhang Xuan's body.

In an instant, it felt as if someone had ignited every droplet of his blood, causing immense energy to emanate from his body to ward off the surrounding heat.

Kacha! Kacha!

Nevertheless, it did not take long before his skin and muscles began to char. Bloodied cracks swiftly crept across his body.

Even though Zhang Xuan was more powerful than normal cultivators, his physical body and zhenqi were only at Sempiternal realm consummation. There was no way that they could withstand such a powerful Ancient Sage Ordeal.

If not for his Heaven's Path zhenqi continuously healing his body over and over again, he would have shattered into innumerable pieces already!

Is it really impossible for me? Zhang Xuan thought as he gritted his teeth to bear with the excruciating pain consuming his body.

He knew that his Ancient Sage Ordeal would be extraordinarily powerful, and just as Sovereign Chen Yong had thought, the reason that he had chosen to return his soul to his physical body was to utilize the pressure from the cultivation ordeal to push for a breakthrough.

As dangerous as such an act would be, he felt that it was also a rare impetus that he could make use of to achieve more breakthroughs. After all, it was not every day that one would encounter such a powerful force.

In the eyes of others, he was someone who faced no bottlenecks in his cultivation, and they felt that it was only a matter of time before he achieved a breakthrough to Ancient Sage.

If nothing went wrong, he would surely achieve a breakthrough within the next hundred years.

Achieving a breakthrough to Ancient Sage could definitely be said to be a miraculous feat, be it on the Master Teacher Continent or among the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe. The ones who had been able to do so in their dimension could be counted on a single hand.

However... Zhang Xuan could not bring himself to wait that long!

He wanted to find Luo Ruoxin and hear the reason from her own mouth, or else it felt like he would lose his mind. He had

been forcing himself to remain calm so far, but he did not know how long he could continue doing that.

As such, no matter what the risks were, as long as an opportunity surfaced for him to climb to a greater height, he would grasp it even if the chances were that it would end in his death!

Hong long long!

Lightning bolts and heavenly flames continued assaulting fervently. Zhang Xuan felt as if he was being roasted alive inside a pill cauldron. His body was withering, and his zhenqi was dissipating. He was nearing his limits.

Ancient Sage blood!

Zhang Xuan flicked his wrist to take out a jade bottle before devouring its contents.

Huala!

Gulping down Ancient Sage blood as if it was plain water, Zhang Xuan was able to replenish his depleted energy and sustain himself for the time being.

I need to push on!

The image of the Infernal Blacksaber, Yuan Tao, and the Dragonbone Divine Spear achieving a breakthrough to Ancient Sage came into Zhang Xuan's mind, and he gritted his teeth in determination.

Since they were able to clear their cultivation ordeals so easily, I can't lose!

With such a thought in mind, he dashed right into the dark clouds. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

“This is insane! This is really downright insane!” Ancient Sage Allfire exclaimed as his body shuddered uncontrollably.

Despite being blessed with superior physical prowess, he had not dared dive into the midst of the dark clouds back when he had been facing his Ancient Sage Ordeal.

Given that his master's cultivation was only at Great Sage, was making such a move not as good as committing suicide?

No matter how much power one could gain from achieving a breakthrough to Ancient Sage, it would be meaningless if one lost one's life in the process of doing so!

Si la!

Provoked by Zhang Xuan's actions, the dark clouds in the sky flew into a rage. A massive bolt of lightning flashed across the sky, tearing open a pitch-black crack in space. Following which, the surrounding lightning bolts and flames began to gather around the pitch-black crack, causing the devastating force to slowly assume a corporeal form.

From afar, it looked as if a gigantic saber of mass destruction was floating in the air.

“What is... this? Wait a moment! Could this be... the Ordeal of Lightning Armament? But that can't possibly be! The Ordeal of Lightning Armament is said to be a calamity that only appears when a person attempts a breakthrough to Ancient Sage 4-dan Dimension Shatterer realm!” Sovereign Chen Yong's face turned pale as his heart nearly leaped out of his throat.

As the number one expert of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe and the grandson of Vicious, he had access to books regarding Ancient Sage 4-dan Dimension Shatterer realm.

It was detailed in those books that in order to reach the Dimension Shatterer realm, one had to undergo the Ordeal of Lightning Armament. It was an ordeal where heavenly flames and lightning bolts were compressed into a corporeal state, assuming the form of divine weapons.

Each of those weapons harnessed sufficient power to shatter the world, such that even he would easily have been sliced in two even if he had encountered it at his peak.

His young master was only attempting a breakthrough to Ancient Sage... so why would such a formidable ordeal be summoned? It did not make sense!

“It's over...”

Ancient Sage Mo Ling and Ancient Sage Allfire were so terrified that they found themselves completely speechless.

Even though they were unaware of what the Ordeal of Lightning Armament was, they were well aware that the massive saber formed out of lightning bolts and heavenly flames in the sky was not something that they could face given their current strength. In fact, just by looking at the saber itself, they felt their minds falling into disarray from the terrifying power that it harnessed.

Floating above the pedestal of the altar, Sovereign Chen Ling had fearfully halted the absorption of the energy bestowed onto him. At the same time, the dimension rift that had opened as a result of the summoning ritual had closed slightly.

It seemed like there was no one who did not hold some deference toward the devastating force of nature.

An ordinary breakthrough to Ancient Sage wouldn't have brought about such a powerful cultivation ordeal, even for me. However, I attempted to face the Ancient Sage Ordeal with my soul, body, and zhenqi, and I even provoked it earlier by attempting to charge into it...

Even Zhang Xuan was unable to remain calm while standing in the face of such a terrifying force. He felt goosebumps rising all over his body.

Zhang Hongtian and Ancient Sage Yan Qing had told him that the more times one attempted a breakthrough to Ancient Sage, the greater one's accomplishments would eventually be. Back then, Kong shi had challenged the Ancient Sage Ordeal a total of three times before eventually choosing to push for a breakthrough on the fourth time.

Yuan Tao had also challenged the Ancient Sage Ordeal once, but he had chosen to suppress his cultivation and hold himself back from achieving a breakthrough right away.

Considering that Zhang Xuan had summoned the cultivation ordeal through the breakthrough in his soul cultivation, he should have been facing a single Ancient Sage Ordeal at the moment. However, he had brought his physical body and

zhenqi into the cultivation ordeal as well, and that had changed the nature of things.

In short, he was facing the might of three Ancient Sage Ordeals simultaneously. That was also why the Ordeal of Lightning Armaments had been summoned.

If he could overcome it, it would be equivalent to overcoming three Ancient Sage Ordeals simultaneously. It would temper his physical body, zhenqi, and soul, creating an incredibly firm foundation for future breakthroughs. However, if he failed, the curtains would be drawn on him. It would really be the end.

He was really walking on a tightrope. He was, in the truest sense, going all in.

“You might be formidable, but I am a person who has overcome many adversities to come this far. If you think that you are able to can get me with just this, you are about to be proven wrong!” Zhang Xuan roared furiously as he charged toward the massive saber in the air.

Huala!

The moment that Zhang Xuan’s fist was about to reach its target, the massive saber also swung down from the sky as well. The immense pressure from just the downward motion of the saber immediately caused Zhang Xuan’s hand to crack, causing fresh blood to flow down his arms. His flesh was stripped away, revealing his bare white bones.

# 1832 Is This the End?

Before the saber could reach his fist, the muscles on his arm had already been stripped away!

No wonder this was the ordeal for Dimension Shatterer realm cultivators. It was truly a fearsome force to behold!

With a furious roar, Zhang Xuan drove his strength to his limits. Harmonizing his zhenqi, physical body, and soul together, the surrounding space immediately turned viscous.

The Ancient Sage Ordeal was not just a test from the heavens on a cultivator, it was also an opportunity for evolution. If one used a weapon to ward off the Ancient Sage Ordeal, the benefits that he gained from it would be significantly reduced. Not only so, it might even trigger a backlash from the Ancient Sage Ordeal, which could possibly make the situation even more life-threatening.

This was similar to how the force of a Leaving Aperture Ordeal increased exponentially the more people there were facing the cultivation ordeal.

It was for this reason that Zhang Xuan did not brandish his Dragonbone Divine Spear, opting to rely on his own strength instead.

Sila!

Without a doubt, a full force attack harnessing the limits of Zhang Xuan's strength was indeed a force to behold. Even an average Great Philosopher realm Ancient Sage would find themselves getting bogged down by the attack in a moment's time. However, before the massive lightning saber in the sky, his strength seemed no different than a joke. The sky was torn apart in the blink of an eye, and the next moment, the flesh of Zhang Xuan's upper body was shredded, revealing his ribcage.

Excruciating pain!

Despite his mental resilience, the pressure and pain that he was in had exceeded his limits. He felt his own consciousness

blurring, on the verge of extinguishing as though a candlelight in the midst of a storm.

Hu!

His clothes were burned to cinders, revealing a shriveled skeletal frame.

The Ordeal of Lightning Armament was simply too terrifying. It had surpassed the limits of what he could withstand in his current realm.

Not even a single breath had passed from the moment that the saber began descending till his flesh and blood were dissipated... and the saber had not even reached him yet. All of the damage that Zhang Xuan had sustained came solely from the saber's overwhelming aura and the shockwave coming from the momentum of its movement.

If the saber really fell on him, he would surely be killed in a heartbeat.

It seems like I have really screwed up...

This was the thought that had surfaced in Zhang Xuan's mind in that moment.

He had thought that he could make use of the opportunity to push for a breakthrough in his physical body and zhenqi cultivation. However, it seemed like he had overestimated his own capabilities, such that the situation had gone out of his control.

But I won't be going down that easily either!

Knowing that he would die without a shred of doubt if he continued holding back, he closed his eyes and willed. The next instant, a body identical to his suddenly appeared right in front of him, and it charged straight up toward the saber.

Clone!

"To think that you still have the cheek to claim that you are the main body when you can't even deal with a measly cultivation ordeal. Don't you feel embarrassed? Watch as I shatter this saber with a single punch!" the clone roared proudly as he faced the massive saber.

Using this brief moment of respite, Zhang Xuan hurriedly took out Ancient Sage blood of Blood Reincarnation realm cultivators and gulped it down so as to replenish his zhenqi and nourish his body.

All that was left of the current him was a bag of bones contained within a sack of skin. If not for the overwhelming vitality that he had accumulated from drinking Ancient Sage blood from Blood Reincarnation realm cultivators and the miraculous regenerative capability of the Heaven's Path zhenqi, he would have already died.

Under the nourishment of the blood essence, his flesh and bones slowly began to grow back. From the looks of it, it would take several years before he could recover back to his former state. Nevertheless, it was already a huge blessing that he was still alive after facing that terrifying saber, so this was nothing for him to complain about.

Shaking his head, Zhang Xuan turned his gaze toward his clone in the sky.

It was little surprise that his clone did not stand a chance against the saber either. However, due to his body being made out of the Nine Hearts Lotus, the clone was able to swiftly reform himself even after he was sliced into two, putting the Ordeal of Lightning Armament at a loss as to how it should deal with him for a moment.

“This is his clone?”

“How did he get such a powerful clone? Will he really be able to survive like this?”“Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

Upon seeing the clone for the very first time, the crowd around widened their eyes in shock.

This was especially so for Ancient Sage Mo Ling. His entire body was trembling in agitation.

Indestructible, that was exactly the kind of body that all soul oracles wanted to lay their hands on! If they could obtain such

a body, they would really be able to live for an eternity without fearing anything at all!

“No, it seems like his clone is still too weak after all. He won’t be able to block the saber for much longer...”

The massive saber did slow down a little with the interference of Zhang Xuan’s clone, but it was still trudging forward in its trajectory. It was just a short moment away from crushing Zhang Xuan’s soul into bits.

In that desperate moment, Zhang Xuan swiftly whipped out the Stone of Divine Crusade once more and flicked it toward his clone.

Tzzzzzzzzzz!

The clone swiftly grabbed the Stone of Divine Crusade and began absorbing the rich energy harnessed within.

Zhang Xuan had only used up half of the soul energy in the Stone of Divine Crusade earlier, so there was still another good half left in there for his clone’s use.

Devouring the massive amount of soul energy, the clone’s cultivation surged by leaps and bounds, granting him greater strength to fend off the descending saber. It almost looked as if the tables were turning in Zhang Xuan’s favor as the saber slowed down even more, and it seemed like it was about to come to a halt.

Kacha! Kacha!

At the same time, the clone’s soul cultivation shot right up to Sempiternal realm consummation, and it was still marching with imposing momentum toward a breakthrough to Ancient Sage.

The Canvas of Four Seasons opened once more, and the Aeon of Ancient Sage swiftly gushed into his body.

Boom!

In just a few moments, the clone had already shattered the bottleneck limiting him, opening up a new world.

He was able to achieve a much easier breakthrough than Zhang Xuan because he was able to access Zhang Xuan's mind and tap into his experiences, which allowed him to advance his cultivation much more smoothly.

Boom!

As soon as the clone achieved a breakthrough, huge swathes of dark clouds began gathering around the area once more. A fresh influx of lightning bolts and heavenly flames surged into saber, which had barely come to a halt just a moment ago, filling it with more energy.

“ ... ”

Zhang Xuan's eyebrows leaped up in horror.

It was a spontaneous decision on his part to toss the Stone of Divine Crusade to the clone, hoping that the latter would gain sufficient strength to halt the Ordeal of Lightning Armament. He did not think that the other party would achieve a breakthrough and bring in another cultivation ordeal.

Considering that he and his clone essentially shared a soul, this could be considered as his fourth Ancient Sage Ordeal.

Absorbing the fresh influx of lightning bolts and heavenly flames, the already massive saber doubled in size. Its dark blade emanated such a terrifying pressure that it tore open glaring scars one after another in the sky. The aura that it emanated was so powerful that not even the Dragonbone Divine Spear would dare stand against it.

The feeling that death was encroaching on him felt more vivid than ever to Zhang Xuan at that moment, causing his hair to stand on end.

“If we allow it to descend, we'll surely die without the slightest doubt!”

Knowing the might of the saber, Zhang Xuan quickly racked his brain for a solution.

The might harnessed within the saber was simply too appalling. If they failed to stop it, they would be disintegrated into nothingness.

Tzzzzz!

Carrying the might to dissipate everything in the world, the saber sliced down on the clone and decisively split him in two.

Even if his clone had reached Ancient Sage, there was no way that he could stand against such a calamity of nature!

Boom!

Nevertheless, the clone swiftly gathered himself together again and again as he desperately pushed against the saber. Despite the immense difference in strength, the clone's tenacity still paid off. The descent of the saber began slowing a little.

Nevertheless, the situation still was not looking good for them.

Knowing that he would really meet his end here at this rate, Zhang Xuan anxiously turned to Sovereign Chen Yong and instructed, "Quick, help me look around and find someone who is on the verge of a breakthrough. It has to be someone who can summon a lightning tribulation!"

"You want to find someone who can achieve a breakthrough right now and summon a lightning tribulation?" Sovereign Chen Yong was stunned, but he knew that his young master had his reasons for doing so. Thus, he quickly turned to issue an instruction to Liu Yang.

"Yes, Your Majesty!" Liu Yang nodded in response.

He shot a sweeping glance at his surroundings before swiftly grabbing a Saint 9-dan cultivator in the vicinity and infusing a surge of his zhenqi into the latter.

As soon as the surge of zhenqi spread across the Saint 9-dan cultivator's body, the bottleneck that had been limiting him immediately shattered, and dark clouds began gathering once more.

"Great!" Seeing the familiar black mass, Zhang Xuan heaved a sigh of relief. He immediately sent a telepathic message over. "Little Tribulation, is that you?"

Boom!

Hearing those words, the dark clouds staggered. For a moment, it seemed as if the dark clouds were going to run away, but they eventually shook themselves and reluctantly drifted over to Zhang Xuan's side.

It was clear that the Ordeal of Lightning Armament was not the same Little Tribulation whom Zhang Xuan usually hung out with. Nevertheless, as fellow cultivation ordeals, he thought that there might be some kind of camaraderie among them such that Little Tribulation could help speak up on his behalf.

"I have a cultivation technique here that can enhance your abilities, and I'll impart it to you right now. However, I need you to block that saber over there for me," Zhang Xuan said.

Following which, he activated the Impartation of Heaven's Will and began a lecture.

He had already seen through the flaws of Little Tribulation a long time ago, and he had thought about how he could offer the latter pointers too. Thus, all he had to do was regurgitate the knowledge that was in his mind.

"This... Is he teaching the lightning tribulation?"

"Are you telling me that the lightning tribulation is his pet?"

Everyone was stunned.

# 1833 Surviving the Cultivation Ordeal

They had seen people taming beasts, humans, and artifacts before, but this was the first time in their long lives that they had seen someone tame a lightning tribulation.

Sovereign Chen Yong, Ancient Sage Mo Ling, Ancient Sage Allfire, and all of the others were rendered utterly speechless.

The scene that was unfolding before their eyes was so mind-boggling that the rational sides of their minds had completely shut down.

Lightning had always been a representation of the wrathful retribution of the heavens. It served to punish the arrogant cultivators who dared defy fate and attempt to reach something beyond what they were. Yet, at that moment, it was actually heeding the commands of a mere cultivator!

How in the world was that possible?

That's... That's my teacher! Liu Yang's heart quivered in agitation.

The means of his teacher were indeed incredible! No matter how desperate a situation was, he would always be able to somehow achieve the impossible and turn the tables around!

Hong long!

After hearing Zhang Xuan's pointers, the dark clouds swayed a little as lightning crackled within them. They could feel that the rate they were able to gather power had hastened significantly. Putting aside the Saint 9-dan cultivator below who had just achieved a breakthrough, the clouds felt that they would not even break a sweat even if they had to face dozens more!

At the same time, the Saint 9-dan cultivator, whose breakthrough had summoned the lightning tribulation, found his face turning completely pale in fright.

Just who in the world did he offend for such a thing to happen to him? There was still a long life ahead of him, and he did not want to be zapped to death just yet!

Paying no heed to the Otherworldly Demon below who was on the verge of tears, Zhang Xuan commanded Little Tribulation, “Help me block the Ordeal of Lightning Armament!”

The cultivation technique that Zhang Xuan had imparted to Little Tribulation was designed in a manner such that it would only make it a more frightening force against the Otherworldly Demons. There would not be make any difference to the cultivation ordeals of human cultivators. This would ensure that the number of experts in the ranks of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe would slowly decrease, and with sufficient time, they would not pose a threat to mankind anymore.

Hong long!

Little Tribulation was extremely hesitant to stand against the Ordeal of Lightning Armament, but between the Ordeal of Lightning Armament and Zhang Xuan, the latter was much more frightening to it...

Thus, it clenched its precipitation tightly together as it marched up to the Ordeal of Lightning Armament to confront it.

Seeing that a measly lightning tribulation of a Saint 9-dan cultivator actually dared hinder it, the massive saber swung itself downward and sliced the dark clouds apart, dissipating them into the surroundings.

Boom!

With a thunderous roar, Little Tribulation gathered whatever was left of itself together and reformed itself to stand against the Ordeal of Lightning Armament. However, with most of its mass dissipated, Little Tribulation looked like a non-threatening ball of black fluff.

Seeing this, Zhang Xuan slapped his hand on his forehead before turning around to address the crowd. “Is there anyone else who wants to make a breakthrough... Forget it, I’ll just do it myself!”

Seeing everyone below averting their gazes from him, Zhang Xuan opened his mouth and began lecturing. “The crux of cultivation lies in the cultivation of character. A righteous heart, a dignified demeanor, a prudent mouth...”

His voice echoed resoundingly across the entire area. The cultivators standing behind Liu Yang tried not to pay attention to the lecture, but by the end of the first sentence, they were already completely absorbed in his teachings. Smiles blossomed on their faces as the complications that had bogged them down previously were suddenly lifted, bringing them a feeling of epiphany.

It was as if all of the knowledge that they had learned was converging together, forming a big picture about cultivation that they had never known about.

Kacha! Kacha! Kacha!

And then, the breakthroughs started. Leaving Aperture realm, Dimension Sundering realm, Macrocosm Ascendancy realm... Dark clouds swiftly congregated in the area and bulked up the weakened Little Tribulation, causing it to swell up quickly as if it had been injected with steroids.

Thunderous claps filled with the surroundings as lightning crackled around frenziedly. It was as if Little Tribulation was parading its newfound powers.

Nevertheless, Zhang Xuan carried on with his lecture. Within a short ten minutes, there were over two thousand cultivators who had achieved a breakthrough, and over five hundred of them had managed to summon a lightning tribulation.

By that point, Little Tribulation covered the entire capital, and even a single bolt of lightning from it was for visiting.

Shortly after the clone left, Zhang Xuan also felt energy leaving his body. He had really exhausted himself both physically and mentally this time around, and he plopped onto the ground with a fatigued look on his face.

He would never have been so reckless if he had known that this would happen.

If not for the fact that they were in the capital of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe, where there were plenty of cultivators whom he could grab off the street, as well as his good relations with Little Tribulation, he would have bitten the dust there.

Hong long long!

Meanwhile, Little Tribulation and the Ordeal of Lightning Armament continued to pit their powers against one another. Eventually, the latter ended up depleting its energy first, and it began to dissipate away.

As the pressure crushing down on him vanished, Zhang Xuan immediately felt a brand new power sprouting from the depths of his body. This was an energy that could reconstruct him and bring him up to a higher level of existence.

Suppress! Zhang Xuan willed as he quelled that burst of power forcefully.

He could achieve a breakthrough to Ancient Sage if he wanted to, but that would mean that he would lose this golden opportunity to temper himself and build up a solid foundation. This might hinder from reaching greater heights in the future.

With all that he had been through, he knew that he would require as much strength as possible in order to protect those around him and attain what he wanted.

Hulala!

Forcefully suppressing the sprouting energy, Zhang Xuan's cultivation slowly receded back to Sempiternal realm consummation. Seeing that the mess was finally over, he heaved a sigh of relief.

He turned to Little Tribulation and said, "I'm grateful for your help this time around. You can return now."

Hu!

Little Tribulation glanced at the several hundred cultivators who had summoned it over, and chills immediately ran down the spines of those several hundred cultivators. Fortunately,

after a moment of hesitation, it swayed a little before dissipating into the surroundings as well.

When it finally dissipated entirely, Zhang Xuan felt completely depleted. It seemed as if there was not the slightest ounce of strength left in his body.

While this breakthrough had brought him infinitesimally close to Ancient Sage, he had sustained great damage in the process as well. All that was left of him at the moment was his skeletal rack with some flesh and blood that he had just recovered. It was truly a huge sacrifice.

Even if he used the blood essence of Blood Reincarnation realm experts to replenish his vitality, it would still take several years before his body could fully recover.

“Kill him!”

Barely after Zhang Xuan thought that he could take a rest, a vicious glint flashed through the eyes of one of the Otherworldly Demon Ancient Sages siding with Sovereign Chen Ling.

With the thought that he could exploit this momentary opening to eradicate this looming threat, he charged forward and drove his palm right into Zhang Xuan’s head.

The commotion that was caused by the earlier breakthrough had been so great that it shook those who had witnessed the sight to their cores. Those standing on Sovereign Chen Ling’s side swiftly came to the realization that if they could not get rid of the young man while they had the chance, it was only a matter of time before the young man grew to become an existence that none of them could defeat.

As enemies siding with opposite factions, that would spell disaster for them.

“Young Master!”

Not expecting the enemy to make a move so quickly, Sovereign Chen Yong immediately charged forward to save him. The Dragonbone Divine Spear, which had been watching intently not too far away, also swiftly darted in to protect its master.

However, before anyone could do a thing, Zhang Xuan raised his hand instinctively to defend against the abrupt assault from the Otherworldly Demon Ancient Sage.

Padah!

It started off with the arm of the Otherworldly Demon Ancient Sage being crushed to dust, and as the might traveled upward, the body of the Otherworldly Demon Ancient Sage abruptly exploded. Even his soul did not manage to make it out alive.

“This...”

Everyone was stunned.

The Ancient Sage who had attempted to assault Zhang Xuan had been at Ancient Sage 1-dan Bloodline Continuance realm, but he had died from a single palm strike from a Sempiternal realm consummation cultivator.

“What?” Zhang Xuan was also taken aback.

Despite the state of his body, he could feel that his strength had grown considerably after undergoing the tempering of the Ancient Sage Ordeal. Nevertheless, as he had not exactly achieved a breakthrough to Ancient Sage, he had thought that his strength would, at the very most, be on par with any other Bloodline Continuance realm cultivator. Yet, a casual strike from him in his weakened state had actually brought about the death of a Bloodline Continuance realm cultivator.

“My current strength... It’s already comparable to Blood Reincarnation realm primary stage!”

Swiftly taking a look at his internal condition, his body began trembling in agitation.

He had never thought that he would actually obtain strength that could rival Blood Reincarnation realm primary stage experts when he had not achieved a breakthrough to Ancient Sage. It was no wonder Kong shi had chosen to suppress his cultivation so many times before pushing for a breakthrough.

It was indeed highly beneficial to the growth of one’s cultivation!

“Kill them!”

The sight of Zhang Xuan killing a Bloodline Continuance realm Ancient Sage with a casual wave of his hand had really scared the remaining Ancient Sages on Sovereign Chen Ling's side out of their wits. Knowing that this was the opportune moment to strike, Sovereign Chen Yong immediately gave the order to attack.

Floating at the top of the pedestal, Sovereign Chen Ling looked at the happenings around him with a livid expression on his face. However, knowing that there was nothing he could do, he hurriedly absorbed the energy that was coming from the dimension rift above to recover from his injuries.

A thought suddenly came to Zhang Xuan's mind. Wait a moment... if the energy above the pedestal can help Sovereign Chen Ling recover from his injuries, could it possibly have the same effect on me as well? A hundred zhang = 333.3 meters

# 1834 I Am Sovereign Chen Ling

Zhang Xuan's injuries had been caused by the Ordeal of Lightning Armament. Many of his vital organs, muscles, and meridians had been destroyed, and it was only due to the overwhelming vitality and the Heaven's Path zhenqi in his body that he had been able to prevent his physical state from deteriorating any further.

His very foundations had been destroyed, such that he could not heal himself using ordinary means. In a sense, his current condition was similar to that of Vicious and Sovereign Chen Yong. He could only allow time to do its work and repair his tattered foundations, and there was no way to accelerate the process.

But just because he was unable to do it did not mean that others were incapable of doing so!

The wounds that Sovereign Chen Ling had sustained were even more severe than his, but the other party was still able to recover swiftly through the use of the altar. Was it possible for him to tap into the same power?

"I was nearly killed when I tried to barge into the ritual earlier. It's likely that the deity summoned by the ritual identifies one through one's soul aura and energy..."

An idea suddenly sprouted in Zhang Xuan's mind, and he swiftly began to calculate the chances of pulling it off.

He did not know whether he could use the energy bestowed by the deity to heal his injuries, but just approaching the ritual posed a problem. Earlier, when he tried to barge in to terminate the ritual, a powerful force had nearly wiped him off the face of the world.

Even with the recent surge in his fighting prowess to a level comparable to a Blood Reincarnation realm primary stage

expert, he could tell that he would still stand no chance against that powerful force. It would simply end in his annihilation.

In other words, he would have to find other means to bypass the detection of the deity.

Zhang Xuan's eyes lit up. "Disguising as Sovereign Chen Ling! As long as my aura and bloodline are identical to his, such that even the deities are unable to tell the difference between the both of us, I will be able to absorb the energy descending upon the pedestal."

Even if brute force failed, he still had a trick up his sleeve—the disguise amulet that Luo Ruoxin had given him.

It was something that he could use even after he had turned into a skeleton.

"Let me give it a try!"

Unable to curb his excitement, Zhang Xuan activated the amulet, and he swiftly warped into Sovereign Chen Ling's form. Be it in terms of external appearance or soul aura, there was no way that one could tell the difference between him and the real one.

"Young Master?" Sovereign Chen Yong asked doubtfully.

He had been following the Spirit God all along, so he knew about the existence of the disguise amulet. However, he was a little perplexed as to why the Young Master would suddenly choose to disguise himself as Sovereign Chen Ling.

"Un." Zhang Xuan nodded in response with a slight smile.

With his tall and graceful stature, he discreetly flitted over to the dimension rift in the air.

Weng weng weng!

The ripples of power that had previously kept him away showed no sign of warding him off. Just like that, he managed to slip into the ritual without any trouble.

"As expected, it works!" Zhang Xuan trembled in agitation.

It seemed like the disguise amulet that Luo Ruoxin had given him was at a higher level than whatever deity Sovereign Chen

Ling was summoning. As such, even the deity was unable to see through his disguise.

“Hahaha!”

Standing right beneath the dimension rift, Zhang Xuan absorbed a bit of the energy descending from above. In an instant, his physical body began recovering at a visible rate, and his fatigued spirit was nourished and healed as well.

“At this rate, I’ll be able to return to my peak within ten minutes. Perhaps, I might even be able to further my cultivation...” Zhang Xuan’s eyes shone brilliantly.

Despite his severe wounds, Zhang Xuan was in a far more advantageous position than Sovereign Chen Ling. Both his youth and the unique nature of the Heaven’s Path zhenqi allowed for faster recovery. Even when they were both in the same environment, chances were that he would be able to recover much faster than Sovereign Chen Ling.

Thus, he began devouring the energy ravenously as if a parched traveler who had stumbled upon an oasis.

“You...”

Just moments after Zhang Xuan began absorbing the energy, he sensed a pair of sharp eyes staring heatedly at him. Turning to look, he saw Sovereign Chen Ling glaring at him with a vile look on his face.

The bestowal of the deity’s blessing was a sacred formality of the ritual, and making a move at this very moment was absolutely prohibited. Otherwise, if he incurred the wrath of the deity, he would be torn apart. As such, all he could do was glare at Zhang Xuan murderously.

But... watching as that fellow snatched away the energy that was intended for his recovery, Sovereign Chen Ling’s heart ached so badly that he could hardly hold his anger back.

How in the world did a sack of bones disguise so impeccably as him, such that even the deities were unable to see through his disguise? Just what in the world was going on?

Can anyone tell me what’s going on?

Who am I? Where am I?

“You shameless knave...” Sovereign Chen Ling spat icily.

“So be it. I, Sovereign Chen Ling, have never intended on living an upright life anyway!” Zhang Xuan replied nonchalantly.

“You b\*stard. I am Sovereign Chen Ling!” Seeing the other party adopting his identity, Sovereign Chen Ling felt as if he was going insane.

“Sure sure, you are Sovereign Chen Ling. Happy?” Zhang Xuan replied perfunctorily as he continued gobbling up the surrounding energy hungrily.

It was clear that there was something holding Sovereign Chen Ling back from making a move on him, or else the latter would have already pounced at him. Since the latter was unable to do anything to him, there was no point bickering at all.

Feel free to say whatever you like. I’ll just quietly have my meal over here.

Gugugugu!

The energy descending from the dimension rift swiftly gathered around him and formed a massive vortex. It did not take long before they were all absorbed into his body.

His true body hidden beneath the disguise amulet began squirming around as his body reconstructed itself.

His head, shoulders, arms, chests... It was as if he was being reborn with every bit of energy absorbed.

This is a good opportunity for me to alter my meridian network to be the same as Zhao Ya’s... Zhang Xuan thought as he began working on his meridians.

A human’s biological structure was more or less fixed, such that it would only be possible to make minor modifications under normal circumstances. However, what Zhang Xuan was doing at that moment was rebuilding his body from scratch, so he could modify it freely. As such, the reconstruction of his

meridians proceeded even more smoothly than Zhao Ya's operation with the vine of the Dongxu Gourd.

Along with the modification of his meridians, an astoundingly pure killing intent seeped out of his body.

“Is this the purest Zhenqi of Slaughter?”

“Ever since Elder Vicious' death, there hasn't been anyone in our Spirit Tribe who has boasted such pure Zhenqi of Slaughter!”

“Could he possibly be the reincarnation of Elder Vicious?”

“With such a pure bloodline, there's no doubt that he's the true leader of the Spirit Tribe!”

...

The Otherworldly Demons who had listened to Zhang Xuan's lecture earlier and wondered if he was a master teacher had their doubts vanquished in an instant.

How could someone with such pure Zhenqi of Slaughter possibly be a human?

Not even the Three Sovereigns possessed such a pure bloodline!

Huala!

The Otherworldly Demons swiftly got to their knees and lowered their heads, as if they were ushering the arrival of their new leader.

Be it the debt from the impartation of knowledge or the natural deference toward a nobler existence than them, at that very moment, toward the young man in the air who was disguised as Sovereign Chen Ling, they only harbored feelings of admiration and respect.

On the other hand, seeing how his people were bowing down and submitting to that scoundrel, the real Sovereign Chen Ling was teetering on the edge of a complete mental breakdown.

While others might be unaware who this fellow was, he knew very well that the other party was the number one genius of mankind, a master teacher through and through. Yet, for his

people to actually worship the other party instead of him...  
ludicrous!

“You lowly swine! Even at the risk of turning a deity against me, I’ll claim your life right here and right now!”

Seeing that the other party was already on the brink of making a full recovery, Sovereign Chen Ling could not bring himself to wait any longer. Despite the risk of incurring the deity’s wrath, he swiped his fingers toward Zhang Xuan as if they were claws.

Boom!

Even though Sovereign Chen Ling could not recover as quickly as Zhang Xuan did, he had spent a longer time in the ritual than the other party. By now, his injuries had recovered by around seventy to eighty percent, allowing him to draw forth the strength of a true Blood Reincarnation realm consummation expert. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

Not expecting the other party to be so impatient, Zhang Xuan scowled in displeasure. “Wait a moment, I’m still lacking two more thighs to a full recovery. Why don’t we both heal up nicely before coming to blows?”

Activating the Heaven’s Path Movement Art, he dodged the attack nimbly. At the same time, he widened all of his acupoints to devour the surrounding energy as quickly as he could.

In an instant, the rate of his recovery soared.

As he was currently disguised as Sovereign Chen Ling, he could not make use of his clone, weapons, or even Vicious. Thus, it was impossible for him to kill Sovereign Chen Ling. However, it would not be easy for Sovereign Chen Ling to get him either.

“Wait your head!”

Seeing how the other party dared to speak so brazenly even after stealing the energy that he had paid a heavy price in order

to obtain, Sovereign Chen Ling nearly went berserk.

# 1835 The Descent of a Deity 1

That's my power!

I sacrificed 100,000 tribesmen and countless treasures in exchange for this power, so how dare you snatch it away from me! You want to recover your thighs? I'll smash your head into smithereens!

Sovereign Chen Ling looked as if he was convulsing so intensely that he was suffering from a stroke.

The young man before him was truly infuriating! Every word that came out of his mouth made him feel as if he could choke on his own breath!

How can you speak so brazenly despite being a petty thief? Do you have no sense of pride whatsoever?

Grinding his teeth, Sovereign Chen Ling sent yet another powerful palm strike toward Zhang Xuan.

Kacha!

The surroundings turned utterly dark. Sovereign Chen Ling's might was so great that even the heavens seemed to tremor in deference to him.

Zhang Xuan dodged his attack yet again. However, seeing that the other party was getting fiercer and fiercer, hindering him from absorbing the energy and recovering, he finally blew his top. He raised his head and bellowed, "Deity of the higher dimension, this fellow not only disguised himself as me to steal your power, he even dares to make a move on me in your presence. It's obvious that he has a complete lack of respect for you. It's of the utmost importance that you punish him severely!"

Why the heck are you causing such a huge ruckus? Can't you just sit quietly by the side and absorb the energy? Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

What a wonderful thing it is to enjoy the peaceful silence and immerse one's senses in the wonders of the world!

Don't you think that it's crude to go around killing others?

To think that you are even respected as one of the Sovereigns of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe, yet you don't even have the patience to hold yourself still. Horrible!

Seeing the other party speak the words that he wanted to say, Sovereign Chen Ling's body staggered. "Screw you!"

His blood billowed furiously through his organs, leaving him feeling as if he would vomit large mouthfuls of blood at any moment.

You scoundrel, remember your place! You are the one who has come here as a robber... How can you be so shameless as to report me first?

Grasping at his hair frenziedly, Sovereign Chen Ling knew that he would only anger himself further the more he spoke. Thus, he decided to put aside all words and smash his palm right toward Zhang Xuan.

This time, his palm strike harnessed his entire rage, making it several times more powerful than before.

Sensing danger from the palm strike, Zhang Xuan instantaneously moved to dodge the attack. However, he felt as if something was holding his body still, preventing him from moving at all.

"Damn it! I'll just have to go all out!"

Knowing that he might lose his life if he continued taking the matter lightly, Zhang Xuan had no choice but to grit his teeth regretfully as he halted the absorption of the surrounding energy. He raised his palm, but before he could exert his strength, he suddenly felt an intense jolt from above. The jolt rippled downward and shook Sovereign Chen Ling and him as if they were lone boats in the face of an extreme current.

He staggered in the air and nearly plummeted to the ground.

Po!

Under the jolt, Sovereign Chen Ling's attack also dissipated without a trace.

"What's going on?" Zhang Xuan narrowed his eyes as he turned his gaze upward, the direction where the jolt had originated from.

The dimension rift, which was emanating the energy that had facilitated his recovery, had become even darker and more glaring. Slowly, an arm was slowly reaching out from it.

The intense energy jolt earlier had originated from this arm.

"This is bad... There's really a deity above!"

Given how a mere arm was able to render such helplessness within him, there was no doubt that the being above them had far surpassed Blood Reincarnation realm consummation. Zhang Xuan's face darkened as he hurriedly drove his zhenqi to absorb the energy lingering in the area.

He knew that he would lose his opportunity to absorb the energy and heal up the moment that the deity descended upon their world.

He had mostly recovered, and all that remained were his two thighs. As long as he hurried, he might just be able to make it in time.

Otherwise, even if it was just his two thighs, it would probably take him many years to heal them back to their original state.

Tzzzzzzzz!

The muscles in his thighs recovered at a rate visible to the eye, and before long, one of his thighs was already completely healed.

Seeing how the other party dared to continue absorbing the energy despite the appearance of the arm of the deity, Sovereign Chen Ling grew frenzied.

Of all of the greedy people in the world, there was probably no one who could hold a candle to the young man before him.

If not for the fact that he did not manage to calculate the value of the artifacts properly prior to the ritual, causing the energy

bestowed to be far greater than what he needed, there was no way that he would have been able to fully recover with this fellow barging in and absorbing the energy as he liked.

Despite that, he had only recovered by roughly eighty percent so far. He was still some way off from making a full recovery.

On the other hand... the other party had recovered by at least ninety percent!

Sovereign Chen Ling knew that if he continued with his act of aggression when the deity from the ritual was already descending to their world, there was a good chance that he would be killed. Thus, he clenched his jaws hatefully before turning his attention back to absorbing the energy.

“You thief, that’s mine!”

But barely after Sovereign Chen Ling started absorbing the energy once more, he suddenly heard an infuriated bellow sounding from the opposite side. Following which, he saw the other party raising his palm and striking it over.

Huala!

A massive current of sword qi whizzed over, encircling him tightly.

“You...”

Alarmed, Sovereign Chen Ling hurriedly stopped absorbing the energy to avoid the attack. However, just as he was about to do so, he realized that the massive current of sword qi was a feint. Despite its imposing appearance, the massive current of sword qi dissipated as if bubbles upon reaching him.

It was just an act to scare him.

Tzzzzzz!

Meanwhile, the other party continued to absorb the energy.

“Damn it!”

Sovereign Chen Ling trembled with rage as he cursed. Taking a deep breath, he opened up the acupoints in his body once more to absorb the energy again when the other party suddenly flicked his finger, and a burst of sword qi shot in his direction.

It went without saying that Sovereign Chen Ling immediately took evasive action to avoid the sword qi... only to find that it was another feint.

That fellow doesn't dare make a move in front of the deity either. He's intentionally preventing me from absorbing the energy to stop me from making a full recovery...

At this point, Sovereign Chen Ling finally understood what the other party was up to.

The fact that the arm of the deity had appeared was an indication that the deity could very well descend upon their world if they continued fooling around in his presence. No matter how brazen Zhang Xuan might be, there was no way that he would really make a move in the presence of the deity for fear of divine retribution.

In other words, the purpose behind Zhang Xuan's actions was not to hurt him but to hinder his cultivation so that he could devour more of the energy bestowed by the deity.

With such a thought in mind, Sovereign Chen Ling's heart was put at ease. He put his full attention into absorbing the energy lingering around the area. However, just as he was getting into the mood, he suddenly felt his hair standing on end. Out of sheer instinct, he reacted in a split second and took a side step.

Puhe!

It was a sharp, chilling sensation. A surge of sword qi had pierced through Sovereign Chen Ling's chest. If not for his powerful instincts, his heart might have been pierced through.

"The heck!" Sovereign Chen Ling was really on the verge of exploding.

Earlier, the other party had been afraid to make a move, using all sorts of tricks to slow him down. Yet, as soon as he started cultivating, the other party immediately flicked his sword qi over for real!

Are you really not afraid of the wrath of the deities?

Are you trying to drag me down together with you?

Filled with rage, Sovereign Chen Ling was just about to dash over to tussle with the other party when the other party suddenly stopped absorbing the energy altogether. The other party lowered his head and clasped his fist toward the deity.

“O great deity, I was simply too enraged at that scoundrel for impersonating me and absorbing your powers. How could a mere thief dare behave in such a preposterous manner? Please permit me to kill him! Otherwise, what will become of your reputation if such matters are simply left to be!”

Astonishingly, the words that he spoke were actually the authentic ancient language of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe!

Even Sovereign Chen Ling had practiced for a very long time before being able to speak the language.

SI la!

Those words incurred the wrath of the deity within the dimension rift. A vortex formed within the dimension rift, and another hand slowly crept out. With a slight flick of its wrist, Sovereign Chen Ling was slammed into the ground.

Lying weakly on the ground, Sovereign Chen Ling murmured in disbelief, “Deity...”

This was the deity whom he had been contacting all this while, an entirely different entirety from the Spirit God whom Sovereign Chen Yong worshipped. It was with such a trump card in hand that he had dared to scheme against Sovereign Chen Yong.

He had been constantly offering treasures and artifacts to this deity, and in return, he had been granted great strength that allowed him to stand his ground even against the powerful Sovereign Chen Yong.

Yet, the deity whom he had been worshipping actually turned against him just because of a couple of words uttered by this scoundrel!

Was the deity really unable to tell that he was the real one?

Trembling in fury, Sovereign Chen Ling swung his finger in Zhang Xuan's direction, intending to expose the latter's false identity to the deity. However, what he saw was the young man sitting peacefully in the air with his acupoints fully open, absorbing the energy lingering in the area.

His thighs had recovered together with his feet, and all that was left were his ten toes.

“The heck...”

Sovereign Chen Ling felt an ache in his heart, and all that was left in his mind were unspeakable expletives.

## 1836 The Descent of a Deity 2

Shameless, unscrupulous, and monstrously talented... Just when did such a difficult character appear amid the humans?

If this man was left to be, his existence would eventually become the greatest threat to the Spirit Tribe!

Had Sovereign Chen Ling known that there was such a powerful foe among the humans, there was no way he would have schemed against Sovereign Chen Yong. Instead, he would have collaborated with Sovereign Chen Yong to get rid of this threat!

As stifled as Sovereign Chen Ling felt, he soon heaved a sigh of relief.

There should be no reason for that b\*stard to continue absorbing the energy once he healed his toes. Then, he would be able to make use of the remaining energy to heal himself.

Once he recovered to full strength, he was confident that he would be able to tear that b\*stard into shreds!

With a grim look on his face, Sovereign Chen Ling turned his attention back to absorbing the energy. Just as he had expected, it did not take long for the other party to regenerate his toes. He thought that it was finally time for him to speed up his healing process, but contrary to his expectations, the other party suddenly took out a painting and began frenziedly drawing the surrounding energy into the painting.

Screw this...

Sovereign Chen Ling's body trembled in disbelief upon seeing this sight.

Aren't you one greedy little b\*stard?

After having your fill of the energy, you even want to take the rest away with you?

Sovereign Chen Ling felt as if there was a puddle of fresh blood accumulating at the back of his throat, ready to spurt

forth at any moment.

That fellow was really getting worse and worse by the moment!

Furthermore, what the heck was with that painting? This energy was bestowed directly from the deity, so what kind of painting could possibly have the ability to store even that?

“Wait a moment... is that Kong shi’s Canvas of Four Seasons?”

With a swift glance, Sovereign Chen Ling came to a sudden realization.

The painting had its own independent spatial and temporal laws, such that it could be called an independent world by itself. The only painting that was known to have achieved such a level was Kong shi’s Canvas of Four Seasons.

He could tell that the other party had also achieved a breakthrough to Ancient Sage through tapping into the Aeon of Ancient Sage sealed within the painting.

The other party’s arms swayed around frantically, almost as if a Thousand Hands Buddha. The concentration of energy in the area swiftly grew sparser and sparser as it was pumped furiously into the painting. Shockingly, the rate at which the painting was devouring the energy was at least ten times faster than that of Sovereign Chen Ling!

In other words, no matter how he tussled with the painting over the energy, the result was that he would only receive, at most, a tenth of the limited energy remaining!

This energy should have been mine! It’s all mine!

Knowing that there was no way he would be able to fully recover from his energy at this rate, Sovereign Chen Ling could not remain calm. He gathered the entirety of his energy and dashed forward.

“You piece of sh\*t, I’m going to slaughter you!”

Unfortunately, the gaze of the deity was already upon this area.

Kacha!

Before he could reach Zhang Xuan, the palm from the dimension rift struck down once more, causing Sovereign Chen Ling's body to slam forcefully onto the ground.

At that point, he was truly already on the brink of tears.

Was he going to lose the support of the deity whom he had worshipped for so long over such shady lies of the other party?

Ridiculous!

Seeing the look on Sovereign Chen Ling's face, Zhang Xuan shook his head coldly. "Jeez..."

Of course, it was not that the deity trusted his words. The reason that the deity made a move on Sovereign Chen Ling was because the latter had broken the rules and used his powers recklessly.

The deity is already on the verge of climbing out of the dimension rift to pass judgement upon us, but you still dared to make a move before him. Aren't you simply asking for trouble?

That's why humility is always the way to go! Live a humble life, and trouble won't come knocking on your door!

Doing too much before the deities often has the opposite effect. The trick is to maintain a calm heart... Just take a look at me, aren't I the perfect example?

While praising himself for his distinguished traits, he turned his attention back to his own body, and his eyes shone in delight.

To allow him to recover to his peak from a pile of bones so swiftly, the means of the deities were indeed formidable.

Huhuhu!

Zhang Xuan continued flapping his hands as if a fan to guide the movement of the surrounding energy into the painting. In a short three minutes, all of the remaining energy lingering in the surroundings had already been fully transferred into the painting.

With such a huge inventory of the energy from a deity, even if he were to get injured in the future, there would be very little he would have to be worried about.

In fact, if things went well, he could even use the energy to help Vicious fully recover from his current state.

After all that was done, Zhang Xuan turned his gaze upward and saw that the dimension rift had become even darker. Half of a towering figure had already traveled across the dimension rift to descend upon this world.

At this point in time, he was already certain that the deity was not Luo Ruoxin. The deity had an appearance resembling that of a young man.

In terms of appearance, there was nothing that set him aside from ordinary humans. However, the aura that he emanated was deep and intense. Even without making any moves, his presence caused the space around him to shatter layer after layer. It was as if the world that they lived in was unable to withstand the weight of his existence.

Sovereign Chen Yong sent a telepathic message over to Zhang Xuan. “He’s a Dimension Shatterer realm expert!”

“This is the prowess of a Dimension Shatterer realm cultivator?” Zhang Xuan narrowed his eyes.

The strength that the deity wielded was so powerful that this world was unable to assimilate his presence into it.

If the world was an ocean, the deity was a droplet of oil. No matter how powerful the oceanic currents were, the droplet of oil would remain a transcendent being floating on the surface. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

“Dimension Shatterer realm experts are also known as Immortal’s Envoys. Back when Kong shi was still around, someone prayed to a higher dimension in order to summon an Immortal’s Envoy onto this world. Who could have thought that history would repeat itself after so many years!”

“It might be due to the emergence of the Temple of Confucius...”

“What does the Temple of Confucius have to do with the descent of an Immortal’s Envoy?”

“Rumor has it that the Temple of Confucius is located in a void that seals the passageway between the higher dimensions to our world. The emergence of the Temple of Confucius means that the stopper that prevents any higher beings from descending to our world has been released, thus allowing any Immortal’s Envoy to travel to our world!”

“If that’s the case, doesn’t it mean that the power balance on the Master Teacher Continent is going to be reshuffled very soon?”

“That might not necessarily be so. It isn’t that easy for Immortal’s Envoys to descend onto our world. Not only will they have to pay a heavy price in the process, they must also suppress their cultivation to a very low level in order to avoid being ejected by our world. It’s likely that they will only be able to utilize strength comparable to a Dimension Shatterer realm primary stage cultivator. Of course, that’s a strength to behold as well, but as long as we unite together to stand up against them, we should be able to stand our ground against them...”

...

Ancient Sage Allfire, Ancient Sage Mo Ling, and the other Otherworldly Demon Lords swiftly communicated with one another.

The deity who was descending upon their world was an Immortal’s Envoy from a higher dimension. If the deity chose to aid Sovereign Chen Ling, they would really be in great danger.

Is this the strength that Luo Ruoxin wields too? Zhang Xuan wondered as he assessed the descending deity intently with his Eye of Insight.

The sight when Luo Ruoxin left played in his mind.

She was an existence that could not be assimilated into the world as well, but there was a major difference between her and the deity that was descending to their world.

It felt like the world had rejected Luo Ruoxin's existence more vehemently than it was rejecting the descending deity's presence.

Did this mean that Luo Ruoxin's strength was even greater than that of the deity who was traversing over to their world?

It took Sovereign Chen Ling a long while before he recovered from that slap. By the time he recollected himself, the energy lingering in the air had already been completely stored into the Canvas of Four Seasons. Knowing that there was no reason to make a move anymore, he gritted his teeth and turned his attention to the deity in the sky.

“O great deity, I am the real Sovereign Chen Ling! He's the fake!”

So as to not lose out, Zhang Xuan quickly argued back. “I am the real one. He's the one who is a poor excuse of an imitation. How dare you even think of lying in the presence of a deity? You must be out of your mind!”

The effects of the disguise amulet far surpassed his imagination. Under its prowess, there was no physical difference that allowed one to distinguish him from Sovereign Chen Ling, such that it was likely that even the deity would be unable to tell the difference between them. Since he had already gone so far, he could try pushing on and see where it would take him.

Hong long!

The dimension rift jolted one last time.

During their discussion, the deity had managed to traverse completely through the dimension rift. Floating in the air, he took a deep breath before opening his beady eyes.

Kacha! Kacha!

The eyes of the deity seemed to be reflected with lightning. A fear-inducing aura was swiftly diffusing outward, and it felt as

if the sky would be shattered into pieces under the intensity of his aura.

There was an unnatural vibe to the strength that he emanated, as if he was an anomalous existence that did not fit into the world.

Even Blood Reincarnation realm experts would tremble frightfully before this might, let alone ordinary humans!

“A lower lifeform from a lower dimension actually thinks that he’s able to fool me. How preposterous!” The deity harrumphed coldly as he turned his gaze upon the two of them.

The next moment, Zhang Xuan’s entire body tensed up amid spasmodic convulsions. It was as if he was surrounded by countless terrifying primordial beasts, causing sweat to rain down his body.

# 1837 The Submission of Sovereign Chen Ling

I might not necessarily lose against him. There's no choice, I'll have to give it a shot...

Given the combined prowess of him, the Dragonbone Divine Spear, Vicious, Ancient Sage Allfire, and Ancient Sage Mo Ling, even if the deity was a Dimension Shatterer realm expert, they might still stand a chance against him.

Zhang Xuan swiftly recovered from his tension to reveal a face devoid of emotions, making it impossible for one to peer into his mind.

The gaze of the deity alternated between Zhang Xuan and Sovereign Chen Ling, but a moment later, a slight frown appeared on his forehead. "You must have used your own blood essence when praying to the higher dimension. Offer your blood to me, and I'll discern the real from the fake!"

The deity had thought that, given his means and power, he would be able to see through the lies of this bunch of hillbillies. Contrary to his expectation, he was unable to find any loophole despite examining closely for such a long period of time.

There was no physical difference between the two of them that allowed him to distinguish one from the other.

However, there was no way that there could be two Sovereign Chen Lings in the world!

That being said, even though the imposter had disguised himself impeccably when it came to physical traits, there was just no way they would be able to copy Sovereign Chen Ling's bloodline as well, right?

Soon, two droplets of blood were sent the deity's way. The deity swiftly scanned the two droplets of blood with his

Spiritual Perception, only to have the confident look on his face collapsing into confusion.

To his disbelief, the two droplets of blood were actually identical to one another as well!

What the heck was going on?

“O great deity, this fellow has impersonated himself as me to make fun of you. We cannot allow such a gross act of disrespect go unpunished!” Thinking that the deity might have found something out from their blood essence, Sovereign Chen Ling stood forward and spoke imposingly.

“Shut your mouth!”

Pah!

The deity threw a slap toward Sovereign Chen Ling once more, causing him to roll across the ground.

The deity was still feeling a mixture of embarrassment and frustration at being unable to tell the two apart when Sovereign Chen Ling thoughtlessly butted in. It went without saying that this was an extremely foolish act!

“I...” Holding his cheek indignantly, Sovereign Chen Ling lowered his head.

“The real Sovereign Chen Ling has offered many valuable artifacts in order to allow for my descent to this world. There’s no way the fake will know what artifacts were used and the value of each of them... I want the two of you to write down a list of the artifacts used and their exact values. The one whose list is more accurate is bound to be the real Sovereign Chen Ling!” the deity commanded.

The ritual to summon a deity was extremely strict and pricey. If the artifacts that one offered did not meet a certain requirement, it could lead to a backlash instead. As such, the real Sovereign Chen Ling was bound to know the exact details of the offerings made to him.

“This...” Sovereign Chen Ling was taken aback for a moment before slowly nodding. “Alright then!”

He took out a jade token and imprinted the values of all of the artifacts that he knew of onto it.

Zhang Xuan pondered for a moment before taking out a jade token to imprint what he knew on it too.

To be honest, he was indeed unaware of the price that one had to pay in order to establish a window with a higher dimension. He had to admit that the deity was indeed extremely sharp, capturing the crux of the matter in an instant.

However, back when he was disguised as Appraiser Wu Tao, he had gone through all of the artifacts. Furthermore, as the souls of the living tributes had been pulled into the Stone of Divine Crusade before being absorbed by him and his clone, he was well aware of the exact numbers and their cultivation realms.

After a moment of contemplation, he jotted down the exact values and numbers onto the jade token.

Taking the jade tokens from both Sovereign Chen Ling and Zhang Xuan, the deity quickly scanned through the contents with his Spiritual Perception. A moment later, he turned to Sovereign Chen Ling with narrowed eyes gleaming with menace.

Seeing that the deity's gaze was on him, Sovereign Chen Ling suddenly had a bad premonition. "Deity, I'm the real Sovereign Chen Ling..."

However, before he could finish his words, the palm of the deity was already descending from the sky.

"How dare you lie to me? You must be sick of living!"

Hong long!

It was as if the world had collapsed onto Sovereign Chen Ling, causing his entire body to freeze on the spot. He could not even escape. A seemingly boundless power loomed above him like a guillotine, threatening to squash him into minced meat.

"No!"

Not expecting that the deity whom he had paid such a heavy price to summon would actually try to kill him, Sovereign

Chen Ling was horrified. With a furious roar, he drove his strength to his limits, causing his zhenqi to surge out.

In the blink of an eye, his figure grew more than for visiting.

“Are you still not going to admit it?”

The deity narrowed his eyes as a terrifying surge of power revolved on his palm, ready to break forth and reduce Sovereign Chen Ling to dust at any moment.

“If that’s what you have chosen to believe, there’s nothing I can say in my defense. I can only say that the other party’s ability to disguise himself is too outstanding. However...” Sovereign Chen Ling took in a deep breath as a streak of madness flickered across his eyes. “... I am willing to offer my life up to you. I am willing to serve as your slave and heed your orders for life without the slightest complaint. As for him...”

Sovereign Chen Ling halted for a moment as he turned a chilling gaze in Zhang Xuan’s direction. “... does he dare pledge the same?”

Right after saying those words, a droplet of blood essence flew forth from Sovereign Chen Ling’s forehead toward the deity.

As long as the deity accepted his blood essence, he would become no different from a contracted tamed beast. He would become a slave who would be at the beck and call of the deity. Even his life and death would no longer be in his control.

“This fellow...” Zhang Xuan’s heart skipped a beat.

No wonder he had said that Sovereign Chen Yong was not as decisive as him and that he would even forsake his own life... He had thought that Sovereign Chen Ling was referring to the ritual, but who could have known that the latter had already made up his mind to offer his entirety to the deity?

That would explain why he was able to remain nonchalant about the deaths of the Ancient Sage in his faction as well. It turned out that his greatest trump card was the deity from the higher dimension!

By relinquishing all of his freedom to the deity, Sovereign Chen Ling would earn the unreserved trust of the deity in return. As his master, there was no doubt that the deity would side with Sovereign Chen Ling to deal with the rest of them and even mankind at large!

Hula!

The deity reached out and accepted the blood essence. The next instant, he grasped control over Sovereign Chen Ling's will and soul. With just a thought, he would be able to end Sovereign Chen Ling's life in an instant.

After doing all of that, the deity turned his gaze toward Zhang Xuan. His eyes no longer reflected calmness but coldness.

Under the gaze of the deity, Zhang Xuan felt his heart squeezing up a little. Two zhang = 6.66m

# 1838 The Strength of the Deity

“You’re the fake.”

The voice of the deity was resounding, similar to pieces of metal clanging with one another. His tone was impassive but absolute.

Through Sovereign Chen Ling’s thoughts, it was already apparent to the deity whom the fake was.

As a being from a higher dimension, it was already a great embarrassment for him to have been played for a fool by someone from a lower dimension. If word spread, he could die of humiliation. There was no doubt that there was already a bundle of rage burning deep in his heart.

“Heh, it seems like I’ve been exposed!”

The very willingness of Sovereign Chen Ling to offer his soul up to the deity made a fundamental difference in their positions. This was something that Zhang Xuan would never be willing to do. As such, it had also become the greatest opening to his disguise.

With some awkward laughter, he raised his arm and charged forward.

Hu!

The Dragonbone Divine Spear flew into hands, and with a powerful thrust, he pierced the spear right toward the deity.

Tzla!

The strength from Zhang Xuan’s body, zhenqi, and soul was focused precisely at the very tip of the Dragonbone Divine Spear, imbuing it with the strength to shatter even spacetime.

This was an attack that would destroy even Sovereign Chen Ling in a heartbeat, skewering him mercilessly like a helpless deer.

Since his disguise had failed him, he had to make the first move. If he could, by any chance, catch the deity off guard and kill him, that would be for the best.

If he could not kill the deity, at the very least, he would still have the advantage from taking the initiative.

Considering how the deity had taken Sovereign Chen Ling in as his subordinate, as well as the little regard that he had for the beings living in this world, it was likely that there was no room for reconciliation at all. Since that was the case, there was no need for Zhang Xuan to play the good man.

“Pfft!”

Seeing Zhang Xuan’s move, the deity sneered coldly. He placed his hands behind his back, not bothering to dodge at all.

Weng!

Before the Dragonbone Divine Spear could pierce into his chest, it was swept away by another current of energy. It was like a wooden sword striking metal armor; it was completely ineffective. Zhang Xuan was unable to push the spear any deeper in.

Seeing such a sight, sweat erupted from Zhang Xuan’s every pore.

He had known that the deity was a fearsome figure, but the latter’s strength surpassed all of his expectations.

The deity was actually able to ward against his attack with just the basic zhenqi protecting his body!

Kacha! Kacha!

Knowing that the situation was not in his favor, Zhang Xuan hurriedly pulled out his spear as hard as he could, but the space in front of the deity’s chest suddenly collapsed inward. Stuck in the midst of broken shards of space, he found himself unable to retract the Dragonbone Divine Spear no matter how he tugged.

Following which, the voice of the Dragonbone Divine Spear echoed in his ears. “Master, I’m injured...”

Zhang Xuan hurriedly turned his gaze over and saw some wear and tear on the tip of the Dragonbone Divine Spear. There were some cracks on the dragon scales cloaking its surface, and it seemed like crimson blood was trickling out from the cracks.

“He’s too powerful. How are we supposed to fight against such an opponent?”

If the deity was already so powerful without making an active move, would they not be obliterated the moment he made a move?

He had thought that he would be peerless among the Ancient Sages now that he wielded the strength equivalent to a Blood Reincarnation realm cultivator and had the Dragonbone Divine Spear in his grasp. However, it was obvious that he had been too optimistic.

“We have to make a move as well, or else all of us will die here!”

Seeing such a sight, Sovereign Chen Yong immediately realized that if they did not make a move, they would be massacred like helpless lambs in a moment’s time. Thus, he quickly drew his saber and charged forward. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

At the same time, Ancient Sage Allfire raised his massive claws. Concentrated flames burst forth from his body, and it seemed as if he would set the entire world alit.

Ancient Sage Mo Ling and the others did not laze around either. They quickly rose into the air and made their moves in coordination with the rest.

The group that was gathered there could already be considered the pinnacle fighting prowess of the entire Otherworldly Demonic Tribe. Their might combined could impale even the heavens.

Yet, in the face of this formidable might, the deity leisurely raised his hand and flicked his finger.

Po!

A spacetime turbulence immediately stormed ahead, sweeping all of the attacks away with it. In the blink of an eye, the devastating force created by the combined prowess of the group dissipated entirely, as if it had never existed at all.

However, their interference did manage to buy some time for Zhang Xuan to retract his spear and return to Sovereign Chen Yong's side. Nevertheless, the absolute difference in their strengths was a huge blow to the group's morale.

With such a powerful line up, even the peak Sovereign Chen Yong would have been killed in an instant, unable to retaliate at all. Yet, this deity had managed to stop them with just a simple flick of his finger.

It was almost as if they were ants standing before a colossal giant!

Was this the strength that a Dimension Shatterer realm cultivator wielded?

It had really exceeded his wildest imagination.

"Not too bad. It seems like the lot of you aren't too worthless." The deity chuckled softly, but there was not the slightest emotion behind his words at all. He glanced down at the group below and said, "Just like him, submit to me, and I can spare your lives. Know that I have little patience for the likes of you, so make up your mind quick."

"You want us to submit to you? Dream on!" Sovereign Chen Yong spat contemptuously.

As the highest leader of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe, he was obligated to ensure the welfare of his own tribesmen. If he was willing to bow down to a higher power in exchange for greater power, he would never have landed himself in such a state.

"Oh? Let me see how much those guts of yours are worth then!" the deity uttered coldly before snapping his finger.

There was not the slightest sound, and there was not any attack to be seen. Yet, Sovereign Chen Yong's face suddenly

scrunched together in pain.

Boom!

A massive hole was created in his abdomen, and his figure whizzed through the air at a terrifying speed. Fresh blood continuously spurted from the punctured hole, raining crimson droplets upon the world.

He had already been severely injured in the first place, and this strike left him in an even worse position. If not for the hatred and rage in his heart, he probably would not have even made it so far.

He could feel his body approaching its limits, and it felt like all that was required was one last push for his body to come to a complete breakdown.

The astonished Zhang Xuan hurriedly flitted over to Sovereign Chen Yong's side and infused the healing energy that he had put into the Canvas of Four Seasons into the latter's body. However, to his horror, he realized that it was completely ineffective. As if trying to mix oil and water together, the healing energy simply refused to assimilate with Sovereign Chen Yong's body.

Sovereign Chen Yong shook his head and explained weakly, "This energy is molded to suit Sovereign Chen Ling's constitution so as to effectively heal his body. It won't work on anyone else. The only reason that you were able to absorb it is because the disguise amulet alters your body on a fundamental level, thus making you compatible with the energy as well."

At the same time, he took out a pill and swallowed it. A moment later, his complexion finally alleviated slightly.

The power bestowed by a deity could only be received by the person who had initiated the ritual. It was only because Zhang Xuan was able to disguise his body on a fundamental level that he had been able to snatch the energy intended for Sovereign Chen Ling, but Sovereign Chen Yong was unable to do the same.

The Spirit God had only helped him hide his aura so as to conceal the fact that he was an Otherworldly Demon. He was a

mere servant, so there was no way that the Spirit God would bestow something as invaluable as the disguise amulet to him.

“This...” Zhang Xuan frowned.

He stowed his painting away before turning his eyes back to the deity in the sky.

The deity did not continue his assault after incapacitating Sovereign Chen Yong. He simply gazed down loftily at the crowd below as if a conqueror who had everyone’s life and death in his grasp.

It was clear that the deity did not even view Zhang Xuan and the others as a threat to him. They were simply bugs whom he could crush at a whim, so their life and death was inconsequential to him.

The deity turned to the rest of the crowd who had stood up against him earlier and asked, “What about the rest of you?”

There was a moment of silence. A mixture of hesitation and fear rendered them unable to speak.

Seeing that there was no response at all, the deity snapped his fingers once more.

Peng peng peng!

Ancient Sage Allfire, Ancient Sage Mo Ling, and the other Ancient Sages were sent flying simultaneously. The immense force made their faces blanch, and blood seeped from the corners of their lips.

“It takes nothing for me to kill the lot of you, and there’s nothing you can possibly do that could affect me. This is absolute strength. We live in a world where the strong reign mighty, and the weak can either bow in submission or accept their death. There’s no need for your little minds to think so hard; the situation is very clear. There are only two choices before you—death or subordination. Like I said, my patience is limited. I’ll only give you one chance to choose. If you make the wrong decision, don’t expect me to show you mercy!”

The deity placed his hands behind his back as he spoke with the absolute authority of a tyrant.

It was as if he would behead anyone who dared question him.

“Will you spare us as long as we submit to you?” an Ancient Sage standing behind Ancient Sage Allfire asked meekly.

“Of course! Not only will I spare you, I’ll even help you to unite the Spirit Tribe and place the entire Master Teacher Continent under your rule. You’ll be in a position of unparalleled authority, standing above all beings except for me,” the deity replied nonchalantly.

“This...” Hearing those words, the face of the Ancient Sage swiftly flushed crimson in agitation. There was a moment of conflict as the concepts of freedom and power clashed in his mind, but it did not take long for him to make up his mind. Lowering his head, he kneeled down in servility and declared, “O great deity, I pledge to serve you with my life!”

The reason that he had chosen to help Sovereign Chen Yong was as a favor. If he could help Sovereign Chen Yong return to his original position, his standing in the Spirit Tribe would rise above the others’. However, the appearance of the deity changed everything. With his life at stake, there was no reason for him to persist just for Sovereign Chen Yong.

# 1839 The Final Trump Card

“This is the wisest decision you will ever make.”

Seeing that his words had brought an Ancient Sage to his side, a slight smile crept onto the lips of the deity as he nodded in satisfaction. He turned to the remaining crowd and asked, “What about the rest of you?”

“I...”

The other three Ancient Sage 2-dan Otherworldly Demons whom Sovereign Chen Yong had recruited trembled in hesitation, not knowing how they should respond.

Victory had been within reach when such a powerful expert suddenly appeared out of nowhere. They could not bring themselves to make up their minds due to the suddenness of the situation.

There was a moment of tense silence before another one of the Ancient Sages turned around and flew toward the deity.

“Sovereign Chen Yong, I’m sorry. It’s not that I don’t want to help you, but given the current circumstances... I’ll repay what I owe you in the next life!”

Sighing deeply, Sovereign Chen Yong looked at the two remaining Ancient Sages and said, “It’s a life and death situation. I won’t blame you for whatever you choose...”

The two remaining Ancient Sages looked at one another before one of them spoke up. “I have long gotten tired of living in this boring world. If I die at the hands of a deity from a higher dimension, my name will at least go down in history, and my life won’t have been a waste. Sovereign Chen Yong, you saved my life many years ago, and my life will remain yours till the very end!”

“The same goes for me. From the moment that I, Ancient Sage Jin Ta, agreed to aid you in your cause, I had already made my mind. I’ll either return victoriously or die a valiant death!”

Just like how there were those who feared death, there were also those who persisted in their values in the face of death.

Bloodlust was inscribed in the very genes of the Spirit Tribe, but that did not mean that they were driven solely by it. Just like many humans, they knew of loyalty as well.

“You have my utmost gratitude...” Seeing that those two Ancient Sages were willing to side with him despite their certain deaths, Sovereign Chen Yong nodded solemnly in gratitude.

After that, he turned his gaze to Ancient Sage Allfire to seek the latter’s view on the matter.

“What are you looking at me for? I have never feared anyone in this world, be it the heavens or the deities. The only thing I fear is losing myself! So what if he’s a deity from a higher dimension? I’ll at least scrape off a layer of his skin before he gets me!” Ancient Sage Allfire sneered coldly, revealing his crooked teeth.

It was only a short moment, but he was still indebted to his master for showing a path out for his tribesmen. Be it battle or retreat, he would follow the directives of his master without the slightest hesitation.

“I guess there’s no need to ask you two...” Sovereign Chen Yong turned to look at Ancient Sage Mo Ling and Ancient Sage Hao Xun, only to meet their firm eyes. Knowing that they had made up their minds as well, he turned to Zhang Xuan and asked, “Young Master, what shall we do now?”

“What else can we do other than pit our lives against him?” Zhang Xuan snorted as he raised the Dragonbone Divine Spear once more. “Let’s destroy him!”

The Dragonbone Divine Spear charged forth like a majestic dragon, causing many silhouettes to appear all around the area, covering the deity.

“Now!”

Knowing that there was no longer a path of retreat, Sovereign Chen Yong also dashed forward to make his move.

With the strength of the eight Ancient Sages put together, it felt that even the world was going to sink in under their might. The capital of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe trembled as if an earthquake was rattling the entire place, and all kinds of formations and inscriptions dispersed under the pressure and returned to spiritual energy.

Ancient Sages were existences who could obliterate countless lives with just a wave of their hands, let alone a group of them moving simultaneously.

Surrounded by Zhang Xuan and the others, the deity coldly sneered, “A bunch of ants who don’t know their place!”

He raised both of his hands together and pushed them outward. There was not the slightest offensive movement to be seen from him, but mysteriously, everyone’s attack dissipated without a trace.

With his attack neutralized, Zhang Xuan immediately pulled out the Book of Heaven’s Path.

The next moment, a pair of hands crept out from within to grasp at the deity.

Hula!

As soon as the deity clashed with the pair of hands, his face that had remained impassive all this while suddenly lit up in excitement. “A Dimension Shatterer realm cultivator?”

With just a look, the deity had already seen through the strength that Vicious had wielded at his peak. Just like him, Vicious had also stepped into Ancient Sage 4-dan Dimension Shatterer realm. In fact, the latter had likely been even stronger than him!

For such a formidable expert to be born out of a land with such scarce spiritual energy... this was truly hard to believe!

“You aren’t going anywhere!” the deity uttered as he tore the space around Vicious’ hands to bind them in place.

Tzla!

Vicious’ upper body had been completely collected, but he was still lacking his thighs and feet. As such, his strength was

capped at Blood Reincarnation realm pinnacle, a long way away from matching the deity.

“Flaws!” Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

Seeing that the deity had finally made a proper move under Vicious’ offense, Zhang Xuan hurriedly willed the Library of Heaven’s Path.

Hula!

There was a slight jolt, but no book materialized.

Zhang Xuan’s eyebrows shot up.

If he could uncover the flaws of the deity, they might still be able to exploit them to pull off a victory. However, if even the Library of Heaven was failing him... how was he supposed to win this fight?

But why would the Library of Heaven’s Path fail against him in the first place?

A thought suddenly surfaced in Zhang Xuan’s mind.

Is it because he’s not from this world, so the heavens of this world are unable to peer into him?

The deity had come from a higher dimension, which meant that he was not a native of this world. Furthermore, his strength had reached a level where even this world was unable to assimilate him. Could this be the reason for the Library of Heaven’s Path being unable to compile a book on him?

“Retreat!”

Without the aid of the Library of Heaven’s Path, their chances of victory were nearly null. There was a fine line between bravery and foolhardiness.

As such, Zhang Xuan flicked his spear forward with all his might before leaping back.

Hearing Zhang Xuan’s command, Sovereign Chen Yong and the others unhesitatingly launched their most powerful attacks before retreating as well.

Boom!

It was as if a marvelous firework had blossomed in the sky. A violent shockwave ravaged everything within a radius of several hundred meters, leaving no one daring to approach. Making use of this time that they had bought, Zhang Xuan immediately attempted to open a dimension rift with the Dragonbone Divine Spear to flee with the crowd, only to find that the space was as resilient as steel.

It seemed that the deity had seen through his intentions as well, so he had sealed the space within several hundred li.

“How could I possibly allow the lot of you to flee right before my eyes?”

With a light smile on his face, the deity slowly walked toward the group. Every single step that he took seemed to send trepidations reverberating in their souls.

This was simply an inhuman opponent. No matter how they searched, there seemed to be no openings that they could exploit.

Seeing the terror reflected in the eyes of those standing before him, the deity chuckled softly. “Hand the skeleton of that Dimension Shatterer realm cultivator to me, and I’ll consider letting you all live!”

“Master, you mustn’t let them go!” Sovereign Chen Ling cried out in alarm upon hearing those words.

“Audacious! Who do you think you are to interfere in my decisions?”

The deity shot a sharp glance backward, and Sovereign Chen Ling’s figure suddenly flew backward as if a hammer had struck him.

Flinging his sleeves coldly, the deity harrumphed before turning his gaze back to Zhang Xuan. “What do you say?”

He could tell that the person who had the most say in the group was the one who had the weakest cultivation of them all. Clearly, the skeleton also heeded his command.

“You want Vicious?” Zhang Xuan looked at the deity for a moment before bursting into laughter. “You’re dreaming!”

Putting everything aside, Vicious had been following him for a long time, and he had saved him on numerous occasions. To give Vicious away to another person just like that... impossible!

Hearing Zhang Xuan’s words, the deity shook his head in disappointment, as if lamenting the foolishness of a mortal. “Since that’s the case, I guess I have no other choice...”

He raised his hand and thrust it toward Zhang Xuan.

In that instant, Zhang Xuan felt as if the universe was collapsing on him. It was a force far beyond him, and he felt like a speck of dust in its face.

The force seemed to be squeezing his mind and soul out of his body, swiftly plunging him right toward the gates of the netherworld.

“This is it. I can only pray that this works somehow. Let’s see who’ll have the last laugh!”

Knowing that there was no longer any reason for him to hold back, Zhang Xuan gritted his teeth as he willed the Library of Heaven’s Path.

Hu!

A book flew out from his glabella and expanded swiftly. In the blink of an eye, it was already several dozen zhang in length and width.

This was his last golden page!

He had been storing it in his Library of Heaven’s Path all along, but given how desperate the current situation was, this was the only card that he had remaining.

“What is this?” the deity scoffed.

Not expecting the person whom he was killing to actually resort to attacking him with a book as his final measure, the deity nearly choked on his own laughter. “Do you really think

that this worthless book will be able to hurt me? I have never seen such naivety in my entire...”

Kacha!

Before the deity could finish his words, everything around him suddenly turned dark as the book swiftly fell on him.

Splat!

Crushed into the floor, the deity breathed his last breath.

“ ... ”

Utter silence filled the area for a very long time to come. 1  
zhang = 3.33m

# 1840 Sovereign Chen Yong's Pride

Sovereign Chen Ling's eyes were on the verge of popping out of their sockets. This was utter madness to him!

He had paid a heavy price in order to conduct the ritual to summon the deity, and he had thought that he could unite the Spirit Tribe through the power of the deity and destroy all the voices of opposition. Who could have known that his wildest ambitions would actually be quashed by a single book?

He rubbed his eyes again and again, fervently wishing that he was simply seeing things.

It was a Dimension Shatterer realm deity that was going against a mere book... How could it have possibly ended in the victory of the book?

As this thought surfaced in his mind, blood spurted out from his mouth once more.

The heck! What in the world is this?

Aren't you supposed to be a transcendental being that towers over others, such that everyone in this world is no different from an ant to you?

Aren't you supposed to be a superior existence who governs the life and death of others?

To actually die from being squashed by a book...

Still unable to believe the situation, Sovereign Chen Ling rushed forward to inspect the deity's body, only to see that the latter's head had been cracked open. With the deity's spirit, mind, and soul already departed from the world, he could not have been any more dead than he already was.

Before he knew it, Sovereign Chen Ling's eyes began to blur. Tears had begun flowing down his cheeks.

How could he have been so unlucky? How?!

The dragon blood that he had refined with great difficulty ended being stolen, the energy that he had paid a heavy price for in order to heal his injuries had been snatched right before his eyes, and even his trump card was slaughtered in the blink of an eye.

Thinking about it now, nothing had gone well for him ever since he met that b\*stard Zhang Xuan!

It was fortunate that the deity had never thought that he would die, so he did not make it in time to crush his soul. Otherwise, he would have departed from the world together with the other party.

Sovereign Chen Yong, Ancient Sage Allfire, Ancient Sage Mo Ling, and the others looked at one another quietly. They blinked blankly as their minds struggled to rationalize what they had just witnessed.

They had thought that they were really doomed, but who would have thought that there would be such a plot twist at the critical moment?

He had actually brought out a book and squashed the deity as if he was getting rid of a mere cockroach...

That was insane!

At the same time, the two Ancient Sages who had just defected to the deity's side looked utterly despaired. At that moment, they really wanted to bang their heads against a wall and die.

If they had persisted a little longer and chosen to follow Sovereign Chen Yong, they would have risen above the ranks as meritorious subjects who had quelled a coup d'état. However, with their earlier betrayal, such hopes were no longer possible. They had truly offended Sovereign Chen Yong through and through, and it would not be long before they found themselves without a place among the Spirit Tribe.

The deity was supposed to be an invincible being, yet why was he so unreliable?

The crowd were not the only ones who were flabbergasted by such a turn of events. Zhang Xuan was equally dumbfounded

as well.

To be honest, bringing out the golden page had truly been his last resort. He had thought that the golden page would only have sufficient power to ward off the deity for a brief moment. Who would have thought that it actually wielded the power to smash the other party to death!

Had he known that the golden page was able to work its wonders even against a Dimension Shatterer realm deity, he would have brought it out right from the start and spared himself from much suffering!

It wasn't too long ago that the golden page met some hindrance while trying to get rid of an Ancient Sage 1-dan Otherworldly Demon at the Harvest Valley City Seer Guild. Yet, it actually managed to get rid of the deity so easily... Is this one of the effects of the recent upgrade of the Library of Heaven's Path?

Given how the golden page had met with some difficulty trying to kill a Blood Continuance realm Ancient Sage, he had thought that it would not work against the deity. However, everything had proceeded much more smoothly than he had expected. From the looks of it, this probably had something to do with the Great Codex of Spring of Autumn, which had been recently assimilated into the Library of Heaven's Path.

In other words, even though the Library of Heaven's Path was unable to see through the deity, the might of the golden page far exceeded that of the deity!

“Sovereign Chen Yong, I'll leave this fellow to you!”

With the death of the deity, Sovereign Chen Ling no longer posed a threat. Thus, Zhang Xuan waved his hand and walked over to the deceased deity.

If he could forge a Soulless Metal Humanoid out of the body of a Dimension Shatterer realm cultivator, he would be pretty much invincible in this world!

More importantly, it could serve as an important tool for him to ascend to a higher dimension, thus allowing him to find Luo Ruoxin.

As for the conflict between Sovereign Chen Yong and Sovereign Chen Ling... he had already helped Sovereign Chen Yong this far, so he felt that he should leave the rest to the latter.

He felt that this was what Sovereign Chen Yong wanted.

“Thank you, Young Master!”

Seeing that Zhang Xuan had chosen to give him the freedom to deal with Sovereign Chen Ling, Sovereign Chen Yong nodded in gratitude. Following which, he turned a cold gaze to Sovereign Chen Ling and uttered, “Sovereign Chen Ling, I have never treated you poorly. Yet, you colluded with the humans and betrayed me. I believe that there’s no need for me to explain the outcome that awaits you, right?”

Sovereign Chen Ling looked around him and saw that Mo Ling, Allfire, and the other Ancient Sages had sealed the surrounding space. Knowing that there was no way that he would be able to escape, he exhaled deeply and said, “The winner takes it all. I have nothing to say now that I have lost!”

If he had won, the world would have been his. Since things had failed to go his way... the worst that could happen was death anyway.

Back then, when he made the decision to turn against Sovereign Chen Yong in the hope of becoming the next leader of the Spirit Tribe, he had known that such an outcome was possible. However, he had thought that there was no way that he could have accepted a loss, so he had gone to the extent of resolving himself to offer his soul up to a deity in order to ensure that he would be the last one standing.

Yet, as he faced his defeat, he found himself feeling calmer than ever. Perhaps, it was the realization that everything was really over that finally tamed his ambitious mind.

“I know why you chose to turn against me.” Hearing Sovereign Chen Ling’s response, Sovereign Chen Yong shook his head and said. “Ever since the ancient times, the Three Sovereigns have always been headed by the lineage of

Sovereign Chen Ling. However, ever since my grandfather's era, the lineage of Sovereign Chen Ling has been in decline...

"Your birth was viewed as the turning point of the lineage of Sovereign Chen Ling. Your exceptional talents caused your clan members to pin all of their hopes on you, and you wanted to meet their expectations. You set your mind to bringing the lineage of Sovereign Chen Ling back to its former glory, and you persevered toward that goal... but unfortunately, you met me.

"You knew that you would have to overcome me for the lineage of Sovereign Chen Ling to rise to the top once more, so you pushed yourself to your limits. However, you never succeeded. That's why you had no choice but to resort to this. You thought that as long as I was out of the way, you'd be able to rise to the top and make the lineage of Sovereign Chen Ling the true leaders of the Spirit Tribe once more. However, this turned out to be the worst move that you have ever made."

Sovereign Chen Ling sighed deeply in lamentation.

Ever since ancient times, the entire Spirit Tribe had always been centered around the lineage of Sovereign Chen Ling. This was also why the lineage had been bestowed with the honor of carrying the 'Ling[1]' character in its name. However, the sudden appearance of Kong shi in mankind and Vicious in the Spirit Tribe had changed everything. The great war that had happened caused authority to be eventually amassed in the hands of the lineage of Sovereign Chen Yong.

As the ones who had been leading the Spirit Tribe for countless years, there was no way that the lineage of Sovereign Chen Ling could accept such an outcome. Resentment had swiftly built up over the years, eventually resulting in such a series of events.

In a sense, this situation could be said to have been an inevitability. It had only been a matter of before everything blew up.

"You can pin any crime on me you want to. I'll be a dead man by then anyway, so what care do I have for the words of others?" Sovereign Chen Ling waved his hand calmly.

“Pin any crime on you?” Sovereign Chen Yong laughed. “You are really underestimating me. I won’t do something as petty as that. Not only so, I’ll give you one more chance so as to show you that the difference between us has never been something that you could surmount!”

“You’ll give me one more chance?” Sovereign Chen Ling scoffed in disdain.

“It’s simple. I’ll challenge you to a fair duel without allowing anyone else here to interfere. If you can defeat me, you’ll be allowed to leave here alive. On the other hand, if you lose, you shall meet your end here!” Sovereign Chen Yong replied.

Since the reason that the other party had chosen to betray him was due to his inability to surpass him, he would drive in the fact that the gap between them was something that the other party would never be able to bridge!

“Are you certain about this?” Sovereign Chen Ling raised his head as he assessed Sovereign Chen Yong with narrowed eyes.

He had already resigned himself to his death, but who could have known that this fellow would be so foolish as to challenge him to a fair duel?

Had it been in the past, there was no way that he could have been a match for Sovereign Chen Yong. However, with the severe injuries that Sovereign Chen Yong had sustained, the one who held the advantage in the battle was indubitably him!

“Have I ever reneged on my words before?” Sovereign Chen Yong replied impassively.

“Sovereign Chen Yong...” Hearing Sovereign Chen Yong’s decision, Ancient Sage Hao Xun was stunned.

It would be so much easier to simply slay this kind of scoundrel once and for all. Why would he bother giving the other party an opportunity to make a comeback?

Was this not simply asking for trouble?

“Let him be!” Zhang Xuan waved his hand.

He could somewhat relate to Sovereign Chen Yong’s feelings.

Sovereign Chen Yong was not fond of pointless bloodshed, but one would have to be really naive to think that he was a compassionate man. He was unforgiving toward his enemies, and even more so toward those who dared to betray him. The wounds that his body had incurred could not begin to compare to the pain in his heart!

What he desired was not just Sovereign Chen Ling's death. He wanted to crush the latter's soul entirely and show him despair!

This was his pride as the highest leader of the Spirit Tribe!

“We understand!” Ancient Sage Mo Ling and Ancient Sage Hao Xun nodded before taking a step back.

They knew of Sovereign Chen Yong's feelings, but watching as it unfolded before their eyes left them feeling a little melancholic.

In the days that they had spent with Sovereign Chen Yong, they had come to realize just how severe his wounds were. It was really no easy feat for him to have survived up to this point. Another battle at that moment would really spell his end!

Despite knowing that certain death awaited him regardless of victory or defeat, he still stepped forward to fight the battle, all just to uphold the pride in his heart.

Perhaps it was this very trait of his that allowed him to rise as the highest leader of the Spirit Tribe and unite his tribesmen.

[1] Ling means Spirit.

# 1841 Succession

Boom boom boom!

As the final duel between the two Sovereigns began, countless lacerations appeared in the sky. Amid the massive outpour of energy, one could vaguely see some hints of crimson blood dripping to the ground.

The crowd watched with heavy hearts as Sovereign Chen Yong's face turned paler and paler by the moment as he pushed his tattered body beyond the limits.

He had yet to recover from the grievous wounds that he had sustained from the encirclement of countless experts back at the Temple of Confucius when he faced many more battles, and it had only been a moment ago when he was struck squarely by the deity. It was no exaggeration to say that he was already dried up on the inside.

It was really on sheer willpower that he was still standing.

“Sigh...” Zhang Xuan shook his head as he averted his gaze, unwilling to watch the duel any longer.

Despite the close fight between the two experts, he was certain that Sovereign Chen Yong would emerge victorious and slay Sovereign Chen Ling with his own hands.

A fight to the death between two equal experts eventually boiled down to a clash of willpower, and Sovereign Chen Yong's willpower was definitely greater.

At that moment, Zhang Xuan felt deeply conflicted inside. During his time with Sovereign Chen Yong, he had come to respect the latter as a person. Despite the grudges between mankind and the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe, there was no question that Sovereign Chen Yong was an amazing figure. To be honest, he could not bear to see Sovereign Chen Yong meeting his end.

However, to mankind, Sovereign Chen Yong's demise was probably the best outcome for them. Otherwise, as long as this

lynchpin holding the entire Otherworldly Demonic Tribe survived, mankind would always remain in a perilous position.

Sighing deeply, Zhang Xuan turned his attention to the corpse on the ground.

Just like Vicious' body, the corpse of the deity was astoundingly resilient, making it nigh impossible to leave any damage on it. Even though life had already receded from it, it continued to emanate a fearsome aura that kept ordinary humans away from it.

Even Zhang Xuan, who wielded powers equivalent to a Blood Reincarnation realm expert, still felt deeply pressured just by coming close to the corpse.

After swiftly scanning the deity's body, Zhang Xuan shook his head in disappointment.

He had thought that there would be a lot of good items on the deity given that he had come from a higher dimension, but who could have known that the latter would have nothing on him at all?

In fact, there was not even a storage ring to be seen at all.

It's probably because bringing one's possessions across dimensions is either impossible or extremely costly, Zhang Xuan thought as he threw the corpse into his storage ring with a wave of his hand.

While it was regrettable that there were no other treasures to be harvested, the body itself could already be considered as a precious treasure. If he could refine it into a Soulless Metal Humanoid, he would be literally unmatched on the Master Teacher Continent!

Boom boom!

Shortly after Zhang Xuan had finished inspected the deity's body, the battle between the two Sovereigns was also coming to an end. Just as Zhang Xuan had thought, even though Sovereign Chen Ling had recovered significantly from his injuries, he was still no match for the severely wounded Sovereign Chen Yong.

Puhe!

With the flash of a saber, Sovereign Chen Ling's head was lopped in the air. Even as it fell to the ground, one could see disbelief in his eyes.

“H-how could this... be? You are... stronger...”

Those were Sovereign Chen Ling's final words before his eyes slowly closed.

In his final moments, he felt as if everything that he had pursued had been nothing but a distant dream. No matter how much he fought and struggled, even till the very end, he had been unable to surpass the towering figure of Sovereign Chen Yong, not even once.

Putong!

Sovereign Chen Ling's body collapsed lifelessly to the ground.

Seeing that the Young Master was eyeing Sovereign Chen Ling's corpse with glowing eyes, Sovereign Chen Yong hurriedly moved his wearied body over and said, “Young Master, even though Sovereign Chen Ling has done many misdeeds in his life, he's still one of the Sovereigns of the Spirit Tribe. I wish to bury him in the royal mausoleum.”

Despite Sovereign Chen Ling's betrayal, he had still been one of the Sovereigns of the Spirit Tribe. In accordance to the traditions of the Spirit Tribe, he had to be buried in the royal mausoleum.

If he allowed Zhang Xuan to forge a Soulless Metal Humanoid out of Sovereign Chen Ling's corpse, the dignity of the Spirit Tribe would be completely shattered.

“I guess it can't be helped!” Zhang Xuan nodded as he turned his head away regretfully.

“Thank you, Young Master!” Sovereign Chen Yong heaved a sigh of relief before sitting weakly on the ground.

As soon as he sat down, he felt every last bit of energy receding from his body, as if water flowing out of a leaking sack. His cultivation rapidly fell, and it seemed as if he was ageing swiftly.

“Yang Liu, come here...” Sovereign Chen Yong beckoned weakly to the successor that he had chosen.

“Your Majesty...” Liu Yang walked up with reddened eyes.

He had not spent much time with Sovereign Chen Yong, but the latter had always treated him earnestly. He was indebted to the latter.

“My end is coming. You are the only successor of the lineage of Sovereign Chen Yong, and I have imparted my complete heritage to you. I shall bestow upon you one final gift!”

As he said those words, he lifted his palm and grasped at Liu Yang.

Hula!

Liu Yang immediately felt the surrounding space freezing on him, leaving him unable to move at all.

As if knowing what Sovereign Chen Yong was going to do, Liu Yang exclaimed in panic, “Your Majesty!”

After trapping Liu Yang in place, Sovereign Chen Yong turned to Zhang Xuan and asked, “Young Master, may I borrow your Aeon of Ancient Sage?”

Without any hesitation, Zhang Xuan took out the Canvas of Four Seasons and tossed it over.

Sovereign Chen Yong slowly unrolled the painting and drew out a surge of energy from within. After which, he inched forward a little and placed his palm on Liu Yang’s forehead.

Hong long!

All of the energy within his body began pouring into the body of the immobilized young man.

“It’s Cultivation Impartation! He knows that his end is coming, and he doesn’t wish for the cultivation that he has built up over the span of his life to disappear into nothing, Thus, he wishes to impart everything to his successor!” Ancient Sage Allfire exclaimed.

Cultivation Impartation was the process in which an expert passed on their cultivation to someone else. As convenient as

it sounded, the process was extremely complicated and came with major risks.

Firstly, the two people involved in the Cultivation Impartation had to be from the same lineage in order to ensure that there was no clash in their energies. Secondly, the person conducting the Cultivation Impartation had to carry the resolve to die, or else a half-assed attempt would only bring irreversible damage to both parties. Thirdly, the control of energy had to be extremely precise as the slightest degree of error could result in severe consequences.

The cultivation technique that Liu Yang practiced was a simplified version of the Heaven's Path Divine Art. Even though he was unable to change the nature of his energy as freely as Zhang Xuan, he was indeed able to imitate the zhenqi of Sovereign Chen Yong's lineage very closely. This was also the main reason for Sovereign Chen Yong choosing him as his successor in the first place.

If not for that, Sovereign Chen Yong would never have dared conduct a Cultivation Impartation with Liu Yang. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

Boom!

Under the humongous influx of energy, Liu Yang's Sempiternal realm consummation cultivation began to loosen. As the Aeon of Ancient Sage flowed into his body, the bottleneck that limited him burst open.

Boom!

Ancient Sage, reached!

Knowing that the Ancient Sage Ordeal would arrive at any moment, Sovereign Chen Yong did not dare waste any time. He continued infusing more and more energy frenziedly into Liu Yang's body, causing the latter's cultivation to soar.

With his cultivation reaching Ancient Sage, Liu Yang's meridians had become significantly wider, allowing him to absorb energy at a faster rate.

Roughly ten minutes later, Sovereign Chen Yong was finally done imparting every last droplet of his energy into Liu Yang's body, leaving him completely dry inside.

Kacha!

At that moment, the lightning tribulation arrived.

Liu Yang swiftly rose into the air to fend off the lightning tribulation.

The process lasted nearly an hour before Liu Yang descended from the sky. Even though he looked a bit ragged, he had managed to overcome his cultivation ordeal without much trouble, thus becoming a full-fledged Ancient Sage.

"I have given you all my power. Slowly assimilate it, and you should be able to easily achieve a breakthrough to the Blood Reincarnation realm within a single month..."

After losing all of his energy, Sovereign Chen Yong looked as if he had aged several decades. His previous regal appearance had been reduced to that of a frail old man who would have trouble lifting even a single hand.

"Thank you, Your Majesty!" Liu Yang kneeled on the floor and kowtowed deeply.

Even though the other party was an Otherworldly Demon, at that very moment, he felt as if tears would pour from his eyes.

While it was probably impossible for Sovereign Chen Yong to recover, with his teacher's miraculous medical skills, it should not be too difficult for the other party to live at least a few more years. However, Sovereign Chen Yong's very act of infusing the very last droplet of his energy into him meant that such a hope was dashed as well. Most likely, he would not even survive the day.

"I'll be leaving the Spirit Tribe in your hands... Please, take care of it well in my stead!" Sovereign Chen Yong smiled softly. "From today onward, you will take my place as Sovereign Chen Yong!"

As he said those words, he lifted his wrinkled hand and placed it atop Liu Yang's head. A crown materialized under his touch,

emanating a might that none would dare disregard.

This was the symbol of authority for the highest leader of the Spirit Tribe.

Sovereign Chen Yong was not a name but a title. Anyone who inherited the crown would be respected as the great Sovereign Chen Yong.

“I...” Liu Yang’s body trembled in agitation.

There were so many things that he wanted to say, but it felt as if something was clogging up his throat, rendering him mute.

“I made up my mind from the moment I challenged Sovereign Chen Ling to a duel...” Sovereign Chen Yong shook his head.

But halfway through his words, a gale of wind suddenly sounded from afar. A figure was flitting swiftly in their direction.

“Sovereign Chen Xing?”

Upon recognizing the figure, a deep frown appeared on everyone’s face as their body tensed up warily.

# 1842 Sovereign Chen Xing

Sovereign Chen Xing had always taken a neutral position, choosing to side with no one. However, this time, he had paired up with Sovereign Chen Ling in order to assassinate Sovereign Chen Yong. This had already infringed on Sovereign Chen Yong's bottom line.

His original intention had been to deal with Sovereign Chen Ling first before confronting Sovereign Chen Xing, but the abrupt turn of events had made it impossible for his initial plans to come to fruition. Yet, who would have thought that Sovereign Chen Xing would suddenly arrive just when everything was starting to settle down?

Just as everyone was eyeing Sovereign Chen Xing warily, fearing that he would start something, Sovereign Chen Xing suddenly knelt onto the floor and cried out, "I have come to make up for my sins, Sovereign Chen Yong. This is the lower body of Sovereign Vicious. I gathered it as an apology for my earlier foolishness!"

With a flick of his wrist, two skeletal legs materialized in front of Sovereign Chen Xing. They emanated incredibly powerful auras.

They were the two feet of Vicious.

To think that they had actually been in Sovereign Chen Xing's possession all along!

"Defecting as soon as you see that things aren't going your way? How convenient!" Ancient Sage Allfire scoffed derisively.

He had always had a fiery temper, and he could not stand seeing prideless individuals who switched sides conveniently to latch onto whoever was more powerful.

Despite Ancient Sage Allfire's ridicule, Sovereign Chen Xing's head remained firmly lowered as he echoed his words

once more. “I’m willing to accept any punishment that you have for me, Sovereign Chen Yong!”

Given that he was still severely injured from the surprise assault that Sovereign Chen Yong had launched on him back at the Temple of Confucius, the loss of his ally, Sovereign Chen Ling, was a huge blow to him.

Furthermore, he knew that he was the next target on the hit list. Even if Sovereign Chen Yong died at that moment, his successor and allies would make sure to hunt him down to exact vengeance.

“Even with the huge commotion going on in the capital, you remained safely out of sight. You were waiting for the result of the battle in order to find out who you should be sucking up to next, weren’t you?” Zhang Xuan remarked with a hint of disdain in his voice.

The fight that had transpired earlier had rattled the entire capital. As one of the three Sovereigns, there was no way that Sovereign Chen Xing would have been unaware of the happenings.

Yet, he had chosen not to appear until the very end, when Sovereign Chen Ling was dead through and through. Very clearly, he had only ever intended to appear once everything had died down.

If Sovereign Chen Ling had been the one to survive, most likely, he would have run over with the exact same treasure in order to beg for mercy.

“I have always been the weakest of the Three Sovereigns. This is the only way that I can ensure the survival of my lineage!” Sovereign Chen Xing replied with his head lowered.

Sovereign Chen Yong shook his head silently. He turned to Liu Yang and asked, “How do you think he should be dealt with?”

Such a question could be said to be a test to assess the capability of his successor.

“He colluded with Sovereign Chen Ling to assassinate you, Your Majesty. That is a blatant violation of the rules that have upheld the peace among our Spirit Tribe for many years. Even

if you are willing to forgive him, Your Majesty, the fact that he has placed the safety of our entire tribe at stake warrants punishment. We cannot allow such a thing to pass by so easily!” Liu Yang shook his head. “Otherwise, this incident will diminish the legitimacy of our rules and encourage others to follow his behavior. My view is that we should have him killed, just like Sovereign Chen Ling!”

Rules were mere words. What gave power and legitimacy to the rules was their enforcement.

Each time a rule failed to be enforced, the legitimacy behind it would be diminished. Without rules to hold the masses in place, how were the Sovereigns going to establish their dominance over the entire Spirit Tribe?

Some might even attempt to question the legitimacy of the Three Sovereigns’ rule!

Not expecting that things would turn out this way even after he had offered Vicious’ lower body, Sovereign Chen Xing’s face paled in fear. “Sovereign Chen Yong, I beg you to spare my life... I was beguiled by Sovereign Chen Ling...”

“As a Blood Reincarnation realm cultivator and one of the Three Sovereigns, do you truly expect me to believe that you were beguiled by another?” Liu Yang spat contemptuously. “Do you think that the world will accept such a reason?”

As one of the Three Sovereigns, how could Sovereign Chen Xing be shaken by another person so easily?

If that was truly the case, the many years that he had spent cultivating would have been in vain!

Ultimately, all he gave were mere excuses.

The situation was very simple. Sovereign Chen Ling had invited him to make a move, and he had been attracted by the potential benefits that he stood to gain should the operation succeed. After all, if Sovereign Chen Yong die, he would be able to acquire a portion of the authority and resources that Sovereign Chen Yong possessed.

It was just that he had bet on the wrong side and lost, thus resulting in the current circumstances.

“I’ll abide by the will of the new Sovereign Chen Yong,” Sovereign Chen Yong said as he heaved a sigh of relief. He was gladdened by the fact that his successor was not an indecisive individual.

All along, he had been worried about the repercussions of quelling Sovereign Chen Ling and Sovereign Chen Xing, so he had opted to get along with them peacefully, despite being vaguely aware of the malicious intentions that they were likely to harbor toward him. Had he been more decisive in dealing with Sovereign Chen Ling and Sovereign Chen Xing, none of this would have happened in the first place.

Knowing that his successor was unlikely to follow in his footsteps comforted him greatly.

Liu Yang nodded and turned to Ancient Sage Mo Ling and Ancient Sage Allfire. “May I trouble the two of you to make a move in my stead? I’ll repay this favor in the future!”

Boom!

Seeing that the verdict had been made, Sovereign Chen Xing decisively turned tail and ran.

Before he could get very far, a massive inferno descended from the sky, blocking his path, and right behind him, Ancient Sage Mo Ling and Ancient Sage Allfire were hot on his tail.

It took less than ten minutes for the two experts to slay Sovereign Chen Xing.

In the first place, Sovereign Chen Xing was the weakest of the Three Sovereigns, and he had yet to recover from the injuries that he had sustained at the Temple of Confucius. There was no way that he could have stood a chance against the collaboration of the two powerful Blood Reincarnation realm Ancient Sages.

“Young Master...” Seeing that the problem concerning Sovereign Chen Xing had finally been resolved, Sovereign Chen Yong finally turned his gaze to Zhang Xuan. “I’ll have Yang Liu lead the tribesmen toward a peaceful coexistence with mankind. I implore you to show mercy to my tribesmen...”

In truth, what he was most worried about was not the other two Sovereigns but Zhang Xuan.

Given the rate at which Zhang Xuan was growing, he was bound to become another Kong shi in due course. By then, the Spirit Tribe would be completely helpless toward him.

If he willed it, the Spirit Tribe could disappear from history.

Perhaps, Zhang Xuan might still spare the Spirit Tribe while Sovereign Chen Yong was still alive in view of the ties between them. However, once he was gone, there would be nothing left to stop Zhang Xuan from making a move on the Spirit Tribe.

Furthermore, the successor that he had chosen was simply too weak. If Zhang Xuan bore malicious intentions toward him, it would really be the end.

Thus, as long as Zhang Xuan was around, the Spirit Tribe would have to lie low.

The fact that the fate of the entire Spirit Tribe could be dictated by the will of a single man left Sovereign Chen Yong feeling deeply helpless and indignant, but it was impossible to change the situation. No matter how he felt about the issue, he knew that he had no choice but to accept the current situation.

“Rest assured, I don’t intend to make a move on the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe as long as your tribesmen keep themselves in line,” Zhang Xuan said.

To be honest, Zhang Xuan had already achieved his goal of resolving the threat of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe once and for all.

Due to his impartation, Little Tribulation had become a frightening adversity for the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe. It could be foreseen that the number of Saint 9-dan experts in their ranks would become fewer and fewer, and before long, they would no longer pose a threat to mankind.

Not to mention, the newly-appointed Sovereign Chen Yong was his own student! With this, he would be able to dictate the politics of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe and swiftly quell any factions who wished to bring harm to mankind.

Since the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe was no longer a threat, there was no need to go to the extremes. Instead, their existence would prevent mankind from becoming too complacent and falling into depravity, thus ensuring the continued prosperity of mankind.

“Thank you, Young Master!” Knowing that Zhang Xuan would hold true to his promise, Sovereign Chen Yong heaved a sigh of relief. He quickly turned to his successor and said, “Hurry up and thank the young master for his benevolence!”

Liu Yang quickly kneeled down. “Thank you, Zhang shi!”“Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

“Enough. There’s no need to employ such means on me—I won’t renege on the promises that I’ve made. Now, tell me, how can I contact Ruoxin?” Zhang Xuan asked.

Since the matter regarding the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe had finally been resolved, it was time for him to deal with his private affairs.

“If you wish to contact the Spirit God, you have to set up an altar on Thousandleaf Mountain,” Sovereign Chen Yong explained.

“Thousandleaf Mountain?” Zhang Xuan frowned.

He had heard of that mountain the first time that he went to the otherworldly battlefield. It was the tallest mountain over there, piercing tens of thousands of meters into the sky.

“Indeed. This mountain is closest to the heavens, so it’s easier to reach the deities by holding rituals there,” Sovereign Chen Yong explained. “Yang Liu, I’ve already imparted the way to conduct the ritual to you. Take the young master there with me. I’ll preside over the ritual.”

“Alright!” Liu Yang nodded. He turned to the side to issue some instructions to a nearby Sempiternal realm cultivator before picking Sovereign Chen Yong up. After which, he turned to Zhang Xuan and ushered him respectfully. “This way please!”

“Un!”

Just like that, the group began setting off under Liu Yang’s lead.

Ancient Sage Mo Ling and Ancient Sage Allfire hesitated for a brief moment before choosing to follow along.

# 1843 Meeting the Spirit God Once More?

Thousandleaf Mountain consisted of sharp cliffs that rose into the sky, reminiscent of spears planted into the ground.

“It’s rumored that Kong shi once fought with a deity in this mountain range, and this was caused by the other party throwing a weapon down,” Ancient Sage Mo Ling remarked as they flew through the mountain range.

Zhang Xuan also could not help but be bewildered by the bizarre geography in the area.

It did not take long for the group to arrive at the highest mountain peak. There was a flat plateau of roughly thirty for visiting.

The silhouette lowered her gaze to look at Zhang Xuan once more.

“The Spirit God instructed you to offer me any help that I require, right?” Zhang Xuan asked.

The silhouette frowned a little, but she eventually nodded in response. “That’s right. However, I’ll only make a move once, so think it over. Don’t waste this precious opportunity.”

“I have already made up my mind!” Zhang Xuan said with a wave of his hand. He pointed at Sovereign Chen Yong and said, “This person over here is Wu Chen, a subordinate serving the Spirit God in this world. He has sustained severe injuries and is on the brink of death. I implore you to save him.”

“Young Master...” Hearing those words, Sovereign Chen Yong’s eyes reddened a little. 1 mu = 666.6m<sup>2</sup>

# 1844 He's My Student

The extent of Sovereign Chen Yong's injuries was horrifying. Not only were his foundations completely ruined, even his soul had started to dissipate as a result of the overwhelming traumas that he had sustained!

When Sovereign Chen Yong decided to go against the two Sovereigns and exact vengeance, he had never intended to continue living after dealing with them. Who could have thought that his young master would actually grant such a precious opportunity to him?

If he had only acknowledged Zhang Xuan due to his relationship with the Spirit God previously, at that very moment, he had really submitted to the other party at heart.

Even though his young master was unreliable at times, and he would often disregard rules and conventions, he was a person who stood by his principles. No matter how difficult things got, that was one thing that he would never abandon!

Perhaps this was where his true charm lay. It might be why his disciples and tamed beasts willingly devoted their lives to him.

"Teacher..." Liu Yang clenched his fists tightly.

If he had been in his teacher's position, he would never have given away the opportunity bestowed by the deity so easily to save the life of another. It seemed like there was still a huge gap between the two of them.

"It's an honor to have a master like this!" Ancient Sage Allfire also nodded in agitation.

What was most fearsome for a tamed beast was for it to have entrusted their life into the hands of someone who cared not for their wellbeing. But along the way, his master had been shown to be extremely thoughtful and considerate, and he had never forced him to do anything against his will after that either. He would willingly give up his life for such a master!

The same thoughts surfaced in Ancient Sage Mo Ling's mind as well. Everyone who witnessed the scene had some thoughts of their own, and complex emotions rippled in their eyes.

"Young Master, there's no reason to save me. Don't waste such a precious opportunity on me..." Sovereign Chen Yong struggled to shake his head.

He knew how invaluable the favor of a cultivator could be. If Zhang Xuan just asked for power, he might even be able to achieve an immediate breakthrough to the Dimension Shatterer realm! It was a waste to use this precious opportunity on a dying person like him.

"I can decide for myself whether this is worth it or not!" Zhang Xuan said before turning to the silhouette in the sky. "How about it? Since the Spirit God has asked you to help me, surely you won't turn down my request, right?"

"He..." The silhouette lowered her gaze to look at Sovereign Chen Yong before asking with a deep frown, "Are you sure this is your request?"

"I am certain." Zhang Xuan nodded.

"Very well then..."

The silhouette pondered for a brief moment before continuing. "His lifeforce has been severely depleted, such that it's impossible for him to survive in this energy-deficient world anymore. His only chance is for me to take him to the Azure. However, I'll suffer the backlash of the laws of this world if I attempt to breach the dimension barrier and bring someone over... I'll bring his soul over and try to mend it, but there's nothing I can do about his body!"

"That's fine by me." Zhang Xuan heaved a sigh of relief.

As a soul oracle, he knew that the foundation of life lay within the soul. As long as the soul remained existent, it would just take a bit of effort to construct a suitable body for one.

"Alright then."

The silhouette lowered her hand and grasped lightly.

The next moment, Sovereign Chen Yong's head crooked to one side as he breathed his last breath. However, his soul appeared in the grasp of the silhouette before being swiftly sealed by a unique surge of energy.

Boom!

After that was done, the silhouette slowly rose back into the dimension rift as she faded more and more. She was going to breach the dimension barrier and return to her world.

All of a sudden, she stopped for a moment and said, "I finally understand why the Spirit God feels so deeply for you... However, your journey to seek her will be fraught with difficulties. I hope that you can persist regardless of the hardship you face..."

After saying her piece, her silhouette dissipated on the spot, vanishing without a trace together with Sovereign Chen Yong's soul.

"I will..." Looking at the slight traces of light lingering in the area, Zhang Xuan clenched his fists.

Hu!

The light finally scattered entirely, signaling the end of the ritual.

Zhang Xuan stood quietly on the spot in a melancholic mood.

Even though he had failed to receive exact news regarding Luo Ruoxin, he had come to understand that the journey that he had to walk together with her was fraught with many difficulties... and the very first trial for him was to achieve a breakthrough to the Dimension Shatterer realm!

Only when he reached that level would he have a chance to ascend to a higher dimension and seek his loved one.

"Master!"

"Guild leader!"

Ancient Sage Allfire and Ancient Sage Mo Ling rushed over and called out.

Zhang Xuan turned around to look at the two of them.

“The Three Sovereigns of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe have been eliminated, thus leaving them without a leader at the moment. Even though Yang Liu has been acknowledged as the successor of Sovereign Chen Yong, in terms of experience and cultivation, he’s still far lacking at the moment. Why don’t we just...” Ancient Sage Mo Ling suggested as killing intent flashed across his eyes.

For many generations, their Soul Oracle Guild had lived among the Otherworldly Demons, enduring hardship and humiliation so that they would be able to eliminate them one day. At that very moment, the opportunity had been delivered to their hands. With their guild leader’s capabilities, he should be able to overthrow Yang Liu and easily take his place!

Hearing the words of those two, Zhang Xuan shook his head and chuckled softly before calling out. “Liu Yang!”

Liu Yang immediately rushed up to Zhang Xuan and kneeled on the floor. “Disciple Liu Yang pays respect to Zhang laoshi!”

“Disciple? Zhang laoshi?”

The two Ancient Sages glanced at one another in bewilderment. They could not understand what was going on.

When did Zhang Xuan take in that newly appointed Sovereign Chen Yong as his disciple?

“I am Zhang laoshi’s direct disciple. I have been under his tutelage since a year ago...” Liu Yang explained with a smile as he drove his cultivation technique back to normal.

Gradually, the killing intent on him vanished, and his height also diminished as well. It did not take him long to return to his original appearance.

“Y-you... You are a human?” Ancient Sage Mo Ling widened his eyes in disbelief.

“That’s right!” Liu Yang nodded.

There were no outsiders there, so there was no need for him to hide the truth.

Ancient Sage Mo Ling and Ancient Sage Allfire were flabbergasted by this abrupt turn of events.

Sovereign Chen Yong was a wary man, and he had never allowed any spies to get to his side. The lineage of soul oracles had managed to infiltrate the ranks of the other two Sovereigns over the years, but none of them had ever gotten close to Sovereign Chen Yong. Yet, who could have known that the successor whom Sovereign Chen Yong found in his later years would actually be Zhang Xuan's direct disciple?

Did this not mean that the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe was already effectively under their control?

“Alright, I believe none of you should have any objections anymore. Liu Yang has just been appointed as Sovereign Chen Yong, so there's bound to be many voices opposing his leadership. Thus, I need the two of you to support him for the time being. Quell the voices of all opposing Liu Yang's rule within a month and unite the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe. He should be the one and only leader of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe!” Zhang Xuan instructed firmly.

While Sovereign Chen Ling and Sovereign Chen Xing had been killed, they still had many subordinates under them. Furthermore, the Lords of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe wielded considerable power in their jurisdiction. Given that Liu Yang had just accepted Sovereign Chen Yong's heritage and had not gained stable footing yet, he would require the support of those two Blood Reincarnation realm experts in order to build his prestige and reputation.

With their assistance, there should be no one in the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe who would be able to stand against Liu Yang. Soon enough, Liu Yang would become the one and only Sovereign of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe!

“Rest assured, we'll surely give our full support to Young Master Liu Yang in uniting the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe!” Ancient Sage Mo Ling and Ancient Sage Allfire nodded in agreement.

“Alright, let's go. I need to go into seclusion for a moment. Come and look for me after you have calmed down the rebels

and united the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe as one!” Zhang Xuan said with a wave of his hand.

The crowd nodded in agreement.

Uniting the individual factions of the Three Sovereigns was no easy task, but with their feat of having slain a deity, as well as Sovereign Chen Yong’s dying will, they had legitimacy on their side. It should not be too difficult for Liu Yang to garner the support of the general populace.

Watching as the crowd left, Zhang Xuan sat quietly on the spot for quite a while before entering the Myriad Anthive Nest.

Now that he finally had some time on his hand, it would be a good opportunity for him to try refining the corpse of the deity into a Soulless Metal Humanoid.

At the same time, he would give the legs and the feet that he had just obtained from Sovereign Chen Xing to Vicious for him to assimilate. Perhaps, by observing Vicious’ recovery, he might be able to figure out a way to achieve a breakthrough to the Dimension Shatterer realm.

# 1845 A Month Later

With his mind drifting amid the massive corpse, Zhang Xuan's state of mind grew more and more stable. At the same time, his soul was becoming increasingly harmonized with his consciousness.

This was already the twentieth day since he had started refining the deity's corpse.

When he first took the deity's corpse out, putting aside refining it, it had been hard for his soul to even approach it. However, after many days of hard work, his soul was finally able to move freely around the deity's corpse, allowing him to gain full control over it.

“Dimension Shatterer realm cultivators are indeed formidable. There's a fundamental difference in their fundamental constitution from that of other Ancient Sages...”

In his many days of observation, Zhang Xuan had learned that the bulk of a Dimension Shatterer realm expert's prowess originated not from their superior concentration of zhenqi or powerful soul but their formidable physical body. It was due to their physical body that they were able to travel through voids in space without sustaining any damage.

As a cultivator who had practiced the Heaven's Path Golden Body, the resilience of Zhang Xuan's body was comparable to that of Ancient Sage artifacts. However, there was still a huge gap compared to the body of the deity.

During the previous battle, he had been shocked at how the Dragonbone Divine Spear was unable to breach the deity's basic zhenqi defense. However, after studying the deity's corpse, he realized that even if he had breached the deity's basic zhenqi defense, he would not have been able to pierce through the other party's physical body. In other words, there was no way that he would have been able to inflict any damage on the other party.

It was fortunate that he had kept hold of a golden page, which had allowed him to turn the situation around during that crucial moment. Otherwise, things would have ended very differently.

“The meridians of the deity’s body actually bear some resemblance to mine...”

Another observation that Zhang Xuan had made was that the meridian network in the deity’s body was much more logical than other cultivators in this world. It was actually very similar to the meridians in his body after he had altered them.

Such a meridian network allowed one to drive zhenqi much swifter than usual, which in turn brought about greater fighting prowess for an individual.

...

“The final step... assimilation!”

Another seven days passed. Knowing that the time was ripe, Zhang Xuan began preparing himself for the final step.

Hong long!

Zhang Xuan moved his soul into the corpse’s body and destroyed all of the remaining instinctive defensive mechanisms in it one by one.

Hula!

The massive corpse slowly opened its eyes. Zhang Xuan tried to control it a little, and the next moment, he felt boundless strength pouring forth from him.

“Even a Blood Reincarnation realm consummation expert would die from a single punch from this...” Zhang Xuan could hardly curb his excitement. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

He had yet to push for a breakthrough to Ancient Sage, opting to suppress his cultivation at Sempiternal realm consummation instead.

For a Sempiternal realm consummation expert to be able to kill a Blood Reincarnation realm consummation expert in a single punch... there was probably no one who would dare believe such a thing to be possible!

After spending some time relishing in the immense strength provided by the corpse, Zhang Xuan reluctantly pulled himself out from the corpse and returned to his physical body.

“This will be my greatest trump card from this moment on,” Zhang Xuan murmured excitedly.

With this, he had nothing to fear anymore!

“Master, I have already assimilated my legs and feet. My current strength is only a step away from reaching the Dimension Shatterer realm. With the right impetus, I should be able to achieve a breakthrough right away!” Vicious said.

After entering the Myriad Anthive Space, he had given the legs and feet to Vicious. Over the past month, Vicious had managed to assimilate them entirely, and his cultivation had also risen beyond the level of ordinary Blood Reincarnation realm consummation cultivators.

“I have ten bottles of blood from Blood Reincarnation realm Otherworldly Demons. Absorb them together with the straw garment, and you should be able to regenerate your flesh and push for a breakthrough to the Dimension Shatterer realm!” Zhang Xuan said as he passed a couple of jade bottles over.

Fortunately, he had collected plenty of Ancient Sage blood in the previous few battles. It should be sufficient for Vicious to make a full recovery.

“Thank you, Master!” Vicious said in gratitude as he took the jade bottles.

He had intended to assimilate the straw garment a long time ago, but he had found that he was lacking sufficient energy to fully recover his body, so he had chosen to put it off for the time being. With everything in place now, he could finally attempt a complete recovery once and for all.

After passing the jade bottles to Vicious, Zhang Xuan left the other party alone. This was not something that he could help

with; the other party had to figure out how he could recover by himself.

Sitting on the floor, Zhang Xuan began to ruminate over his recent gains. Slowly, his aura began to become more and more elusive, transforming from a sharp edge to something simple and unimpressive.

At that very moment, even Blood Reincarnation realm experts would have trouble seeing through his true strength.

“All in all, factoring in my physical body, zhenqi, soul, and my clone, I have undergone four Ancient Sage Ordeals in total. If I wish to achieve another breakthrough, I’ll have to make a significant advancement in a certain law of the world or comprehend a skill surpassing that of the Heaven’s Path techniques!”

It was because Zhang Xuan’s physical body, zhenqi, and soul cultivation had all reached a level comparable to an Ancient Sage that he could brandish strength comparable to Blood Reincarnation realm cultivators despite being only at the Sempiternal realm.

However, none of that was enough for him. He had chosen not to achieve a breakthrough because he wanted to surpass the heavens in the comprehension of one of the laws.

He knew that this was the only way that he could surpass Kong shi’s accomplishments and reach the very pinnacle of mankind. He would require at least that much if he wanted to reach Luo Ruoxin.

“But how can I create a skill that surpasses the Heaven’s Path techniques?” Zhang Xuan shook his head in distress.

The only way that he could surpass the Heaven’s Path techniques was for him to first uncover his own path. Despite his unparalleled talent that allowed him to master any technique in an instant, it was no easy feat for him to create something significant of his own, not to mention that he was aiming to surpass the very top.

He ruminated over the issue for several days, but nothing came to his mind at all. Eventually, he had no choice but to leave the

Myriad Anthive Nest and return to the peak of the Thousandleaf Mountain in disappointment.

“Thinking back, more than a month has already passed. I wonder how Liu Yang and the others are faring at the moment...”

After spending more than a month in cultivation, Zhang Xuan felt as if his body had gotten a little rusty. He was just about to go and check on how his student was doing after taking over the title of Sovereign Chen Yong when he suddenly noticed a shockwave not too far away. Following which, two figures swiftly flitted in his direction.

It was none other than Ancient Sage Mo Ling and Ancient Sage Allfire.

Over the past month, they had made significant advancements in their cultivation. However, what was most notable about them was the overpowering scent of death flowing from them. With just a glance, it was apparent that they had claimed many lives over the past month.

“We pay our respects!”

The man and the beast kneeled down deferentially and paid their respects.

“How is it?” Zhang Xuan got straight to the point.

“The young master has already successfully quelled the unrest of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe. Today is the day of that he’ll officially succeed the position of Sovereign Chen Yong!” Ancient Sage Allfire said.

“The Otherworldly Demon Lords from various places have also come to the capital to witness the young master’s inauguration ceremony. Guild Leader, do you want to head over to take a look too?” Ancient Sage Mo Ling asked expectantly.

“Inauguration ceremony? Very well!” Zhang Xuan nodded in satisfaction.

It seemed like Liu Yang had truly grown up. His direct disciple was much more rational in dealing with matters than he

thought.

While there was no denying that Liu Yang had Sovereign Chen Yong's mandate and he had also received the latter's Cultivation Impartation, his young age and insufficient cultivation were bound to have caused some dissatisfaction among the top brass of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe. There was no way that they were going to easily submit to a young brat who had not proven himself.

Thus, if he had rushed into conducting the inauguration ceremony, not only would he have been unable to rally others to his side, it might even have ended up as a farce, thus diminishing his authority.

However, after quelling the unrest and ensuring that no one dared to challenge his authority anymore, Liu Yang's inauguration would serve as the impetus to truly unite the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe. As the only Sovereign remaining, the entire Otherworldly Demonic Tribe would naturally converge around him. With such huge rallying power, no one would dare oppose him.

"As Liu Yang's teacher, there's no way I could miss the inauguration ceremony that pronounces his position as the sole leader of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe. Let's go!" Zhang Xuan said with a smile.

Liu Yang had always suffered from low self-esteem, thinking that he was inferior to his seniors and juniors. However, he had eventually broken out of his shell and achieved something significant. As his teacher, Zhang Xuan was more than proud of him. Of course, it went without saying that he had to go there in person to witness his student's glory.

# 1846 Assassins

That day, the royalty and nobles of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe were gathered in the capital, all for the purpose of commemorating the inauguration of the next Sovereign Chen Yong. The streets of the massive city were bustling, bringing an unprecedented vibrancy to the area.

From time to time, there would be an unfathomable expert walking across the wide streets that left any Saint 9-dan cultivators present trembling in fear. These were the Great Sages of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe.

Experts of that caliber usually dominated large swathes of land with none daring to oppose their domination. Yet, in the capital, they dared not act out of line. The newly appointed Sovereign Chen Yong had quelled all opposition against him and united the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe as one. All of the major powers and top experts had submitted to him.

If anyone dared cause any trouble... who could know if the person standing right next to them would be a widely feared Ancient Sage who had already submitted to the new Sovereign Chen Yong?

“The newly appointed Sovereign Chen Yong is truly a formidable figure unprecedented in the history of our Spirit Tribe. Back then, Sovereign Chen Ling and Sovereign Chen Yong colluded with the humans to injure the old Sovereign Chen Yong. In order to avenge his predecessor, he stood forward and confronted the two of them. Not only did he manage to unravel their scheme, he even destroyed a deity from a higher dimension with a single move, thus giving rise to his reputation of invincibility!”

On the streets, a storyteller waved the fan in his hand as he described the exploits of the new Sovereign Chen Yong with vivid gestures.

“Wait a moment, there seems to be something wrong with your story, isn’t there? I was present during the major battle

here in the capital a month ago, and I saw with my own eyes that the new Sovereign Chen Yong was only a Great Sage back then. There's no way that he could have interfered in a battle of that caliber back then. It was an unknown Ancient Sage who stood in and killed the deity!" a passerby challenged the storyteller.

It had only been a month since that major battle, and many in the capital had witnessed the sight with their own eyes. What they had seen varied vastly from what the storyteller had illustrated.

The former had been singing praises of the new Sovereign Chen Yong's accomplishments, but everyone who had spectated the battle knew that the person who had stood out the most during the battle was not the new Sovereign Chen Yong but an Ancient Sage whom no one had ever seen before.

Seeing that he had been challenged by one of the listeners, the storyteller asked with a smile, "Do you know who that unknown Ancient Sage is then?"

"I... I'm afraid that I don't really know!" the passerby replied with a shake of his head.

The other listeners also had slightly confused expressions on their faces.

"That man never said his name. In fact, he has not appeared since that day. Could it be that you know who that person is?" one of the listeners asked.

Upon hearing those words, the crowd's ears perked up.

The entire capital was filled with curiosity as to who that mysterious expert was. There was an itch in their hearts that would not be relieved until they finally knew the background of that mysterious expert.

"Of course I know!"

Seeing that he had managed to hook everyone's appetite, the storyteller chuckled softly as he stroked his beard gleefully. He tapped on the copper pot in front of him with his finger rhythmically, as if hinting something.

“Tell us!”

A slightly plump figure wearing a veil flicked his wrist and tossed a couple of Great Yong coins into the copper pot, producing a resounding ring.

Seeing that there was some money, the eyes of the storyteller lit up. He quickly slipped the Great Yong coins into his sleeves before leaning in to explain with a lowered voice, “It’s said that the mysterious Ancient Sage is Sovereign Chen Yong’s mentor. He’s an expert who had long gone into seclusion. It was under his tutelage that the new Sovereign Chen Yong was able to achieve the spectacular feat of uniting the entire Spirit Tribe despite his young age. Not only so, it’s said that the mysterious Ancient Sage even tamed Ancient Sage Allfire and made Ancient Sage Mo Ling submit to him. That is also why the two of them are so devoted to protecting the new Sovereign Chen Yong...”

“Sovereign Chen Yong’s teacher?”

“Are you sure you know what you’re talking about? The new Sovereign Chen Yong has received the heritage of the old Sovereign Chen Yong, so shouldn’t his mentor be the old Sovereign Chen Yong?”

Some of the listeners expressed their doubts toward the words of the storyteller.

“Of course not! The old Sovereign Chen Yong is indeed formidable; there’s no denying that. However, he isn’t qualified to become Sovereign Chen Yong’s teacher yet! In fact, I even heard that the old Sovereign Chen Yong even has to bow respectfully and address that person as ‘Young Master’!” the storyteller refuted.

“Even the old Sovereign Chen Yong calls him Young Master? Aren’t you getting a little too overboard with your bragging? Or do you mean to say that the mysterious Ancient Sage is actually a deity too?” the plump figure wearing a veil scoffed.

“Of course he’s a deity! If he isn’t a deity, how could he have killed the other deity that has come from a higher dimension so easily?” the storyteller replied matter-of-factly. “For the

past tens of thousands of years, other than our Spirit Tribe's Vicious and mankind's Kong shi, have you heard of anyone who wielded such power?"

Everyone was rendered speechless.

Deity.

Just the name itself was a symbol of invincibility.

In the entire history of the Master Teacher Continent, there were only two individuals who had managed to kill a deity.

Yet, an Ancient Sage had suddenly appeared in this era and easily killed a deity... It was hard to believe that the other party was not a deity himself!

"It's because the new Sovereign Chen Yong is a direct disciple of a deity that he has been able to unite our great Spirit Tribe together. It's a mandate from the heavens, the gods are favoring our Spirit Tribe! With such a leader, our Spirit Tribe will only rise higher and higher!" The storyteller became more and more zealous with each word.

"Indeed. It's an honor to be able to live in the same era as the new Sovereign Chen Yong!"

"A future of prosperity and greatness awaits our Spirit Tribe..."

"This is our generation, our era!"

...

The crowd trembled in agitation upon hearing those words.

"Humph! What bullsh\*t you are spouting? I say that you are intentionally crafting stories to beguile the hearts of others so as to rally them under the flag of..." the plump man harrumphed coldly.

But halfway through his words, he suddenly felt someone tugging on his clothes.

With a deep frown, he turned around, only to find himself faced with a tall and slender young lady dressed in humble wear. "Let's return!"

Taken aback, the plump man quickly stuffed the final piece of meat into his mouth before reasoning with the young lady. “What? Wait a moment. I came here to gather information, not to eat. Just give me a while more...”

What he was faced with was the icy voice of the young lady. “Senior told me to call you back. If you don’t want to head back, you can remain here for all eternity!”

“ ... ”

The plump man shuddered a little fearfully before hurriedly laughing it off. “Hahaha, what are you saying? How would I possibly dare to go against Senior’s orders? Let’s head over right now! It would be terrible to keep Senior waiting...”

Thus, the two of them took their leave. Under the lead of the young lady, they maneuvered through various alleys before finally arriving at a small courtyard. The young lady pushed the door to the courtyard open and walked in.

A little further from the entrance was a tightly sealed room. This room had been sealed using many unique means, such that it would be impossible for any sound or Spiritual Perception to enter or leave the room.

There were several people sat within the room. From their appearances, they were not Otherworldly Demons but humans.

Faced with the disapproving frown from the young lady seated at the middle of the room, the plump man scratched his head in embarrassment and explained, “Hehe, I just went out to gather some intelligence...”

“What intelligence have you gathered so far? Share it with us!” a young man seated by the side asked with a smile. Behind him was a spear reflecting a cold glint leaning diagonally against the wall.

“Well... it seems like the newly appointed Sovereign Chen Yong is truly a shrewd individual. Not only did he manage to take down all of his opposition, he even dispatched storytellers all over the capital to spread the news that he has the mandate of the heavens. At this very moment, pretty much everyone in the capital believes that he’s someone chosen by the heavens

to lead the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe to greatness!” the plump man said after pondering for a moment.

“I have heard of this matter as well. The new Sovereign Chen Yong is an extremely astute person. Under his lead, the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe will surely grow more and more powerful. This will indubitably place mankind in a perilous position!” the young man said with a frown.

He turned to the young lady in the center and asked, “Senior, what are your current thoughts?”“Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

“Given that the new Sovereign Chen Yong is just about to be inaugurated, he definitely needs all kinds of publicity in order to win the loyalty of the entire Otherworldly Demonic Tribe. It’s within our expectations for him to be spreading news like that!” The young lady tapped her finger lightly on the table.

“However, just as Zhang Yang has said, the unification of the Spirit Tribe doesn’t bode well for mankind. Thus... we have to make the first move! If we can assassinate him during the inauguration ceremony, we can spread chaos and discord among the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe and return them to the pile of scattered sand that they were!”

# 1847 The Plan

Assassinate?

Everyone's face immediately turned grim.

Making a move on the new Sovereign Chen Yong during the inauguration ceremony was practically a recipe for certain death. All of the strongest experts of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe were gathered there, and if things went wrong, all of them could end up dead!

“Do we have to do it during the inauguration ceremony?” the plump man asked in incomprehension. “Wouldn't our chances at victory be higher if we were to assault him at some other occasion?”

There was no doubt that the defenses around the new Sovereign Chen Yong would be extremely tight during the inauguration ceremony. Was it really suitable for them to do it at that moment?

“There are three benefits to it!”

The person who spoke then was not the young lady seated at the center but the other one who had brought the plump man over. “Firstly, the inauguration ceremony is one of the grandest celebrations of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe. If our assassination succeeds, all those rumors about the mandate of the heavens would be swiftly unraveled. This will cause the Otherworldly Demons, who have just been rallied together, to swiftly disperse. It will also make it much harder for anyone to unite the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe once more!”

The plump man nodded in agreement.

If the new Sovereign Chen Yong was killed shortly after all of the rumors about how he had the mandate of the heavens and so on, the effects would indeed be the most pronounced. Fear and panic would swiftly spread throughout the crowd, making the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe weaker than ever!

“Secondly, for the past tens of thousands of years, the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe has been under the shared leadership of the three Sovereigns. However, all of a sudden, it has turned into a one man show... While the new Sovereign Chen Yong has crushed all of the opposition thus far, and no one dares to oppose him due to the overwhelming strength that he wields... the problem is that he still lacks legitimacy. Not everyone will accept his rule. That’s also why he sent storytellers all around the capital to spread the word that he has the mandate of the heavens!” the young lady explained.

“The reason that they are causing such a huge commotion right now is out of fear that the new Sovereign Chen Yong will be unable to gain the support of the populace. As such, this might be our best chance to strike.”

“Our best chance to strike?” The plump man was unable to comprehend the leap in logic.

“Those who are opposed to Sovereign Chen Yong’s rule will surely be watching the inauguration ceremony as well. If they see someone make a move against the inaugurated Sovereign Chen Yong, there’s a good chance that they will be incited to create more chaos. If so, it will be much easier for us to succeed than if we conduct a surprise assault!” the young lady explained.

“This...” The plump man fell into deep thought.

In terms of understanding the minds of others, he was nowhere near those two young ladies.

If they factored that into the equation as well, their chances of success during the inauguration ceremony could very well be much higher.

The factions built up by Sovereign Chen Ling and Sovereign Chen Xing would not simply vanish just with the deaths of the two of them. Even if the new Sovereign Chen Yong had forced the members of those two factions to submit to him with force, there was a good chance that they would still view the new Sovereign Chen Yong with hostility.

Thus, if someone attempted an assassination on the new Sovereign Chen Yong right before them, they might just be more than willing to lend a hand.

“I’ll share the third point!” the young lady sitting at the center of the room said. “I caught sight of Ancient Sage Mo Ling and Ancient Sage Allfire hurriedly leaving the capital earlier this morning. The two of them are the strongest experts aiding the new Sovereign Chen Yong at the moment, and as long as they aren’t around, our chances of success are fairly high!”

“Those two old farts actually left prior to the inauguration ceremony? Aren’t they the protectors of the new Sovereign Chen Yong? How could they leave at such a crucial moment?” the plump man wondered in bewilderment.

“I’m not too certain about the exact reason either, but the chances are that they have left the area to quell some other rebellion so as to ensure that nothing goes wrong during the inauguration,” the young lady replied.

“Furthermore, based on my investigations, it seems like there’s a segment during the inauguration ceremony that requires the new Sovereign Chen Yong to pay respects to his predecessors. During the process, the new Sovereign Chen Yong must humbly listen to the teachings of his predecessor, so he cannot utilize his Spiritual Perception or zhenqi at all. In other words, this is an ideal opportunity for us to strike. As long as we plan things out well, we do stand a decent chance at success!”

Hearing the analysis, the plump man nodded and replied, “Since that’s the case... I’ll follow your plan, Senior!”

“Good. Since we have come to a consensus, let’s prepare ourselves!”

As she spoke, the young lady seated in the center stood up. She looked at the five faces before her and said, “I know what all of you are thinking... A while ago, our teacher was forced by the Hundred Schools of Philosophers to end his life in the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters due to his association with the Spirit God.

“We know that it’s just a concealment for him to sneak into the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe, but his injuries are simply so severe that it’s impossible for him to have recovered in such a short period. However, with the inauguration of the new Sovereign Chen Yong, the unification of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe is lying just around the corner. We don’t have time to look for our teacher anymore!

“Right now, what we have to do is kill the new Sovereign Chen Yong in the shortest time possible to eliminate this potential threat! This is the only way we can cleanse our teacher of his dishonor to let the Master Teacher Pavilion and the entire world know that our teacher has always been with mankind, and that has never changed at all. At the same time, only as our reputation grows will our teacher be able to find us more easily!”

Since they did not know where their teacher was, they would just have to stand at the most brilliant place possible so that their teacher would be able to find them!

“We understand!” the others replied in unison.

The group that was gathered in the room consisted of none other than Zhang Xuan’s six direct disciples.

Zhao Ya, Wang Ying, Zheng Yang, Wei Ruyan, Yuan Tao, and Lu Chong. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

It had been two months since their teacher ended his life at the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters. Fearing that something would happen to their teacher, a month ago, just like most other cultivators, they had descended into a Subterranean Gallery and launched an extensive search. However, they had still been unable to gather any news regarding their teacher despite their best efforts.

However, the investigation did bring the recent changes in the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe to their attention. They had noticed the threat that was brewing in the otherworldly battlefield and realized that it could be too late if they did not

make a move to curb the threat swiftly. Thus, they had chosen to gather in the capital to discuss a countermeasure.

“Since we have a common understanding over here, let’s swiftly share our current cultivation realms!” Zhao Ya said.

“Ever since our teacher departed, Zheng Yang has been spending his time cultivating in the Hall of Spring and Autumn, and he has already reached Ancient Sage 1-dan Bloodline Continuance realm consummation. In terms of fighting prowess, he should be on par with most Great Philosopher realm cultivators. There should be nothing wrong with my information, right?”

“That’s right,” Zheng Yang replied.

When he heard that his teacher had ended his life in the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters, while he knew that it was just a cover, the thought of the humiliation that his teacher had to bear had nearly driven him crazy.

Thus, he had locked himself in the Hall of Spring and Autumn and cultivated frenziedly. Due to his hard work and his various fortuitous encounters in the Temple of Confucius, he actually managed to achieve a breakthrough to Ancient Sage.

Following which, he spent almost a year within the Hall of Spring and Autumn reinforcing his cultivation, causing his cultivation to rise to Bloodline Continuance realm consummation.

Even though he was still only at Ancient Sage 1-dan, due to his superior cultivation techniques and battle techniques, his fighting prowess would not lose out to the average Ancient Sage 2-dan Great Philosopher realm cultivator!

“Zheng Yang, you and I will be the vanguard for the operation,” Zhao Ya said. She then turned her gaze to the other young lady sitting by the other side. “Ruyan, you have also achieved a breakthrough to Ancient Sage, right? While you aren’t as powerful as Lu Chong yet, your mastery of poison makes you a frightening opponent. Even Great Philosopher realm cultivators could die to your poison if they are caught unaware.”

The young lady whom Zhao Ya was addressing had remained extremely quiet throughout the entire conversation. She was none other than the disciple that possessed the Innate Poison Body and Poison Soul Constitution, Wei Ruyan.

Despite her silence, everyone knew that she was likely to be the most terrifying of them all in a real battle.

“Un. I’ll try to tie down the others to prevent them from supporting Sovereign Chen Yong. If any of them dare approach, my poison shall corrode them inside out. If I need to, I’ll even massacre the entire city!” Wei Ruyan remarked nonchalantly.

Even when she spoke of massacring the entire city, there was not the slightest change in her facial expression. It was almost as if she was speaking of crushing an ant.

Back in the Temple of Confucius, she had received her teacher’s heritage and the Bodhi Fruit, which had allowed her to achieve a breakthrough in her state of mind. Together with her fortuitous encounter back then, she had successfully pushed for a breakthrough to Ancient Sage a month ago. While she was slightly beneath Zheng Yang in terms of offensive ability, there was no doubt that her poison was an invaluable asset when it came to dealing with multiple enemies simultaneously.

Anyone who dared charge into the area of attack would simply succumb to her poison. This would render the numerical advantage of the new Sovereign Chen Yong’s forces absolutely meaningless.

“Alright, I’ll be counting on you for that. As for Yuan Tao, we’ll be relying on you for defense. When will your second Ancient Sage Ordeal come?” Zhao Ya turned to look at the plump man with a slight frown on her forehead.

Yuan Tao had already challenged the Ancient Sage Ordeal once at the Temple of Confucius, but he had forcefully suppressed it. Till now, his second Ancient Sage Ordeal had yet to come. In other words, despite his incredible potential, he had yet to reach Ancient Sage!

# 1848 Making a Move

“I... I’m not too sure either!” Yuan Tao scratched his head in embarrassment.

His seniors and juniors had all reached Ancient Sage, leaving him trailing at the back. This was extremely heart-wrenching for him!

For his cultivation to actually advance so slowly... he was really a shame to his teacher!

“If I knew, I wouldn’t have resorted to binge eating to console my wounded soul,” Yuan Tao muttered unhappily as he took out a fistful of assorted snacks and stuffed them into his mouth, creating annoying crunching sounds.

Ignoring this glutton, Zhao Ya turned to Lu Chong and worriedly asked, “I think that you might have improved a little too quickly over the past month. Do you feel uncomfortable anywhere?”

After Zhang Xuan departed, Lu Chong had reverted to his reticent state. His personality became extremely placid, almost like he was a corpse. Yet, as if he had injected himself with steroids, his cultivation rose by leaps and bounds!

Zheng Yang had managed to reach Ancient Sage 1-dan Bloodline Continuance realm consummation through exploiting the time acceleration in the Hall of Spring and Autumn, but Lu Chong... he had actually managed to reach Blood Reincarnation realm primary stage!

To reach such a level within the short span of a month... this was truly unbelievable!

Lu Chong shook his head and replied curtly. “I’m fine.”

“After reaching Ancient Sage, every single breakthrough requires a massive amount of energy. It’s not normal for you to advance your cultivation so quickly. If you fail to reinforce your cultivation properly, a huge problem could very well occur in the future,” Zheng Yang added with concern.

If he had to pick a fault with this junior of his, it would be that he was too reticent. He seemed to bottle up so much inside of him that it felt frustrating just to look at him.

If he could just share his problems, they might still be able to discuss it and offer some suggestions. However, this junior of his only stubbornly chose to keep everything to himself and put his all into cultivating. If the other party had never met their teacher, who knew what would have become of him now?

Seeing the looks everyone was shooting him, Lu Chong was silent for a moment before explaining, "Teacher gave me the Seal of Souls."

"Un." The crowd nodded in response.

Prior to his departure, Zhang Xuan had distributed all of the treasures that he had gathered in the Temple of Confucius to everyone.

The Seal of Souls was the insignia of the head of the Soul Oracle Guild, and Lu Chong did not hide the fact that he had obtained this from their teacher.

"Harnessed within the Seal of Souls is the concentrated soul energy derived from 110,000 souls of Saint 3-dan and above cultivators. I have spent the past month absorbing it, and that allowed my soul energy to grow swiftly," Lu Chong explained.

"110,000 souls?"

"And all of them are Saint 3-dan and above?"

Everyone was stunned.

They could not even begin to imagine how stupendously massive that amount of energy was. That explained how Lu Chong was able to advance his cultivation so quickly. With so much soul energy to fuel his cultivation, it would be hard for him not to improve swiftly!

"Prior to entering the Temple of Confucius, our teacher killed 110,000 Otherworldly Demon soldiers and resolved a crisis of mankind. Could these souls have come from there?" Zheng Yang suddenly asked.

As the Combat Master Hall kept a close eye on the situation in the Subterranean Galleries, he was well aware of his teacher's accomplishments there. 110,000 souls from Saint 3-dan and above cultivators could not possibly have come from nowhere, and the only incident that seemed to tally was that.

"That seems to be the case. Teacher didn't absorb anything at all and chose to leave everything to me instead..." Lu Chong nodded as he subconsciously clenched his fists.

He could not understand why his teacher would choose to leave so much energy to him instead of absorbing it for himself. Nevertheless, he vowed to use this gift for meaningful purposes.

Knowing that Lu Chong had gained his strength through proper means instead of forced growth, Zhao Ya heaved a sigh of relief. She pondered for a moment before saying, "Junior Lu Chong, given your cultivation, it would be best if you coordinated with me and Zheng Yang in attacking the new Sovereign Chen Yong. You'll be the main attacker, and the two of us will support you!"

Lu Chong nodded to indicate that he understood.

"As for Wang Ying..." Zhao Ya turned to Wang Ying and said, "Even though you only achieved a breakthrough to Ancient Sage not too long ago, in the twenty days since arriving at the capital, you should have familiarized yourself with the surroundings!"

"I have already enchanted all of the major buildings and city walls in the capital. They are all on standby, waiting for my command. As soon as the operation starts, all of the buildings and city walls will charge over and plunge the area into pandemonium!" Wang Ying replied with a chuckle.

During their few days in the capital, she had devoting most of her time enchanting everything in the surroundings.

"Furthermore, I have also buried the tree root in the ground. With a thought, I'll be able to transform the entire capital into a desert. Unless one has reached Ancient Sage, they will never be able to escape from the desert!"

Zhang Xuan had given Wang Ying the Berserk Sand Wood previously, and it was a true weapon of mass destruction.

“That’s good. Since all the preparations are ready, we shall set forth right now. Once we get to that part of the inauguration ceremony, be prepared to make a move at any moment!” Zhao Ya instructed grimly.

“Yes!” the crowd replied resoundingly as they rose to their feet grimly.

They could die in this battle, but failure was not permitted.

They quickly disguised themselves by altering their physical structure and appearances before returning to the streets. At that moment, the Otherworldly Demons were already making their way toward the square in front of Sovereign Chen Yong’s palace.

They swiftly blended into the crowd and followed them toward the square.

By the time they reached the square, it was already filled with countless Otherworldly Demons. Excited chatter could be heard here and there, and everyone waited anxiously for the start of the inauguration.

All of a sudden, there was a resounding clap, and the entire square fell silent. A dimension rift opened up right above the massive square, and an Otherworldly Demon dressed in a majestic, golden robe and an ornate crown came out from within.

With a resounding voice, he declared, “Fellow tribesmen of the Spirit Tribe, I welcome you to my inauguration ceremony. Today marks the day that I succeed the will of the predecessors and am inaugurated as the next Sovereign Chen Yong!”  
Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

As he spoke, the new Sovereign Chen Yong slowly descended to the tall platform erected at the very center of the square.

...

At the same time, in a tower a long distance away from the square, Zhang Xuan watched as the towering figure slowly descended onto the tall platform. He could not help but heave a sigh of relief as all of his interactions with Liu Yang flashed through his mind.

Liu Yang had always been an extremely competitive person. He would unwittingly compare himself to his seniors and juniors, but more often than not, such comparisons would just leave him feeling deeply stressed out and anxious. Unable to withstand the pressure back then, he had chosen to depart without saying a word.

Who would have thought that he would chance upon his own fortuitous encounter and eventually rise to such heights?

Once he gained full control over the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe, mankind would no longer have to worry about them.

“With him around, we’ll finally be free from the menace of the Otherworldly Demons,” Ancient Sage Mo Ling said with a relieved smile.

The Soul Oracle Guild had endured tens of thousands of years of humiliation and suffering, praying for the slim hope that mankind would one day be free from the threat of the Otherworldly Demons. However, Ancient Sage Mo Ling had never thought that such a day would actually come in his lifetime.

“Indeed. It’s finally all over...” Zhang Xuan nodded.

But halfway through his words, he suddenly frowned.

Hu la!

All of a sudden, a ferocious aura rose from beneath and surged right in the direction of the newly appointed Sovereign Chen Yong.

Following which, a spear and a sword darted forward from two different directions. At the same time, the surrounding space froze in place, hindering the movements of those in the area.

“An assassination!”

Ancient Sage Mo Ling and Ancient Sage Allfire narrowed their eyes, and killing intent flared from their bodies.

They had busied themselves for an entire month in order to build the momentum for Liu Yang's inauguration. Who could have known that some brainless fool would still make a move on this important occasion?

"Master, I'll go kill those dimwits right now!" Ancient Sage Allfire spat as he raised his talons ferociously.

"There's no need to be too anxious. Let's just watch first and decide what we should do next." Zhang Xuan was also taken aback for a moment before a smile crept onto his lips.

"Watch first?"

The two Ancient Sages could not understand how Zhang Xuan could remain so composed.

"Don't worry, this is a trial that Liu Yang should overcome on his own. If he's able to overcome this, he will enjoy unshakable faith among the Otherworldly Demons in the future. On the other hand, if he fails... it won't be too late for us to step in!" Zhang Xuan said as he stood up.

With his eye of discernment, there was no way he could not recognize that swordsmanship and spearmanship. Since that was the case, there was nothing for him to worry about.

...

In the square, as the newly appointed Sovereign Chen Yong saw the three figures darting in his direction, he could not help but freeze for an instant.

These moves and cultivation techniques... Liu Yang narrowed his eyes in astonishment.

The three surges of the energy coming his way were simply too familiar.

They're from Junior Lu Chong, Junior Zheng Yang, and Senior Zhao Ya!

They... What are they doing here?

# 1849 A Duel Amongst Fellow Disciples

Liu Yang was stunned for a moment before he suddenly realized the disparity in his current identity.

He was not Liu Yang at the moment but the new Sovereign of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe! On the other hand, his juniors and seniors were the elite forces of mankind. It was perfectly understandable for them to sneak into the otherworldly battlefield and attempt to claim his life.

Liu Yang's first instinct was to send a telepathic message to the crowd to tell him his true identity. However, recalling that this was a crucial moment of the inauguration ceremony, it would be bad if he gave away anything that risked revealing his true identity. It might potentially ruin all of the careful preparations made by his teacher. Thus, he quickly halted himself.

Soon, however, his bewilderment was replaced with curiosity.

This works fine for me as well! To be honest, I am also eager to know how far the rest of you have come!

Boom!

Thus, Liu Yang turned around and directed a punch right at the soul oracle surging in his direction.

The massive strength from the punch caused the earth to collapse inward. It was almost as if two worlds had collided with one another. In an instant, Lu Chong's soul was hammered right into the ground.

What a powerful fist technique, Lu Chong thought with narrowed eyes.

The only people he knew that possessed such a violent fist technique were his teacher and Senior Liu Yang. Who would have thought that the newly appointed Sovereign Chen Yong would have reached such a level as well?

No wonder he was able to unite the entire Otherworldly Demonic Tribe together. The might that he wielded was indeed fearsome!

After knocking Lu Chong back with a single punch, Liu Yang simultaneously raised his fists to knock away Zheng Yang's spear and Zhao Ya's sword.

Even though it was a one against two, Liu Yang did not seem to be in a disadvantageous position at all.

After assimilating the power that the old Sovereign Chen Yong had imparted to him, his current cultivation realm had reached Ancient Sage 3-dan Blood Reincarnation realm advanced stage, not too far away from reaching consummation. While his seniors and juniors had improved swiftly over the past few months, they were still a little lacking compared to him.

Peng peng!

There were two hollow echoes, and both Zheng Yang and Zhao Ya were sent staggering backward.

Huala!

At the same time, the Otherworldly Demon soldiers finally came to and rushed forward to reinforce their new Sovereign.

“Don't make a move without my command!” With a cold harrumph, Liu Yang halted the crowd, who were in the midst of preparing a collaborative formation. At the same time, he swiped at Zhao Ya.

Under the immense force, Zhao Ya felt as if her sword would fly from her grip at any moment.

A frown emerged on her forehead as she narrowed her eyes. She had not thought that the new Sovereign Chen Yong would actually be so powerful as to see through the flaws in her swordsmanship in an instant and attempt to snatch her sword away.

Knowing that their assassination attempt would likely fail if the other party succeeded in knocking away her sword, Zhao Ya roared, “Activate!”

Boom!

Driving her Pure Yin Body to the limits, in an instant, the area within a hundred li of her suddenly became so frigid that it started snowing. It seemed as if winter was setting in.

With the immense pressure that she was under, her stagnated cultivation also overcame its bottleneck and rose to a new level.

Ancient Sage 2-dan Great Philosopher realm!

She had already reached Sempiternal realm consummation back at the Temple of Confucius. With the Bodhi Fruit and ice crystal bestowed to her by her teacher, her cultivation had surged. Even though she did not have the Hall of Spring and Autumn to use, she had still been able to keep up with Zheng Yang's growth.

If not, Yuan Tao would not have been so frightened of Zhao Ya.

Along with the breakthrough, Zhao Ya's sword grew even sharper and more aggressive. In an instant, it appeared that her fighting prowess had increased manyfold. Numerous surges of sword qi flew forth along the movements of her sword, as if a relentless waterfall.

At the same time, Zheng Yang charged forward and drove his spear forward valiantly, forming a streak of light. He moved with a momentum that seemed as if he would impale anything that stood in his path.

“This...”

Zhang Xuan had been calmly watching the commotion so far, but upon seeing this sight, a frown formed between his eyebrows as rage flurried in the depths of his heart.

It was just a short two months of absence, but what had this bunch of wastrels become?

Not only did they abandon all of his teachings, they had even twisted the techniques that he had imparted to them to form something incredibly hideous and disgusting! This was truly embarrassing!

“Heh!”

While Zhang Xuan was still cringing over his students' movements, both Zhao Ya and Zheng Yang's attacks arrived before Liu Yang. In response, Liu Yang thrust his palms forward with crushing might.

Kacha! Kacha!

Zheng Yang and Zhao Ya were knocked backward once more.

“Senior!”

Boom!

Unable to take it any longer, Wang Ying, Wei Ruyan, and Yuan Tao dashed forward to come to their aid.

Yuan Tao charged forward with his physical body to ram into Liu Yang. While he had not achieved a breakthrough to Ancient Sage, he had devoured Kong shi's avatar and undergone an Ancient Sage Ordeal, which had led to his physical body being on par with Ancient Sage artifacts. As a result, the force that he exerted was amazingly powerful.

At the same time, Wei Ruyan utilized her Innate Poison Body to scatter poison all around the area, preventing others from getting close. The surrounding space seemed to warp a little as a result of the overwhelming concentration of poison.

While Wang Ying was not driving her enchanted objects, her cultivation had also reached Ancient Sage 1-dan Bloodline Continuance realm. Through her meticulous observation, she was able to coordinate impeccably with the others to strike at every possible opening, thus becoming the most troublesome opponent for Liu Yang to deal with.

Deng deng deng!

The individual movements of the six of them came together to form a whole. Liu Yang found himself unable to stand his ground anymore, and he was forced to retreat again and again.

Even though his cultivation far surpassed the others', the six opponents that he was facing were his teacher's direct disciples. Every single one of them had cultivated the most profound cultivation techniques and battle techniques. If Liu

Yang used just the heritage of Sovereign Chen Yong alone, he would really be no match for them.

However, the moment that he chose to use his teacher's heritage, the others would notice that it was him, and the battle would come to an abrupt halt.

Peng peng!

Plagued by excessive thoughts, Liu Yang's reaction ended up slowing a little. He suffered two consecutive blows that knocked him several steps back. He felt a sweetness at the back of his throat as blood seeped out from the corners of his lips.

He had thought that he would surely be able to triumph over the others after inheriting Sovereign Chen Yong's strength and heritage, but who could have known that the others would be so powerful as well?

"This Sovereign Chen Yong is a little weird..."

After numerous clashes, Zhao Ya and the others were starting to realize that something was amiss.

There was no doubt that Sovereign Chen Yong's fighting prowess was far greater than what they had imagined; however... it might just have been her imagination, but it felt like the other party was very familiar with their moves and coordination.

"It doesn't matter whether he's weird or not—we need to quickly take him down. Once the other Ancient Sages come to his aid, we'll really meet our end here!" Zheng Yang exclaimed anxiously.

No wonder the other party had been able to unite the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe. Despite his young age, his fighting prowess was really not to be underestimated. They had thought that they were already the most outstanding geniuses among the younger generation, but who could have known that despite the young age of the new Sovereign Chen Yong, he was able to fight against all six of them on equal ground?

Could it be that... he was really the disciple of a deity?

Otherwise, how could he possibly be so powerful? Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

Boom boom boom!

As the seven of them fought, the surrounding air billowed, and frenzied currents whipped up all around. From time to time, one could hear thunderous rumbling. The faces of all of the spectating Otherworldly Demons below flushed crimson with agitation.

This was the first time that they had witnessed such an intense battle among powerful Ancient Sages!

More importantly, the newly appointing Sovereign Chen Yong was even fending off six opponents simultaneously... They had never thought that the new Sovereign Chen Yong would actually be so powerful despite his young age!

Just as everyone was as flabbergasted as they could get, a deep voice suddenly reverberated across the entire capital.

“Enough!”

Upon hearing this voice, the bodies of Zheng Yang, Zhao Ya, and the others stiffened, and they quickly backed away.

At the same time, the newly appointed Sovereign Chen Yong also froze on the spot.

Hong long!

A silhouette who had his hands behind his back slowly descended from the sky step by step.

# 1850 The One Who Is Truly Frightening

This figure looked neither tall nor imposing, and the aura that he emanated was nothing special. Yet, his appearance caused the two sides fighting to halt their attacks and freeze on the spot, not daring to move at all.

“What’s wrong?”

The crowd in the square were all bewildered by this turn of events.

Had they not been fighting one another to the death just a moment ago? Why would they suddenly stop just because a person said a word?

“That person must have sealed the surrounding space or used some kind of special power to suppress them, causing them to be unable to make a move.” An elder amid the crowd clenched his fists tightly as he remarked contemplatively.

He had heard that those who had reached Saint 9-dan Macrocosm Ascendancy realm would often use the sealing of space as one of their offensive means to corner their opponents. It was very likely that the figure who had just appeared had used such a method on the new Sovereign Chen Yong and his assassins.

Otherwise, why would both sides suddenly halt their attacks in unison, as if they had planned it in advance?

“If that figure is able to seal the movements of the new Sovereign Chen Yong and the others all at once... just how powerful must he be?”

“Could that person possibly be... Sovereign Chen Yong’s deity mentor?”

“Now that you mention it, the silhouette of that figure does seem to resemble the person from that day. During the battle

back then, they flew too high, so I didn't manage to get a good look. However, it's very likely him!"

"No wonder he's able to render everyone motionless and incapable of battling..."

...

The crowd widened their eyes in realization as awe filled their gazes. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

If they had been skeptical to have heard from the storytellers that Sovereign Chen Yong had a mentor whose strength matched the deities', after seeing such a sight, all of their doubts dissipated.

The might wielded by that person had likely surpassed even their wildest imagination.

"How is it?"

Some of the Ancient Sages hidden amid the crowd communicated via telepathy.

"I can't see through that person's cultivation, but his very feat of halting so many experts simultaneously shows that his strength definitely exceeds the Blood Reincarnation realm!"

"Is it really possible for such powerful experts to exist in our world?"

"Don't forget Sovereign Vicious and Kong shi. Back in their era, our cultivation would have meant nothing to them at all..."

"You're right. The opening of Temple of Confucius and the descent of a deity... it wouldn't be too surprising for any astoundingly powerful experts to appear at this moment. To be able to execute a spatial seal while eluding all of our notice simultaneously, making it appear as if he hasn't done anything at all... I cannot fathom just how powerful he truly is!"

...

Some of the Ancient Sages hidden amid the crowd were in intense discussions with one another. The more they talked about the matter, the paler their faces became.

Just the fact that they were unable to see through the cultivation of the silhouette in the sky was already a major cause of fear for them all.

Of course, there was a chance that they could be overthinking it, but given the spectacular might displayed by that figure during the major battle a month ago, it was inevitable that they would be so fearful.

To be able to kill a deity from a higher dimension just by tossing a random book at him... If that person was able to draw forth so much power just by tossing a book, they could not imagine just what would happen if he threw a sword or a spear at them instead!

...

“Teacher...”

Upon seeing the approaching figure, Liu Yang did not dare move. Just as he was wondering what his teacher was going to do, he saw the latter walking up to Zheng Yang, and without any warning, the latter lifted up his feet and threw a kick right toward Zheng Yang’s chest.

Zheng Yang’s body cowered in fear at that kick, but before he could even react at all, he was sent flying into the ground.

“Just what the heck were you doing earlier? If you’d stopped that spear by a third of a breath, its might would have increased exponentially! Yet, you just had to rush your way into it! Are you that short for time? Are you rushing to be reincarnated?”

“And you! What the hell were you flinging your sword around for? Where’s your sword qi? Where’s your Sword Intent? Do you really expect to get to your opponent with such a half-assed move?”

“As for you, are you a dimwit? Do you think that you are invincible just because your defense is superior to that of others? Using your own chest to block a punch, are you very

proud of your valiance? What happened to your fist? Just where in the world has your head gone to? All you know is to ram your way around! Are you a buffalo incapable of thought?

“You bunch of wastrels! Can you even call that a battle? Even if I gathered a bunch of pigs and trained them for three days, they would be able to do much better than the lot of you!”

...

The more Zhang Xuan thought about it, the more infuriated he became. It was to the point where he was pointing fingers at each of his disciples and berating them viciously.

Did my teachings go in one ear and out the other ear?

It was just a short few days, and look at what has become of your skills. I'd die of embarrassment if anyone found out that you're my direct disciples!

As a proud master teacher, how did I manage to produce a bunch of fools like you lot?

Hearing their teacher's reprimand, the faces of Zhao Ya, Zheng Yang, and the others turned red in embarrassment. If there was pit in the ground, they might have dived right in.

They had thought that their teacher would be proud of them after all their training over the past two months, but who could have known that they would still incur his wrath?

However, they knew that what their teacher had said made sense. Even though their cultivation had advanced significantly, they had ended up neglecting their own skills instead, causing their moves to be all over the place.

Otherwise, with each of them putting their strengths together, they should have been able to defeat the new Sovereign Chen Yong with ease!

After berating Zheng Yang and the others, Zhang Xuan turned to Liu Yang and began criticizing him from head to toe.

“You're equally bad as well! Just what in the world were you trying to pull? Cowering indecisively at every move... Is that the kind of Sovereign you want to become? Sovereign my ass! There's a complete lack of soul in your movements! If you'd

charged right in to stand against the rest of them earlier, you would've been able to shatter her sword and knock that brat's spear flying easily, thus ending the battle in an instant! You wouldn't have ended up facing so much trouble later on!"

Just a month of absence, and his cultivation had gone completely haywire. He had nearly fumed himself to death.

He should have been a really cultured and patient person, but seeing this group of fellows messing around, he simply lost his cool.

"Teacher, I..." Liu Yang's face flushed red as he attempted to speak, but he was unable to say a thing at all.

Not wanting to waste his breath, Zhang Xuan waved his hand and said, "Enough. I'll take these fellows away. Continue your inauguration, and come look for me after you are done!"

Hula!

Zhao Ya and the others were immediately thrown into the Myriad Anthive Nest before Zhang Xuan vanished from the spot.

"That was such an epic battle, but in the eyes of that person, it was actually utter nonsense? Such that he lost his patience and interfered in the midst of the duel to offer his pointers?"

"So, the reason he halted the battle was because he found the battle too unsightly and couldn't watch on?"

"But that was such a profound battle! If he couldn't stand watching something like that, wouldn't we be utterly destroyed if we dared make a move?"

...

The crowd beneath trembled in horror, unable to say a word at all.

Just by the scale of the battle between Sovereign Chen Yong and the assassins, this was already an event that was worthy of being recorded and honored as a classic for the next tens of thousands of years. Yet, in the eyes of that deity, it was no different from a bunch of kids playing house!

This fact was extremely hard for them to accept even though they had just witnessed it with their own eyes.

“Leader, are we still... going to make a move?” an Ancient Sage amid the crowd suddenly asked.

“Make a move your head! I didn’t even understand the battle that just happened earlier. If we make a move, won’t we be smacked to death? Relay my orders! From today onward, no matter what orders Sovereign Chen Yong passes, our lineage will obey them unconditionally, and no one is to voice the slightest opposition!” the leader ordered through gritted teeth.

It might have appeared as though the other party was just making a couple of casual remarks, but through his sharp eye of discernment, the leader could tell that those words were filled with ingenuity. Even just comprehending a small portion of the wisdom behind what had been said would leave one feeling deeply enlightened!

Are you seriously asking me if we should make a move after witnessing that person’s vast wisdom in the art of fighting? You dolt! Grow a brain or two!

What we should be doing right now is not moving at all! If you wish to see the crimson moon rise in the north tomorrow, you should remain deathly silent!

The same scene could be seen all around the crowd.

Even though the new Sovereign Chen Yong had quelled his opposition with crushing might, there was no denying that his position still was not stable. There were many people who had wished to exploit this instability to earn some benefits.

However, from the moment that the new Sovereign Chen Yong’s mentor appeared and sealed the space, keeping both sides frozen on the spot, before bellowing furiously at both sides for the inadequacies in their techniques... Well, there was probably nothing in the world that could dispel their courage as effectively as that did.

They could see a tragic fate awaiting them if they dared rise up against the new Sovereign Chen Yong.

That was truly a terrifying mentor that the other party had.

# 1851 Zhang Xuan Lectures

“You bunch of buffoons! Have you forgotten the things that I have taught you over the past year?”

Glaring down at the row of kneeling students before him, Zhang Xuan bellowed wrathfully. Just looking at their faces sent his rage flying over the roof.

If one wanted to advance further in Ancient Sage, one had to continuously temper one’s cultivation, energy, and temperament. The continuous process of tempering would induce greater harmony within one’s body, and only then would there be a sliver of hope for one to reach Dimension Shatterer realm and advance to a higher dimension.

Yet, this bunch of fellows actually allowed their cultivation to surge on ahead without trying to suppress it in the least... And that wasn’t the worst yet.

How could the six of them nearly lose to Liu Yang despite collaborating with one another? This was utterly ridiculous! Just what in the world had they learned over the past year of tutelage?

Could that even be called a collaboration at all?

Even a bunch of pigs would do better than this under my tutelage!

“Teacher, you have taught us that we should value the cultivation of our character above everything else...” Zheng Yang muttered softly, but his words were cut short by Zhang Xuan’s dagger-like glare.

“Don’t you bring that bunch of nonsense up now! We are talking about your studies here! Your heads sure have ballooned to the skies just because you have reached Ancient Sage!” Zhang Xuan roared furiously.

He turned to Lu Chong and instructed, “You have the highest cultivation of them all. Use your strongest attack on me!”

“Me?” Lu Chong was taken aback. “But teacher, you are only at Sempiternal realm consummation...”

He was already at Blood Reincarnation realm whereas his teacher was still at Sempiternal realm consummation. If he were to fail to control his strength and accidentally injure his teacher...

“Why? Are you underestimating your teacher now that you have gotten a little stronger?” Zhang Xuan snapped at Lu Chong with an impatient tone.

“No, that’s not what I mean...” Lu Chong shook his head frantically in response.

“That would be for the best. Cut the crap and make your move!” Zhang Xuan berated.

“Y-yes!” Gritting his teeth, Lu Chong drew his soul out from his glabella and charged at Zhang Xuan.

Just the soul energy that was seeping from him in the surroundings was enough to raise a rampaging storm in the area.

Zhao Ya and the others stared at the scene intently as they readied themselves to step in should it appear that their teacher was in a dangerous position.

There was no questioning their teacher’s capabilities and talents, but the gap between Sempiternal realm and Blood Reincarnation realm was simply too big. If their teacher were to get injured due to their carelessness, they would really be heinous sinners.

Just as everyone was worrying over Zhang Xuan, the person-in-question suddenly raised his arm and flicked it casually without sparing a glance over.

Padah!

Before Lu Chong could even react, his massive soul had already plummeted right into the ground. As if a massive boulder was weighing down on him, he found himself unable to move at all.

“Is this the might of a Blood Reincarnation realm cultivator which you are so proud of?” Zhang Xuan raised his eyebrows.

“I...” Lu Chong’s face reddened as he found himself unable to speak a word at all.

The others also widened their eyes in disbelief upon seeing that sight as well.

They were well aware of the strength that Lu Chong wielded. He was the strongest amongst them, but even he was unable to withstand a casual slap from their teacher... Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

Was their teacher really at Sempiternal realm consummation?

“Let’s not waste time. All of you should just come at me together. Use the moves which you have intended to execute in order to curb the new Sovereign Chen Yong against me!” Zhang Xuan released the pressure on Lu Chong and harrumphed.

“Yes...”

Zhao Ya, Zheng Yang, and the others glanced at one another before nodding in unison.

If they were still worried about their teacher’s safety previously, after seeing the latter rendering Lu Chong completely powerless in a single move, all of the doubts were dispelled from their minds.

Despite having come so far, it was as if nothing had changed between them and their teacher. He was still berating them and lecturing them on their cultivation. Seeing this constant in their life left them with a mysterious but warm and fuzzy feeling within them.

The six of them gathered swiftly aligned their auras together, causing the surrounding air to billow like rapid tides of the ocean.

Hula!

Zhao Ya was the first one to make a move. Sword qi ravaged the area, sweeping across the surroundings with the ferocious

might of a hurricane. At the same time, the other five also made their move as well in coordination with one another, making sure to seal off all blind spots and augmenting her attack to make it much sharper and more frightening.

Standing in the midst of the storm, Zhang Xuan appeared like a lone lighthouse standing in the midst of the stormy seas, on the verge of being swallowed by the furious currents at any moment.

From the viewpoint of an outsider, this wasn't a fair duel at all.

With a nonchalant look on his face, Zhang Xuan suddenly took a step forward.

Boom!

It was as if the enormous waves had been tamed; the currents whipping across the air suddenly came to an abrupt halt. Zhao Ya, Zheng Yang, and the others retreated several steps as they felt a severe jolt in their internal zhenqi, causing their faces to turn pale.

“This is your very first flaw!” Zhang Xuan remarked as he continued walked forward slowly. “Continue!”

Zhao Ya and the others glanced at one another before encircling Zhang Xuan once more again. But before their collaboration could even fully form, Zhang Xuan snapped his fingers, and they were sent staggering back again.

This time, they seemed to have sustained even more severe injuries from before.

“Continue!”

Everyone was already on the verge of reaching their limits, but hearing the boiling rage behind their teacher's voice, they could only grit their teeth and carry on.

Peng peng peng!

Each and every single time, they would be knocked back with ease within two breaths. Injuries swiftly piled up on them, leaving them feeling as if they would collapse soon.

It was several dozen rounds later before Zhang Xuan finally halted the sparring session. With a wave of his hand, he shot surges of Heaven's Path zhenqi from his fingertips into the bodies of his students. At the same time, he tossed a jade bottle into the sky and divided the blood essence within it amongst his students.

Boom!

Absorbing the Blood Reincarnation realm Ancient Sage blood allowed the students to swiftly recover their strength as their wounds quickly mended up and vanished. Under normal circumstances, their cultivation should surge forward as well, but for some reason, instead of increasing, it was starting to decline even.

Within less than ten minutes, Zheng Yang's Ancient Sage 2-dan Great Philosopher realm primary stage cultivation had fallen back to Ancient Sage 1-dan Bloodline Continuance realm consummation, and it was still continuing to plummet.

Zhao Ya's cultivation also fell from Bloodline Continuance realm consummation down to completion...

What was bewildering was that even though their cultivation had fallen, they found that their fighting prowess had advanced instead.

This was especially so for Lu Chong. He had already reached Blood Reincarnation realm primary stage previously, but it had regressed back to Great Philosopher realm after his teacher's tempering. Despite so, he felt that his soul energy had grown much more compact, allowing him to exert even more devastating might in battle.

Not only so, his soul was showing signs of assuming a corporeal form even. If he were to reveal himself, even a Blood Reincarnation realm cultivator would find it hard to believe that it was just a soul standing before him.

"The crux of cultivation lies neither in the speed of your cultivation or the strength you are able to exert. If you fail to build your foundation well, there's no way that you will get far. You would only be building sandcastles in the air." Seeing

that his students had vaguely understood what he was trying to do, Zhang Xuan placed his hands behind his back and remarked deeply.

Education was about guiding a person down a path that was most suited to him. His students were no longer fledglings who needed to be assisted every step of the way, but they were still prone to steer off the path once they were out of his tutelage..

As such, he chose not to lecture them on their cultivation or force them to walk the same path as him. Instead, what he wanted to pound into them was the fact that cultivation was not something that one could rush within a short period of time.

Patience was the key.

This was similar to how despite being stuck at Sempiternal realm consummation for nearly a month, he didn't rush to achieve a breakthrough. Instead, he waited patiently for an impetus.

“My expectations for you don't just stop at just Ancient Sage. I want you to reach even greater heights!” Zhang Xuan said solemnly.

“If you are unable to even reach Dimension Shatterer realm, there's no need for you to continue following me anymore. Lu Chong, I have given you so much soul energy that would allow you to build up a firm foundation, but you chose to devote all of it to furthering your cultivation. As a result, your soul energy became incredibly loose. Is this what I have taught you? In your current state, if you were to attempt to overcome your bottleneck after reaching Blood Reincarnation realm, you will be reduced by ashes by the lightning tribulation!”

Everyone hung their faces in shame.

They thought that they would be complimented for the swift advancements in their cultivation, but who could have thought that it would actually be their failing instead?

Nevertheless, this matter showed them how much their teacher cared for them, and it left their noses feeling a little sour.

At this moment, something new began to blossom in their state of mind.

# 1852 The Sovereign of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe

“Alright, let’s stop here today. Cultivate on your own!” Zhang Xuan said.

Beyond Great Sage, there was very little that he could help his students with through lecturing. What was more important was their own talent and hard work.

It was because he had imparted too much to his students that they were losing the ability to create what was uniquely theirs, thus resulting in this farce.

...

After cultivating for a while, Zhao Ya suddenly asked, “Teacher, is Sovereign Chen Yong your student as well?”

The others also directed their gazes over.

They had heard that the new Sovereign Chen Yong had a mentor comparable to the deities, and they had thought that it was a fabricated story for the latter to consolidate his power. Never in their wildest dream did they think that the so-called mentor would actually be their teacher!

“You still haven’t recognized him?” Zhang Xuan shook his head.

“Recognize?”

Everyone was taken aback.

Wang Ying was the first to think of something, and her eyes widened in disbelief. With quivering lips, she asked, “Could it be that... he’s Junior Liu Yang?”

For a while, she had been thinking that there was something weird about their battle with the new Sovereign Chen Yong. The latter clearly knew their flaws, and he had been able to exploit them in crucial moments to turn the tables. Such a thing could be attributed to coincidence if it had only

happened once or twice, but the fact that it had continued throughout the battle was really something worth contemplating over.

She had been wondering if they had crossed paths with the new Sovereign Chen Yong somewhere somehow, but if the other party was their missing junior, the situation would make sense!

Just that... was Liu Yang not a human? How did he turn into Sovereign Chen Yong of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe? Not to mention, his disguise was actually one that they had been unable to see through!

Zhao Ya and the others were also stunned by this revelation, and they could hardly believe what they were hearing. They immediately turned to look at Zhang Xuan, wanting to hear the words right from the mouth of their teacher.

“That’s right.” Zhang Xuan nodded. “He’s indeed Liu Yang. It’s due to some fortuitous encounters that he stumbled upon that he ended up in his current position. However, you must make sure to never reveal this matter, or else he will face great trouble and danger.”

Even though Liu Yang’s inauguration ceremony would legitimize his position as the only Sovereign of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe, his power was built upon the pretext that he was an Otherworldly Demon.

If others learnt that he was actually a human, there was no doubt that he would be overthrown in a heartbeat. The situation that had just settled down would be thrown into chaos, and all of their effort would be unraveled.

“He’s actually Liu Yang...”

Hearing the confirmation right from their teacher’s mouth, Zhao Ya and the others had some mixed feelings on the inside.

They had thought that their teacher was still recuperating, and they had wanted to do something to cleanse their teacher’s name. Yet, who could have known that their teacher had already resolved the entire crisis before their arrival?

With Liu Yang standing at the top of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe, the latter would no longer be a threat to the humans anymore.

Zhang Xuan had his students enter his Myriad Anthive Nest and instructed them to cultivate in there before heading back to the capital.

...

The inauguration ceremony was still ongoing when Zhang Xuan returned to the square.

If there had still been some dissatisfaction regarding the new Sovereign Chen Yong usurping the shared jurisdiction of the Three Sovereigns, after what had happened earlier, there was no one who dared voice their opposition anymore.

“This is our one and only Sovereign, a figure whom none can replace.”

“It seems like an era of prosperity is soon going to descend upon our Spirit Tribe...”

Anticipation could be seen in everyone’s eyes.

Sitting down on the regal throne, Liu Yang felt his heart beating wildly.

Thinking back, if he had not met his teacher, he would have been an ordinary student in Tianxuan Kingdom’s Hongtian Academy. Perhaps, he would not even have reached Fighter 3-dan yet. Somehow, he found himself sitting at the very center of an entire race, becoming the person who governed over the greatest threat to humanity.

Had it been a year earlier, he would never have dared to even dream of something like that.

“If there is no opposition...”

As his heart palpated in agitation, Liu Yang rose to his feet and gazed upon the crowd beneath regally.

“... Today, I shall proclaim myself the Sovereign of the Spirit Tribe!”

...

“Wait a moment? You are telling me that there is a new Sovereign to the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe, and on the day of his inauguration, he announced a ceasefire to the conflict and ordered a peaceful coexistence for the next thousand years?”

“He even requested to establish trade relations with the Master Teacher Pavilion by creating new markets within the Subterranean Galleries?”

“If an official trading market is created in the Subterranean Galleries, there’s no doubt that many master teachers will dive right in. Aren’t they afraid that we will make use of this opportunity to assault them and eradicate them once and for all?”

“That isn’t the most shocking news yet. According to what I heard, the new Sovereign promotes the virtues of teaching, preaching the importance of respect and formalities. He encourages Otherworldly Demons to listen to the lectures of the master teachers, and he pushes for interracial matrimony. It feels like he’s really after a peaceful coexistence...”

The surviving Ancient Sages of the Master Teacher Pavilion did not go back to hibernation right after returning from the Temple of Confucius. Instead, browsing through the reports that they had received, they looked as if they had seen a ghost.

When they heard that a new Sovereign Chen Yong had risen to power and united the entire Otherworldly Demonic Tribe, they had prepared themselves for a tough battle. However, contrary to their expectations, the new Sovereign Chen Yong had actually proposed so many favorable terms for mankind.

If those plans were put into action, the scales were likely to tip in mankind’s favor.

There was a brief moment of silence as the Ancient Sages racked their minds in an attempt to figure out what was going on, but at that moment, an elder suddenly spoke up. “I think that this might have something to do with my senior!”

Yang Xuan.

“The senior you speak of refers to Celestial Master Teacher Zhang Xuan, right?” one of the Ancient Sages asked.

Previously, Yang shi had informed the Ancient Sages that his senior was a Celestial Master Teacher, just like Kong shi, an existence who had been recognized by the heavens.

“Indeed, that’s him. According to the intelligence I have received so far, he has been in the otherworldly battlefield for two months now,” Yang shi said.

“You can’t seriously think that he has resolved the threat of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe by convincing them to make peace with us within just two short months, right?” another Ancient Sage scoffed.

This was a feat that they and their ancestors had worked toward for tens of thousands of years but failed to achieve. For a fellow who had not even reached Ancient Sage to do it within two months...

Do you think that this is playing house?

“Sage Qian is right. Yang shi, aren’t you taking this matter too lightly?” Several voices chirped in agreement.

“Whether I am taking this matter too lightly or not, we’ll know with a swift analysis.” Yang shi did not lose his cool upon hearing that his viewpoint was being challenged. Instead, he calmly looked at the other Ancient Sages before remarking, “I believe that all of you are aware of the name of the newly inaugurated Sovereign Chen Yong, right?”

“The Sovereign’s name?” The Ancient Sages lowered their gazes to look at the information that they had received, and one of them replied with a nod, “Yang Liu.”

“That’s right, his name is Yang Liu... As you might know, my senior has eight direct disciples. One of his direct disciples, who went missing a while ago, goes by the name of Liu Yang.”

“Liu Yang?” The crowd glanced at one another. “Yang Liu... Are you suspecting that the new Sovereign Chen Yong, Yang Liu, is Liu Yang?”

“Indeed. Not only are their names similar, the fact that the new Sovereign Chen Yong is rumored to have an exceptionally powerful mentor is also a point that we should be thinking about.” Yang shi revealed his conjecture.

“There were six assassins who appeared during the inauguration ceremony, and the descriptions that I have received match Zhao Ya, Zheng Yang, and the others. According to an eye-witness’ report, they were exceptionally receptive to the words of the new Sovereign Chen Yong’s mentor, obeying his orders without any opposition. I can’t think of anyone who holds so much sway over the six of them other than my senior!”

The crowd immediately fell silent.

With so much evidence laid out clearly before them, they would really be diminishing their own intelligence if they continued denying the matter.

For Zhang shi to lead his student and single-handedly conquer the entire Otherworldly Demonic Tribe... Unbelievable!

---

Author’s Note: The thirteenth arc, [The Sovereign of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe], comes to an end! From the next arc onward, Zhang Xuan shall begin to trace Kong shi’s footsteps and rise higher and higher, eventually becoming the World’s Teacher. Please look forward to it!

Translator’s Note: Wheeeeeeee another arc completed. Yeah, that’s all. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

# 1853 The Mysteries of the Ancient Domains

Unaware that his true identity had already been guessed by Yang Shi and the others, Zhang Xuan was currently soaring through the air with his direct disciples following behind him.

It had already been a month since Liu Yang had been inaugurated as Sovereign Chen Yong of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe.

A new year had just arrived, so the entire capital was filled with joyful bustle.

Over the past month, Zhang Xuan had been offering pointers to his direct disciples, and for a moment, he felt as if he had returned to the days in the Tianxuan Kingdom.

There were no grudges, no responsibilities, and no obligations. There were only the simple interactions between a teacher and his students. Each and every day was passed swimming in an ocean of knowledge, indulging in the simple joys of grasping a new move or learning a new cultivation technique.

After going through Zhang Xuan's systematic training program, the zhenqi of Zhao Ya and the others had been reinforced, becoming much denser than before. This had resulted in a significant surge in their fighting prowess. At the same time, Yuan Tao had successfully cleared his second Ancient Sage Ordeal.

As for Liu Yang, after he achieved a breakthrough to Blood Reincarnation realm consummation, he had successfully placed the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe under his complete control, thus crushing even the last voices of opposition against him.

On the other hand, Zhang Xuan's cultivation was still capped at Sempiternal realm consummation. However, his aura felt much more composed than before, and his state of mind was

more stable. It seemed like he could push for a breakthrough at any moment as long as he willed it.

Two months of reinforcement had given him a deeper insight into the powers wielded by Ancient Sages, and his fighting prowess had improved considerably. With the Dragonbone Divine Spear in hand, it was no exaggeration to say that he was unrivaled beneath the Dimension Shatterer realm.

Even if he encountered that deity from before, he would not be so powerless as to be defeated in a single move.

As swift as Zhang Xuan's improvements were, there was one person who was growing faster than him—Vicious. With his body becoming complete and the straw garment inducing the growth of his flesh and blood, he had successfully achieved a breakthrough to the Dimension Shatterer realm, which meant that he was already able to shatter the dimension barrier of the world.

“While I am able to shatter the dimension barrier to open up a pathway to a higher dimension, my body isn't sufficiently resilient to leave this world yet. At the very least, my cultivation has to reach Dimension Shatterer realm consummation first!” Vicious explained.

Hearing those words, Zhang Xuan nodded in realization.

At that moment, Liu Yang suddenly flew over from afar and clasped his fist. “Teacher, I have already looked through all of the books of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe, and I found that the ‘deities’ that have appeared in the past can't be truly be considered gods or deities. Rather, they are just beings from the Azure!”

During that period of time, Zhang Xuan had not only devoted his time entirely to guiding his students' cultivation. He had also instructed Liu Yang to make use of his authority as Sovereign Chen Yong to gather information regarding the legends of the ‘deities’ in hopes that he might gather some clues regarding Luo Ruoxin.

“The Azure?”

“Indeed. The Azure is a dimension entirely different from the Master Teacher Continent, and the deity that descended previously came from there as well. As its environment is filled with ample Aeon of Ancient Sage, its environment for cultivation is superior to even the best blessed lands in our world!” Liu Yang explained.

The Otherworldly Demonic Tribe possessed the ability to communicate with the ‘deities’, so even though most of the legends going around were just hearsay, there were still some slivers of truth amid them.

Knowing what his teacher was intending to do, Liu Yang hesitated for a brief moment before explaining, “However, it seems like the passageway leading to the Azure has been completely sealed. Any deities who wish to descend to our world must pay a heavy price through a ritual, and it’s nigh impossible for us to ascend up to the Azure.”

“The passageway leading to the Azure has been completely sealed?” Zhang Xuan asked anxiously.

In truth, he had already guessed as much. It had been a long time since any deities had descended to their world, and ever since Kong shi, there had been no cultivators who had successfully ascended to the Azure.

“You also got me to investigate the matter concerning Kong shi,” Liu Yang said. “Based on what I have found, he disappeared shortly after he captured the Immortal’s Envoy. Based on the clues I have gathered so far, it’s likely that he has gone to the Azure.

“Shortly after Kong shi’s departure, the Hundred Schools of Philosophers also left the Master Teacher Continent to stand guard at a certain location. I tried investigating deeper into the matter, but the clues come to a complete halt here. However, I feel that the Hundred Schools of Philosophers know more details about Kong shi’s disappearance.”

Zhang Xuan nodded slowly.

In this world, there was definitely no one who knew more about Kong shi than the Hundred Schools of Philosophers.

Their lineage had stemmed from Kong shi, so they were bound to have records regarding the latter.

Zhang Xuan turned to Ancient Sage Mo Ling and asked, “Do you know where the Hundred Schools of Philosophers are located?”

He was the one who had contacted the Hundred Schools of Philosophers in order to assault Sovereign Chen Yong. As such, even if the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters had no idea where the Hundred Schools of Philosophers were, there was no way that he would not know!

Ancient Sage Mo Ling pondered for a moment before replying, “They should be in the Kunxu Domain.”

“The Kunxu Domain?” Zhang Xuan frowned in bewilderment.

He had heard of plenty of secret domains and the like, but he had never heard of the Kunxu Domain. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

“There are many ancient domains on the Master Teacher Continent; I believe that you should have heard of a couple of them yourself. While the influence of the Master Teacher Pavilion doesn’t extend to these ancient domains, they harness the most primordial energy, which nourishes those suffering from deficient bloodlines!” Ancient Sage Mo Ling explained.

Zhang Xuan nodded in response.

The Tianxuan Kingdom was an ancient domain, too. It was in hopes of recovering the Emperor’s Bloodline that the Yuan Tao had been sent to the Tianxuan Kingdom to fend for himself. The same went for Zhang Xuan.

“To be honest, I’m not too sure where the entrance of the Kunxu Domain is. The Hundred Schools of Philosophers have guarded that secret extremely tightly. However, what I am certain of is that it has close ties to these ancient domains. I would say that there’s a good chance that the entrance to the Kunxu Domain is located in one of these ancient domains!” Ancient Sage Mo Ling said.

He did have channels that allowed him to reach out to the Hundred Schools of Philosophers, but he had never been to the Kunxu Domain itself. There was no way that the Hundred Schools of Philosophers would risk exposing their whereabouts to him after all.

“Hmm, it’s located in one of the ancient domains?” Zhang Xuan frowned. He pondered for a brief moment before coming to a decision. “I intend to return to the Tianxuan Kingdom for a moment. Do any of you wish to come along with me?”

To be honest, he felt that there were still some mysteries concerning the Tianxuan Kingdom that he had not unraveled yet. Given how huge the Master Teacher Continent was, he had transcended into the Tianxuan Kingdom. Furthermore, he had even found two students possessing rare unique constitutions there.

Of course, it might just have been a coincidence, but he had a feeling that there was more to it. As such, he intended to start his search from there.

“I have been away for more than a year now. I think it’s about time for me to return and visit my father,” Zhao Ya said with a smile.

She had departed from her homeland together with her teacher, and over the past year, she had risen to become one of the top powerhouses of the Master Teacher Continent, as well as a powerful Ancient Sage expert. It was about time for her to return and pay a visit to her family.

“I wish to come along as well!” Wang Ying nodded fervently.

The others also echoed their agreement. They wanted to return to their roots to take a look at the place where they had grown up.

“Liu Yang, you are still needed here for the time being, so you can’t come along with us. As for the rest, make preparations. We’ll be setting off soon!” Zhang Xuan instructed with a smile.

Even though they had successfully unified the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe, there were still many reforms that had to be

supervised and implemented. If the highest leader, Sovereign Chen Yong, vanished at that crucial moment, there was a good chance that things could go haywire.

As indignant as he was, Liu Yang sighed deeply before nodding reluctantly. "... I understand!"

Zhang Xuan turned to the colossal beast beside Liu Yang and said, "Ancient Sage Allfire, I'll be counting on you to assist Liu Yang by his side."

"Leave it to me!" Ancient Sage Allfire replied heartily.

"Alright, let's go then!"

After settling the matters there, Zhang Xuan took out the Dragonbone Divine Spear and slit a dimension rift in front of him. He took the lead and entered the dimension rift, and the others swiftly followed behind him.

# 1854 The Young Lady Who Missed Ou

As the end of the dimension rift was the spatial seal of the Subterranean Gallery. The group stepped across the seal, returning to the Master Teacher Continent. At this point, Zhang Xuan took out the Dragonbone Divine Spear once more to open another dimension rift.

Roughly ten minutes later, they were already in the sky above the Tianxuan Kingdom.

The capital of the Tianxuan Kingdom felt exceptionally serene. The crowds walking through the streets would never have been able to imagine that the strongest lifeforms in this world were floating right above them.

Descending from the sky, Zhang Xuan and the others walked into Tianxuan Royal City before entering Hongtian Academy. It had been little more than a year since their departure, but the entire place seemed to have expanded quite a bit. In the past, it could only house 40,000 students at most, but with its current scale, even housing 400,000 students would not pose too much of a problem!

“Hurry up! Lu Xun laoshi is conducting a lecture today. At this rate, we won’t be able to make it in time!”

“I thought that he has just achieved a breakthrough to 2-star master teacher and still needs to reinforce his cultivation?”

“No matter what he’s thinking, it’s a rare opportunity for us to listen in on the class of a 2-star master teacher. There’s no doubt that his lecture will be extremely beneficial to our cultivation! Back in the day, I listened in on Zhang shi’s class, and even though it was only a short half an hour, it left a lasting effect on me!”

“Wait a moment, you’ve attended one of Zhang shi’s classes before?”

“Of course! Little Li, you have only joined the academy this year, so you might not have heard of him before. Zhang shi was the most popular teacher in our Hongtian Academy a year back, and his reputation exceeded even Lu Xun laoshi’s back then!”

...

While Zhang Xuan, Zhao Ya, and the others were walking around the compounds of the academy, a group of students suddenly rushed past them.

They had disguised themselves a little prior to entering the city, so it was no wonder that no one was able to recognize them. Plus, they had left Hongtian Academy a year ago, so no one would be expecting them to be there.

Hearing a familiar name, Zhang Xuan remarked with a smile, “Oh? Lu Xun is already a 2-star master teacher? That’s quite fast...”

Lu Xun had been the most respected teacher in Hongtian Academy back when he first transcended over to this world. Even Wang Ying and Zhao Ya had wanted to join his classes, just that they had ended up being intercepted by him.

That being said, Lu Xun had only been an ordinary star teacher back then, a huge distance away from becoming a 1-star master teacher. Yet, in the blink of an eye, he was already a 2-star master teacher!

Sometimes, it was truly surprising how quickly things changed.

“Teacher, shall we head over to take a look?” Zhao Ya asked with a smile.

Zhang Xuan nodded in response.

Given that this was the first familiar name that they had heard since returning, it went without saying that they should pay him a visit.

While the two of them had been in conflict back then, that had been resolved in the end. To the current him, those were just

interesting memories that he would look back upon from time to time.

Following the flow of crowd, it did not take long before Zhang Xuan and the others arrived in an auditorium. In there, they saw a young man standing on top of a tall stage with a dignified disposition.

He was none other than Lu Xun.

Over the past year, he had cultivated an aura unique to him. He was dressed in a master teacher robe with two shining stars pinned on his chest, indicating that he was a 2-star master teacher.

Had it been in the past, there was no way that one would have been able to find a 2-star master teacher in the Tianxuan Kingdom.

“You lot...”

Just as they were intending to go a bit closer to the stage, a young lady suddenly appeared before them, blocking their way.

With an appearance that hinted that she was in her early teens, this young lady was dressed in a greenish robe. There was a hint of valiance between her eyebrows, bearing some resemblance to the past Zhao Ya.

Perplexed by the appearance of the young lady, the group of them glanced at one another before Wang Ying stepped forward to speak with a smile.

“We heard that Lu Xun laoshi is holding a lecture, so we came over to take a look...”

“If you wish to listen to Lu laoshi’s class, you’ll have to either flash your Student Token or pay two gold coins. This isn’t an entrance fee but a rightful compensation that a master teacher deserves for his service!” the young lady said as she stretched out her hand to demand payment.

“Gold coins?” Zhang Xuan and the others were stunned.

As noble as master teachers were, they needed a means for survival as well. As such, it was customary for them to

demand payment for their lectures.

Given that Zhang Xuan and the others had already left Hongtian Academy, there was no way that they would still have their Student Tokens with them. It was not that they were unwilling to pay the fee, but it was just a little difficult for them to do so.

Even the least valuable item in Zhang Xuan's storage ring was a pinnacle spirit stone. Anything beneath that was not even worthy of his notice, let alone the gold coins used in Unranked Kingdoms.

“We don't have any Student Tokens nor gold coins with us... However, I do have a pill here. Will you be able to make an exception for us with this?”

After searching his storage ring for a very long time, he finally took out the lowest grade pill in his storage ring and handed it over.

“A pill?” The young lady widened her eyes in astonishment.

Even the resources that her teacher would usually bestow upon her were simple medicinal balls. Pills were considered a top-notch cultivation resource. They had their unique names, and each of them was incredibly valuable. The group before her were unable to take out any gold coins, but they had pills in their possession?

The young lady took the pill from Zhang Xuan's hand and examined it closely. Slowly, a frown formed on her forehead.

To her eyes, the pill looked perfectly plain and ordinary. It formed a stark contrast to the pills harnessing billowing energy that she usually saw around. It seemed to her that the pill in her hands was just a handful of medicinal herbs clumped together.

“Who do you think you're fooling? Can this be considered a pill? Do you take me for some countryside bumpkin?” The young lady harrumphed wrathfully.

She might have been young, but she had seen pills before! A while back, an apothecary had specially delivered a pill in order to get on her teacher's good side. She had happened to

be around when the apothecary presented his pill. As soon as the lid to the jade container was opened, a surge of spiritual energy had immediately rushed out, leaving one feeling incredibly revitalized.

On the other hand, the pill before her was not properly kept in a jade container. Not only so, there was not the slightest spiritual energy that could be felt from it.

Are you honestly calling this a pill? You must be joking!

If you think that you can use this poor imitation of a pill to cheat me of fourteen gold coins, you are sorely mistaken!

Seeing the furious look on the young lady's face, Wang Ying realized that the young lady was unable to discern the true value of the pill, so she quickly explained, "This really is a pill. Furthermore, it's one that can aid your cultivation, so its value definitely far surpasses gold coins..."

"I only want gold coins. I don't need this pill!" The young lady harrumphed indignantly as she tossed the pill back to Zhang Xuan.

"This..." Zhang Xuan had no idea whether he should laugh or cry at this situation.

With his current fortune, even a pill that he randomly picked out of his storage ring could be sold for an astronomical price in the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters. He was offering it to a young lady instead of the fourteen gold coin entrance fee, but the other party actually thought that he was a swindler. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

Hearing that her teacher was being called a swindler, Wang Ying took out another medicinal herb and passed it over. "Since you don't want the pill, what about this herb? It's also quite valuable, so I believe it should suffice to compensate the fee."

It was a 500-year-old Coldstar Grass!

Of course, as the head of the Spirit Awakener Guild, there was no way that she would have gold coins on her.

“You want to pay for the entrance fee with this weed? Don’t think that I’m a naive little girl just because I’m young! I’ll have you know that my teacher is 2-star Master Teacher Lu Xun! No matter what you say or bring out today, unless you can fork out the fourteen gold coins entrance fee, I’ll have to ask you to leave!”

It was one thing for the other party to try to fool her with fake pills, but to think that the other party would try to fool her with some wild grass that she could not recognize too! Feeling insulted, the young lady’s face turned livid.

“I...” Wang Ying was rendered speechless.

She had no idea how she could deal with this situation.

With her current identity, everything that could be found in her storage ring was an extraordinary and exclusive item. For her to take out something that was worth fourteen gold coins and recognizable to this young lady... this was really a bit difficult.

“You aren’t going to pay the fee? From the looks of it, it seems like you are really here just to cause trouble!” Seeing the conflicted looks on the faces of the group, the young lady was convinced that they were all scammers.

Unable to hold back her rage anymore, she turned around and exclaimed, “Senior, these people here are refusing to pay for Lu laoshi’s lesson. Please send them out for me!”

Huala!

The next moment, a young man wielding a spear walked out from a nearby room.

Upon seeing the young man’s silhouette, Zheng Yang’s body stiffened as his eyes reddened a little. “Mo Xiao, is that you?”

# 1855 Mo Xiao Wants a Duel

The young man who had just appeared was none other than the close brother whom Zheng Yang had grown up with, Mo Xiao!

Back then, the two of them had joined Hongtian Academy with gusto, swearing to one another that they would join Wang Chao laoshi's class and become his student. Mo Xiao had eventually succeeded, but due to his poor performance during the assessment, Zheng Yang had lost his place to Sun Shan and ended up becoming Zhang Xuan's student.

Back then, none of them could have imagined that things would turn out like that.

The one who had cleared the assessment was still stuck in the Tianxuan Kingdom, and his name only echoed within the walls of Hongtian Academy. On the other hand, the one who had failed the assessment had risen above the ranks and become the head of the Combat Master Hall. In terms of strength, there were probably no more than a handful of people who could put up a fight against him.

Sometimes, the plans that fate had in store were truly baffling.

“You are...” Hearing his name being called in a very familiar manner, Mo Xiao could not help but frown.

As an Ancient Sage, if Zheng Yang did not want someone weaker than him to recognize him, there was no way the other party would be able to discern his original appearance. As a result, not even the brother whom he had grown up with was able to recognize him.

“I am Zheng Yang!” Zheng Yang said as he dispelled his disguise, revealing his true appearance.

“Zheng Yang?” Hearing that familiar name and seeing that familiar face, Mo Xiao's eyes suddenly reddened.

The two of them had been together ever since they were very young, and they had practiced their sparmanship together. It

had only been a year since they had parted from one another, but Mo Xiao had always thought that they would never meet again in their lifetime. He had not thought that they would meet one another again so soon.

After his agitation died down, Mo Xiao asked, “Didn’t you leave with Zhang shi? Why would you...”

Based on what he had heard, Zhang Xuan had successfully cleared the master teacher examination, thus becoming the pride of the Tianxuan Kingdom. As for what happened afterward, due to the Tianxuan Kingdom being too isolated from the rest of the world, Mo Xiao did not know too much.

“I happened to be free, so I came back to meet up with you and the others!” Zheng Yang replied with a smile.

He could tell that the other party was curious about what he had been through over the past year, but to be honest, he had no idea how he should begin explaining it. After all, there was no one in the Tianxuan Kingdom who knew anything about the Combat Master Hall or Ancient Sages...

Would the other party understand the significance of these terms if he tried to explain it to him?

“This is great! Given how long you have been with Zhang shi, you should have already reached Fighter 8-dan Zongshi realm by now, right? It has been very long since we last sparred with one another! I’ll have you know that I’ve learned a formidable spear art in the last year, and my cultivation has also reached Fighter 7-dan Tongxuan realm pinnacle! Let me see how much you have improved over the past year!”

With a flick of his wrist, Mo Xiao retrieved his spear from his back and pointed it toward Zheng Yang with fighting will flaring from him.

He had been unable to find a suitable sparring partner ever since Zheng Yang left, and his hand had been itching for a good opponent. Upon seeing Zheng Yang right before his eyes, how could he possibly allow the other party to get away without a fight?

“Zongshi realm? Tongxuan realm pinnacle? Spear art?” Zheng Yang was not too sure how he should react to this situation. He looked at Mo Xiao for a moment before shaking his head.

“Why don’t we sit down and catch up with one another instead?” “Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

It had just been year, but those realms felt so far away from him that he could hardly remember them anymore.

“Why? Are you afraid that I’ll accidentally injure you? There’s no need to worry about that—I’m able to control my strength rather well. I’ll hold myself back if I see that you are at your limits. There won’t be any problems, so there’s no need to worry!” Mo Xiao laughed heartily.

“This...” Zheng Yang scratched his head in embarrassment.

For an Ancient Sage like him to actually spar with a Fighter 7-dan Tongxuan realm cultivator... Wasn’t this pretty much bullying?

Noticing Zheng Yang’s hesitation, Mo Xiao frowned. “Are you looking down on me right now, or are you afraid that you will be humiliated upon suffering a defeat?”

“That’s not it...”

Since Mo Xiao had already put it in such a way, there was no way that Zheng Yang could continue turning him down. Thus, he shook his head helplessly before taking out the weakest spear that he had in his possession.

“Where should we have the battle?”

“Oh? You even have a storage ring! Not bad, it seems like Zhang shi treats you quite well!” Seeing the spear materialize in Zheng Yang’s arm, Mo Xiao’s eyes glowed in envy. He pointed to the side and said, “My teacher is going to hold a class here, so let’s go over to a dueling ring.”

“He doesn’t have a storage ring either...” Seeing the massive gap standing between the two of them, Zheng Yang shook his

head bitterly. Feeling a bad premonition, he sighed deeply before replying, "Let's go then."

They began making their way over to the dueling ring not too far away.

"Let's head over to take a look too!"

Since the lecture over here had yet to begin, Zhang Xuan and the others decided to follow along.

At the same time, seeing that those swindlers were actually acquainted with her senior, the young lady hesitated for a brief moment before deciding to tag along.

Both Zheng Yang and Mo Xiao leaped onto the nearest dueling ring, and they immediately caught the attention of the crowd.

Seeing that so many people had gathered around, Zheng Yang quickly concealed his appearance and aura so that the other spectators would not discern his true identity.

"Mo Xiao is the famed spearmanship genius in the academy. With his cultivation, even the teachers and elders aren't a match for him. Where in the world did that fellow pop out from to dare compete with him?"

"I have no idea. I'm just here to watch the other party get pummeled!"

"Haha! Same here!"

Over the past year, Mo Xiao had made rapid progress under Lu Xun's tutelage. Be it in terms of his cultivation or his comprehension of spearmanship, he was already approaching a level comparable to Zongshi. There would not be too many people in the entire Hongtian Academy who were a match for him, let alone a youngster who had just appeared from nowhere!

On the other hand, Lu Xun had also noticed the commotion, and it did not take him long to figure out what was going on from the discussion among the crowd. Sighing deeply, he looked at the crowd, who were looking at the duel excitedly, and said, "Since they are going to have a duel, I shall use their

duel as the topic of my lecture today. I'll talk about the feasibility of certain spearmanship maneuvers in real time battle."

"Woah! That will really be an interesting lecture!"

"Waaa! I love hearing Lu laoshi talking about practical battle concepts!"

"There is no lecture that will enhance one's fighting prowess more than this. I really haven't come in vain today!"

Hearing that Lu Xun was going to lecture about the usage of spearmanship in battle, a huge commotion rippled through the crowd, and the excitement in the room was palpable. Everyone swiftly turned their gazes to the dueling ring.

"Haha, come!"

Seeing that everyone's attention was on him, including his teacher's, Mo Xiao felt more pumped than ever. With a powerful push, his spear whooshed toward Zheng Yang.

Wuuuuuuu!

The speed of his spear was so fast that one could literally hear a sonic boom in the air.

"The attack that Mo Xiao has just made isn't too bad. His movements are decisive, and it follows through smoothly without any unnecessary hesitation, reminiscent of the flowing current of a river. The crux in spearmanship lies in the fluidity of one's movements. Once one has made a decision, one's movements must be lightning fast in order to create a powerful momentum to overwhelm one's enemy. Ordinary Zongshis would find it hard to stand against the attack that Mo Xiao just launched," Lu Xun explained calmly as he nodded in satisfaction.

Meanwhile, as one of the participants of the duel, Zheng Yang was extremely conflicted.

The movement of the spear before him was simply too slow, no different from the movements of a snail. Furthermore, its might was so weak that if he deflected it carelessly, he might end up hurting his friend. This really put him in a spot.

Deflecting it was not an option, but not deflecting it was not a good idea either... What a dilemma!

“Just as I said, the momentum created by Mo Xiao has overwhelmed his enemy, leaving his enemy in utter panic.”

Seeing that Zheng Yang was not moving in the least, Lu Xun nodded. “The spearmanship that I have imparted to Mo Xiao is centered around the idea of momentum. Its true might lies in controlling the flow of battle through imposing momentum. In order to train Mo Xiao, I took him to a waterfall and had him withstand the force of the currents for three whole months before he reached his current level. There’s no doubt that his opponent is going to l-l-l-l-lose...”

Before he could finish his words, his lips suddenly began quivering uncontrollably.

Mo Xiao’s spear struck Zheng Yang’s eye squarely, and then...

It completely dissipated.

The spear, that was.

—

Discord Chat Group: <https://discord.gg/ATHVehx>

# 1856 The Value of the Pill

“ ... ”

Zheng Yang felt so embarrassed that he could wither on the spot.

It was in a moment of tough internal conflict that the other party's spear suddenly struck his eye, but that was not the worst.

He had accidentally released a small sliver of a fraction of a hint of his zhenqi due to the aggression, and the other party's spear had simply dissipated.

Mortal-tier weapons were simply too flimsy!

If it had been a Great Sage artifact instead... it would have at least taken a flutter of his eyelid to do the same!

He really should have controlled his strength better in the duel... but then again, he did not even exert any strength at all!

Deng deng deng deng!

With the spear dissipating, Mo Xiao leaped back in sheer horror.

He had aimed for Zheng Yang's eye, thinking that the latter would surely attempt to dodge, but who could have known that the latter would remain completely still, as if a statue? He had really panicked for a moment, but to his astonishment, instead of a tragedy unfolding before his eyes, his spear had become the victim of the battle instead!

It was in that moment that he realized that Zheng Yang was far more powerful than he had thought. Thus, he hurriedly retreated several steps before abruptly twisting his body around to send a kick right over.

The transmission leading up to the kick was extremely smooth, and it was apparent just by looking at it that Mo Xiao had refined this move over and over again in order to achieve

perfection. With chilling intent, his leg whipped right toward Zheng Yang's neck.

Kacha!

As if kicking a metal pillar, Mo Xiao's shin splintered from the center.

“Argh!”

With a cry of agony, Mo Xiao collapsed to the ground. His eyes reflected his disbelief as he exclaimed, “Could it be that you have surpassed Zongshi realm to reach Zhizun realm?”

“I...” Zheng Yang's face twitched.

He had not even made a move, but the other party's spear and leg were already ruined. How were they supposed to have a proper duel like that?

“I never thought that you would have reached such a level...” Facing Zheng Yang's silence, Mo Xiao thought that he had guessed correctly, and envy rippled in the depths of his eyes.

When he first heard that his good friend had come under Zhang shi's tutelage, he had felt sympathy for the latter for a very long time. Not too long later, a conflict had happened between Zhang shi and Lu Xun laoshi, and his teacher, Wang Chao laoshi, had made him come under Lu Xun laoshi's tutelage instead.

He had battled with Zheng Yang then, and it was there that he had realized that the latter's spearmanship had already far exceeded his.

Ever since then, he had worked himself tirelessly, hoping to challenge Zheng Yang once more to a duel and best him.

This was also why he had challenged Zheng Yang to a duel so passionately as soon as they reunited with one another. He had thought that his hard work over the year would allow him to defeat the latter with ease, but who could have known that the other party had already reached Zhizun realm, thus pulling his distance away from him?

His attack could not even hurt the other party!

“I...” Zheng Yang intended to explain the matter, but eventually, he simply shook his head.

In Mo Xiao’s eyes, Zhizun realm probably meant the very peak of the world. It was only normal for him to think that way.

A this moment, a voice echoed across the room. It was from Zhang Xuan.

“He’s already someone from a different world from you.”

Hearing those words, Zheng Yang lowered his gaze melancholically. He had been excited a moment ago to see his good friend, but by that point, his joy had already vanished.

It was just a year of absence, but the gap between them had grown so huge that a rift of unthinkable size stood between the two of them. It swiftly dawned on him that the old days were already gone, and there was no way that the relationship between him and Mo Xiao would be the same anymore.

Due to the difference in positions and strength, they no longer had a shared language with one another. No matter how hard they tried to ignore it, the rift would only become more and more visible to them until it was shoved right into their faces.

Such was the current situation between them.

Mo Xiao was still wondering whether he had achieved a breakthrough from Zongshi to Zhizun realm whereas the truth was that he had already reached a level that Mo Xiao could not even fathom.

“Along with your growth, you will inevitably part with many friends...” Zhang Xuan continued.

The worlds that Zheng Yang and Mo Xiao lived in had already diverged from one another, and it was unlikely that they would ever intersect again.

It was not that any of them wanted to sever their friendship, but the sheer difference in their strength changed the nature of their relationship. Rivalry had always been a key aspect of their relationship, and there was no way that Mo Xiao could accept an unbridgeable distance between the two of them.

Such a relationship would only crush his confidence and esteem.

Hearing his teacher's words, Zheng Yang shook out of his state and replied with a smile, "Yes, you're right. I have reached Zhizun realm..."

He pulled his good friend from the ground before walking over to Zhang Xuan. "Teacher, may I have the pill that you took out earlier? Mo Xiao is injured, so I would like to give it to him."

"Here."

With a flick of his finger, the pill that Zhang Xuan had given the young lady earlier flew into Zheng Yang's hand.

"Eat this!" Zheng Yang said as he passed the pill over to Mo Xiao.

"Un!" Mo Xiao nodded.

He was just about to swallow the pill when the young lady from before suddenly walked over with an anxious look on her face.

"Senior, I took a look at the pill earlier, and there isn't the slightest hint of spiritual energy in it. It's very likely a fake pill! You mustn't eat it!"

She had taken a look at it, and the pill appeared extremely suspicious to her. What if Mo Xiao ate it and his cultivation went berserk?

"Don't worry, I believe in Zheng Yang. He wouldn't harm me!" Mo Xiao replied with a smile before swallowing the pill heartily.

While the vast difference in their strength did leave him feeling a little disheartened, the trust and feelings that he had for Zheng Yang had not changed at all.

He knew for certain that Zheng Yang would not harm him, and he trusted him so.

"Little Meng is right. Mo Xiao, how can you swallow a pill from another person so recklessly?"

Lu Xun also did not expect his student to swallow the pill given by another person so readily. With a frown on his forehead, he rushed forward and placed his palm on Mo Xiao's body, saying, "I'll check on your physical condition to see if there's anything wrong with that pill!"

Boom!

Barely after his zhenqi surged into Mo Xiao's acupoints, a gush of heat suddenly rushed out from the latter's body, knocking him back. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

Peng!

Lu Xun was sent flying before knocking heavily onto the stage, leaving a massive pit in it.

"What terrifying strength..." Lu Xun remarked with narrowed eyes as he struggled to his feet.

He anxiously looked at his student, only to see tremendous energy pulsating around the latter's acupoints. It looked almost as if the young man would burst into flames. An incredible surge of spiritual energy gathered around the young man, forming a massive spiral above him.

Kacha!

In less than three breaths, he had already overcome his bottleneck, and his Tongxuan realm pinnacle cultivation advanced into Zongshi realm.

However, it did not stop there.

Zongshi realm primary stage!

Zongshi realm intermediate stage!

Zongshi realm advanced stage!

Zongshi realm pinnacle...

Zhizun realm primary stage!

Zhizun realm intermediate stage...

Even upon reaching Zhizun realm pinnacle, the momentum of his breakthroughs did not halt at all. He continued achieving a breakthrough right to Transcendent Mortal.

Eventually, his cultivation stabilized at Transcendent Mortal 2-dan Origin Energy realm. Every movement of his was suffused with incredible power, making it feel as if he had just ascended to immortality.

“T-this...” Lu Xun’s eyes widened as his body trembled uncontrollably. Looking almost as if he had seen a ghost, he uttered in disbelief, “That pill... is it a grade-6 pill?”

Only a pill of grade-6 and above could possibly contain such pure medicinal energy that it would allow a person to achieve a breakthrough of several realms at once without coming to harm.

“Grade-6?”

The young lady from before suddenly felt her vision going dark.

She suddenly recalled how she had rejected the pill earlier when they offered to pay her with it instead of gold coins... and she had even accused the other party of trying to swindle her.

Had she accepted and swallowed it right away, the person to have made a breakthrough would have been her instead!

“Of course not!” Hearing Lu Xun’s words, Zheng Yang shook his head. “How could my teacher possibly have grade-6 pills?”

“It isn’t a grade-6 pill? If that isn’t the case, how could it allow Mo Xiao to achieve a breakthrough without suffering any side effects? His cultivation still feels incredibly compact; there isn’t any feeling of looseness or instability!” Lu Xun argued with widened eyes.

All medicine contained some degree of poison. The higher grade a pill was, the greater medicinal energy it would harness, thus boosting a person’s cultivation by a greater degree.

However, this came at a price. One’s cultivation would be unstable after the breakthroughs, and it was highly likely that it would harm one’s body in one way or another.

Was it really possible for a pill lower than grade-6 to achieve such mystical effects?

“Grade-6 pills don’t have the ability to simultaneously heal a person’s injuries and boost their cultivation significantly. The pill my teacher took out is a grade-8 pill, which is why Mo Xiao was able to achieve a breakthrough in his cultivation!” Zheng Yang explained with a smile.

“Grade-8?”

The commotion in the auditorium abruptly hushed as everyone found themselves stupefied by what they had just heard.

# 1857 Zheng Yang's Girlfriend 1

It went without saying that a grade-8 pill could only be forged by an 8-star apothecary or above. Every single one of those pills was unbelievably invaluable. Even the king of the Tianxuan Kingdom would willingly abandon his position if he could acquire a grade-8 pill in return!

To actually give such a valuable pill to Mo Xiao without any hesitation...

Feeling the energy coursing through his body and his right leg healing up without a hitch, Mo Xiao felt as if he was dreaming. He hurriedly shook his head and exclaimed, “Zheng Yang, this is simply too expensive. I can’t accept this gift from you!”

He had thought that it would just be an ordinary recovery pill. How in the world was he to know that it would actually be a legendary grade-8 pill?

Had he known that it was worth so much, he would never have swallowed it!

“There’s no need to stand on ceremony—it’s just a pill. Given our relationship, it’s nothing at all!” Zheng Yang patted his good friend’s shoulder as he spoke with a smile.

Even though their worlds had diverged from one another, their feelings still remained. The nature of their relationship might change, but he would always remember Mo Xiao to be the person who had practiced spearmanship along with him in his younger days.

Realizing that the young man standing before him was actually a fearsome figure, Lu Xun hurriedly walked over with a hint of deference in his eyes. “Mo Xiao, your friend is...”

A person who could afford to take out a grade-8 pill and gift it to another so easily... Without a doubt, the other party was not

someone whom a 2-star master teacher like him could compare to.

“Teacher, he is...”

Perplexed to hear that his teacher was unable to recognize his good friend, Mo Xiao frowned in doubt. He was just about to introduce Zheng Yang when he heard a voice in his ears. “I think it will be best if you don’t introduce me. Back then, things didn’t end too happily between me and Lu Xun laoshi...”

Mo Xiao immediately trailed to a halt.

Indeed. Due to Lu Xun humiliating Zhang Shi back then, his good friend, together with Zhao Ya and the others, had challenged Lu Xun to a duel and pummeled him in public, causing their relationship to be rather tense.

“He’s a friend whom I met by coincidence. I just didn’t think that he would have such a valuable pill in his possession!” Mo Xiao replied.

“I see.” Lu Xun could detect that Mo Xiao was not being completely honest, but he chose not to probe any further.

He took a glance at Zhang Xuan and the others before nodding contemplatively.

“While the pill has raised your cultivation, you still have to reinforce it carefully before you are able to utilize it properly. Since that’s the case, I won’t bother you any longer. Let’s meet again in the future!”

Having caused such a huge commotion, Zheng Yang felt that it would be awkward if he remained there. Thus, he bade his farewell to Mo Xiao before leaving with Zhang Xuan and the others.

At this point, there was no one amid the crowd who did not know that they were extraordinary, especially the young lady who had demanded the entrance fee from them earlier. She quickly rushed up to them, hoping to grasp the opportunity that she had missed earlier once more. However, barely after she took a few steps, her vision suddenly blurred. Before she

knew it, their silhouettes had vanished, as if they had never appeared in the first place.

It was as if everything had been a dream. Even when she tried to recall the event earlier, she found that she was unable to recall their faces, let alone their unique traits.

“Wahhh!” The young lady collapsed to the ground and began bawling.

How could she have allowed such an opportunity to slip right through her fingers? At that moment, all she wanted to do was bawl her eyes out.

On the other hand, Lu Xun sent a telepathic message to Mo Xiao, remarking, “They are Zhang shi and his direct disciples.”

It was hard to tell whether he was asking a question or simply making a statement.

“Teacher...” Mo Xiao’s face reddened upon hearing those words.

It was clear to see that his good brother had been unwilling to reveal his identity publicly, but at the same time, he did not wish to lie to his teacher.

“I don’t intend to put you in a tough position... The reason I was able to tell is because I can’t think of anyone else who would come here and give you a grade-8 pill,” Lu Xun said with a bitter smile. “Treasure your friend well. It’s the greatest fortune of your life to know him.”

Having cleared the 2-star master teacher examination, he was privy to some of the secrets of the world. Through his connections, he had learned that his rival from a year ago, after leaving Tianxuan Kingdom, had lived a brilliant life that shone like the stars in the sky. From time to time, he would hear of the other party performing some sort of spectacular feat that would leave the eyeballs of others popping out.

Many said that he was a genius as well, but compared to the other party... Well, there was probably no merit in making this comparison at all. The more he thought about it, the more he

felt like a tadpole in a marsh standing in the face of a divine dragon of the Nine Heavens...

Seeing that his teacher knew the truth, Mo Xiao knew that there was no point hiding it at all. Unable to suppress his curiosity, he asked, "Teacher, you knew? If so, may I know if Zheng Yang is at Zhizun realm... or even higher than that?"

His first thought upon witnessing the other party's strength was that the other party had achieved a breakthrough to Zhizun realm. However, after he swallowed the pill and his cultivation rose to Transcendent Mortal 2-dan Origin Energy realm, he found that he was still unable to accurately perceive Zheng Yang's strength. It was only then that he realized that his good friend had already reached a level that even his teacher could only look up to.

"His current realm is not something that we are qualified to know. You only need to know that if your brother had fought seriously earlier, there's a good chance that the entire Tianxuan Kingdom might have disappeared completely from the map," Lu Xun replied helplessly.

"The entire Tianxuan Kingdom... disappearing from the map?" Mo Xiao's lower jaw fell slack in astonishment.

...

After leaving the auditorium, Zhang Xuan and his students headed to the classroom where they had studied in the past.

There were no changes to the classroom; it looked as small and narrow as it had done before.

After looking around the classroom for a while, Zhang Xuan waved his hand and said, "You should go and reunite with your kin!"

"Un!"

Nodding, Wang Ying, Zhao Ya, and the others took their leave.

Wang Ying came from one of the Four Great Clans of Tianxuan Royal City, so her elder brother and father resided in the city. Zhao Ya's father was one of the highest officials of the Tianxuan Kingdom and was currently serving as the lord

of Baiyu City, Naturally, she had to meet her father since she had finally returned.

As for Wei Ruyan and Lu Chong, as they had already lost all of their kin, they did not have anyone particular whom they really wanted to meet.

Shortly after Zhao Ya and the others left, Zheng Yang hesitated for a brief moment before asking, “Junior Ruyan... may I trouble you to come along with me?”

“What is it?” Wei Ruyan replied with a frown.

Perhaps it was due to the influence of her background or the Innate Poison Body, but she had a cold demeanor. Other than Zhang Xuan, she would rarely bother with others, even if the other party was her senior or junior.

While she was relatively closer to Zheng Yang, the truth was that they rarely spoke to one another.

“I need your help with something... it’s about one of the regrets that I have been harboring thus far!” Zheng Yang spoke hesitantly.

“Oh? Very well then. What is it?” Wei Ruyan replied.

Her teacher had always told her that she should look after her juniors and seniors. Since Zheng Yang needed her help with something, as long as it was not too much trouble, she did not mind helping him.

“I would like to bring you to meet someone...”

“You want me to meet someone?” Wei Ruyan asked in bewilderment.

It was not as if Zheng Yang did not know that she did not take too well to anyone except for their teacher, so why did he still make such a request of her?

Seeing Wei Ruyan’s expression, Zheng Yang hurriedly explained in embarrassment, “You don’t have to say anything later on. You just have to stand on the spot, and it’ll suffice...”

“Just who in the world is it? If the other party is strong, you can report it to our teacher and get his help,” Wei Ruyan said.

“No, no! That isn’t it. Not only is she not strong, she’s extremely weak...”

At this point, Zheng Yang gritted his teeth tightly, as if making up his mind, before explaining, “To tell you the truth... Before I came under our teacher’s tutelage, there was a girl whom I loved. I gave her my heart, only to be faced with cold mockery and rejection... Since I have returned here, I wanted to meet her once more. It’s not that I still have feelings for her, but I want to put a full stop to this regret of mine...”

“In other words, you want me to act as your girlfriend?” Wei Ruyan scoffed.

Her senior was already the head of the Combat Master Hall, an Ancient Sage expert. Who could have thought that he would be such an amateur when it came to affairs relating to the heart?

So, because he had been rejected by the other party in the past, he wanted to find an even more beautiful person to act as his girlfriend so as to make the other party regret rejecting him?

What a childish act it was!

Had she been in his shoes, there was no way that she would have resorted to something as meaningless as that. If the other party dared reject her, she would have just poisoned the other party to death. It would be an utter waste of breath to thrash things out and speak so much nonsense.

# 1858 Zheng Yang's Girlfriend 2

Zheng Yang scratched his head in embarrassment at having his intentions pointed out so directly by Wei Ruyan.

“Fine, fine. I’ll agree to your request!” Seeing the look on Zheng Yang’s face, Wei Ruyan sighed deeply before relenting. With a glint in her eyes, she asked, “So, what do you need me to do? Shall I poison her? If you want, I can guarantee her a slow and painful death, and you can be assured that there will be no evidence pointing to you. If you are worried about her family getting vengeance on you, I can help you get rid of them as well...”

“A-ah... It’s alright. I think I can handle it by myself,” Zheng Yang replied with a shudder.

He was getting the feeling that he might have erred in his judgement when he requested his junior’s help.

“There’s no need to stand on ceremony. If you don’t want her dead, I can concoct some pills that will eat into her mind and turn her into a puppet. She will become your toy to play with, and you won’t need to worry about her turning against you at all...” Wei Ruyan continued throwing out ideas with a nonchalant look on her face.

“Cough cough...” Zheng Yang quickly interrupted Wei Ruyan’s train of thought. “Junior, I just remembered that I still have other stuff to attend to! You seem to be rather busy as well, so I guess I won’t trouble you for such trivialities. Farewell!”

And so, he immediately turned tail and fled.

As expected of the master of Poison Hall... Wei Ruyan was truly not someone to be trifled with!

However, before Zheng Yang could get far, he heard the sound of wind behind him. Turning around, he saw a frail figure

following behind him, and he was nearly scared out of his wits.

“Junior Ruyan...” Zheng Yang said with a hint of bitterness in his voice.

“I get it, you don’t need to waste your breath explaining. I was only making some casual remarks; it’s not as if I am fond of meaningless slaughter! Even if I want to make a move, I’ll only make a move on those who are an Ancient Sage and above. Ordinary humans don’t really pique my interest anymore!” Wei Ruyan harrumphed.

While she was the master of the Poison Hall, she was not the kind of person who would take away a life for trivial reasons. Her words might not reflect it, but having lost her loved ones before, she was well aware of the value of life.

Besides, if she dared make light of life, her teacher would probably be the first one to whip her to death.

“But...” Zheng Yang protested weakly.

He knew that his junior had just been pulling his leg, but he really did not dare order a person as skilled with poison as Wei Ruyan around!

If she lost her cool and released her poison, he would really be at a loss.

“No buts. Lead the way forward. If you dare say another meaningless word, I’ll poison you mute!” Wei Ruyan flung her hands coolly.

“...” Zheng Yang nearly burst into tears.

What the heck was that?

If he had known that would happen earlier, there was no way that he would have turned to her for help. Things really seemed to be getting out of his control. It was as if he had gotten onboard a pirate’s ship and could not alight anymore.

The two of them swiftly flitted out of Hongtian Academy, and not too long later, they stopped right before a majestic manor. This manor was truly humongous in size, spanning the width of an entire street.

Looking down at the manor from the sky, Zheng Yang was confused. “Wait a moment, this doesn’t seem right...”

“What’s wrong?” Wei Ruyan walked up to his side.

“I used to live in this area, and I’m sure that it’s a civilian area. Why would there be such a huge manor here?” Zheng Yang remarked in astonishment.

His family was not too well-to-do. Otherwise, if he had gone through systematic training, he would not have had difficulties clearing Wang Chao laoshi’s assessment!

Before he left, the place had still been an ordinary civilian housing area. When did such a massive manor appear there?

“Isn’t that question a really simple one to answer? You just have to grab a person off the streets and ask him.”

Wei Ruyan descended to the ground and walked up to a tea stand. Looking at the owner of the tea stand, she asked, “Friend, may I ask if this manor has recently been constructed?”

The owner of the tea stand initially could not be bothered to answer the question, but when he saw the looks of the young lady, a smile blossomed on his face as he quickly answered, “Young lady, it must be your first time in Tianxuan Royal City! You’re right, this manor was recently constructed. The construction began a year ago, and it was completed in less than a month. It’s said that all of the top craftsmen in the area worked tirelessly within this period of time in order to complete this project on time! Take a look at the layout of the courtyard. Rumor has it that the owner of the manor hired landscapers, making it a building even grander than the royal palace itself!”

“Even landscapers were brought in?”

Wei Ruyan and Zheng Yang exchanged gazes.

Most civilians in Tianxuan Royal City might have been unaware of the significance of landscapers, but the two of them were fully aware. Even large clans like the Zhang Clan would have to tap into some connections in order to contact a landscaper. If the owner of the manor had the resources to

build this manor and connections to hire a landscaper... why would they still choose to live in Tianxuan Royal City?

“Do you know whose manor this is?” Zheng Yang asked out of curiosity.

“It’s the Su Clan’s manor!” the owner of the tea stand replied.

“Su Clan?” Zheng Yang was perplexed. “Since when has there been a Su Clan in Tianxuan Royal City?”

The Four Great Clans of the Tianxuan Royal City had always been the Wang, Liu, Bai, and Du. There had never been any notable Su Clans in the vicinity before.

“You have never heard of the Su Clan? Do you know of its clan head, Su Maoqing?” the owner of the tea stand asked with a frown.

“Su Maoqing?” Zheng Yang’s body jolted as he looked as if he had heard something unbelievable. “Is... Is his daughter Su Feifei?”

“That’s right!” The owner of the tea stand nodded in response. “If not for his daughter finding a good son-in-law, there’s no way that he, Su Maoqing, would have been able to live in such a luxurious manor! If it was two years ago, he wouldn’t have been able to afford the tea from my stand! Even the clothes that he wore were shabby and ugly. However, after finding himself that son-in-law, the one thing that he doesn’t lack now is money. I heard that he spent a total of ten gold coins just for his dinner yesterday!”

“Wait a moment! Son-in-law?” Zheng Yang cut into the owner’s words. Unknowingly, his hands had already clenched into fists.

“Huh? It looks like you really don’t know much, do you? However, you are right to ask me about the matter! I have been working here for more than ten years now, and there’s nothing in this area that escapes my notice!”

The owner of the tea stand was becoming more and more passionate in his words, such that it was starting to feel as if he would never stop. “His daughter, Su Feifei, somehow got to know a noble of some empire. The noble is rich and powerful,

and he built this massive manor just for the two of them. Otherwise, given the capabilities of that father and daughter, do you think that they would ever have been able to afford something of this scale?”

“I see...” Zheng Yang replied as he nodded in a daze.

“So, this Su Feifei is the young lady whom you fancied in the past? It seems like she doesn’t a good eye for people!” Wei Ruyan chuckled softly as she sent a telepathic message to Zheng Yang.

Be it the noble of whichever empire or what, even emperors would pale in comparison to the current Zheng Yang!

To think that Su Feifei had actually forsaken the pearl before her eyes to settle with a mere noble... It sure would be interesting to break open her mind and find out what she was thinking once she found out what she had missed out on.

“I...” Zheng Yang was momentarily unable to find the words to speak.

Back then, he had been rejected by Su Feifei right before the assessment, resulting in his forceful spearmanship being riddled with hesitance. As a result, he had failed to come under Wang Chao’s tutelage.

“Look, they are coming out!”

Jiya!

The massive gates of the manor creaked open, and a young lady holding onto the arm of a middle-aged man walked out from within.

The young lady was decent looking, but in terms of appearance, she would hardly be a match for even Shen Bi Ru, let alone Wei Ruyan, Zhao Ya, and the others. The middle-aged man beside her had a plump body and slightly distorted facial features. His size was even more exaggerated than Yuan Tao’s.

Despite so, the young lady’s chin remained proudly tilted upward, as if she was holding onto the hand of a charming prince.

Seeing this sight, Wei Ruyan scoffed, “The person you liked actually married such an ugly old man?”

It was likely that Su Feifei had married the other party for his money, but how in the world could Su Feifei bear sleeping beside someone like that every night if it was not true love?

Breathing out deeply, Zheng Yang turned around and said, “Let’s go!”

This was the first person whom he had liked, and his crush on her had lasted more than five years. All he wanted was to pay her one last visit so as to put down his feelings for her once and for all. Since he had met her, and it seemed like she was living blissfully... that was already enough for him.

“Go? The show hasn’t even started yet, so how can we go at such an exciting moment?” Wei Ruyan chuckled softly as her lips crept into a smile.

# 1859 A Bird in the Jungle

No matter what, Zheng Yang was her senior. He had offered his heart to Su Feifei back then, only to be cruelly rejected. If Su Feifei had lived her life properly since then, she would have had nothing to say. However, she had actually found an oversized old man to live with.

Of course, it was Su Feifei's right to choose how she wanted to live, but Wei Ruyan simply could not help but feel pissed at this turn of events.

And given that she was pissed, how could she possibly allow them to continue living happily?

Not expecting Wei Ruyan to refuse to leave, Zheng Yang suddenly had a bad premonition. "Junior, don't mess around. They are just ordinary people..."

"Don't worry, I don't plan on going too far!" Ignoring Zheng Yang's protests, Wei Ruyan took a seat at the tea stand and smiled sweetly at the owner. "Boss, a pot of tea here!"

After the pot of tea arrived, she sipped leisurely on the tea as if she was just idling her afternoon around in the area. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

Knowing that it would be impossible for him to forcefully extricate Wei Ruyan from the area, Zheng Yang clutched his forehead before sitting right in front of her with a helpless look on his face.

Su Feifei looked at the middle-aged man beside her and asked, "Xiang-ge, are we really heading to the royal palace?"

"I instructed that Shen Zhui fellow to bring me some death soldiers, but he hasn't gotten it done yet. He probably doesn't want his emperor's seat anymore!" The middle-aged man addressed as Xiang-ge harrumphed coldly as a vicious glint flashed across his eyes.

“To dare disobey Xiang-ge, that Shen Zhui sure is brazen! If we don’t teach him a lesson, he might think that he’s really something!” Su Feifei covered her mouth with her hand as she scoffed coyly, fully revealing her disdain for the emperor of the Tianxuan Kingdom.

In the eyes of others, Shen Zhui was the respected emperor of the Tianxuan Kingdom, but to her, he meant nothing at all.

“That’s right! He’s just the emperor of a measly Unranked Kingdom, but he sure thinks highly of himself. If not for my benevolence, he would have already died many times over...” Xiang-ge sneered coldly.

In the midst of his words, his face suddenly twitched, and strength suddenly drained from his legs.

Putong!

He fell over and kneeled onto the ground.

Taken aback, Su Feifei exclaimed in horror, “Xiang-ge!”

She knew full well how powerful the middle-aged man beside her was. In terms of strength, even Shen Zhui was no match for him at all. He was an existence that far surpassed Zhizun realm. Yet, for him to fall down just like that... something had to be up!

“Who assaulted me?”

Not expecting to be humiliated in public, Xiang-ge glared at the surroundings ferociously as he spat with clenched jaws.

“You have been afflicted with my Divine Ghost Heart Beguiling Poison!” A calm voice sounded in the air. “If you wish to live, you need someone to willingly transfuse their fresh blood to you. Otherwise, within an incense’s time, you will die from excessive blood loss from your seven apertures, and not even the deities will be able to save you!”

Tracing the voice, Xiang-ge hurriedly lifted her head, only to see a young lady seated gracefully before a tea stand with a cup of piping hot tea in her hands.

“Who are you? We have no grudge against one another, so why do you want to kill me?”

Judging from how the young lady was able to poison him from afar and render him powerless, as well as the fact that he found himself unable to gauge the depths of the young lady's strength at all, Xiang-ge realized that he was not a match for the young lady. Thus, he did not dare move recklessly.

"How could there be so many grudges in the world to deal with? I simply found the sight of you irksome." Wei Ruyan leisurely tucked her hair behind her ears as she placed the teacup back onto the table. With absolute nonchalance, she remarked, "You don't have much time left. I don't think you have the luxury to be dawdling around here if you want to live."

"I..."

Xiang-ge swiftly drove the zhenqi in his body in hopes of neutralizing the poison in his body, but he found that he was unable to flush it out. It was likely just as the young lady had said; he needed someone to transfuse their blood into him in order to be cured.

With a livid expression, he turned to Su Feifei beside him and shouted, "Feifei, come over here!"

"I..." Knowing what Xiang-ge was thinking of, Su Feifei's face paled in horror as she retreated fearfully.

Even true love would falter in the face of life and death, let alone a relationship built on mutual benefits.

Watching as Su Feifei backed away, Xiang-ge narrowed his eyes threateningly. "Are you thinking of disobeying my orders?"

"I..." Su Feifei trembled in fear.

"You are just a countryside bumpkin. It can't be that you actually think of yourself as a noble person? You should have known the price behind the luxury you were given! Hurry up and transfuse your blood to me! If I recover from this poison, I'll dote on you like before. Otherwise, I'll have your life right here, right now!" Xiang-ge roared as killing intent flared from his eyes.

What Su Feifei and Su Maoqing? They were all just convenient tools at his disposal!

“Don’t!”

Knowing that she would likely lose her life if the transfusion took place, Su Feifei backed away fearfully. However, barely after taking a few steps back, she suddenly felt a powerful energy sweeping over her. In that instant, she realized that if she continued backing away, there was no doubt that Xiang-ge would have her life.

The light in her eyes immediately vanished, replaced with sorrowful darkness.

There was a person who had loved her wholeheartedly a year ago. He had confessed to her, but she had scorned him for his shabby background and rejected him. Who knew that the young man would actually find himself a good teacher and rise to the top? Even Shen Zhui had to honor him as an esteemed guest!

She had thought that she had lost the only opportunity in her life to break out of poverty, but who could have expected that she would meet Xiang-ge a year ago?

Xiang-ge treated her extremely well, even building her this massive manor. She had thought that he was truly in love with her, but at that moment, she realized that she was nothing more than a toy to the other party.

Paying no heed to the arguments between those two, Wei Ruyan turned to look at Zheng Yang with a smile on her face. “How is it?”

There was no better trial than life and death to test a person’s feelings... and clearly, these two people were only making use of one another!

“How she wishes to live her life is her own choice. I don’t have the right to interfere in her affairs,” Zheng Yang replied, but he felt as if his heart was being sliced into innumerable pieces.

He had liked this young lady from a very young age, and for the longest of time, his greatest wish had been to get together

with her. He had never thought that they would end up like that.

“I’ll give you an opportunity to play the hero. Don’t you want to make her regret her decision? There’s no better opportunity than this!” Wei Ruyan incited Zheng Yang.

“There’s no need for that. I have already removed her from my heart!” Zheng Yang shook her head.

He realized that it was meaningless even if he made her regret her decision. They were already two people from two different worlds; it was already impossible for them to get together.

Besides, upon knowing Su Feifei’s nature, even if they did get together, he knew that there would be a lingering doubt in his mind that the other party was only interested in his fortune and power, not he himself. He would hate to put himself in a position where he would constantly be doubting his partner.

Since that was the case, why even bother?

“It doesn’t matter whether you have removed your feelings for her or not. If you don’t do anything now, she will really lose her life,” Wei Ruyan remarked calmly as she continued sipping on her tea.

Zheng Yang hurriedly raised his head, only to see that Xiang-ge’s eyes had gone completely red. Xiang-ge raised his arm and pulled Su Feifei toward him with his zhenqi. Using his finger as a sword, he lightly slit the young lady’s pale wrist, causing warm blood to flow out.

Transfusing blood and transferring a bloodline were two different matters. Transfusing blood only needed one to use the blood of another to replace their own poisoned blood. The process was not too complicated, and even a normal 2-star physician would be able to carry out such an operation. Even though Xiang-ge had been poisoned, his cultivation had not been suppressed. As long as he carried it out carefully, he would be able to do it himself.

Seeing that Su Feifei would really lose her life at this rate, Zheng Yang immediately got up and bellowed, “Hold it right there!”

In response, Xiang-ge turned his head around and glared at Zheng Yang coldly.

At the same time, Su Feifei heard that familiar voice, and her body trembled. She quickly turned her gaze to the figure walking toward her, and tears began streaming from her eyes.

“Zheng Yang... y-you are back?”

There was no way she would not recognize that voice. It belonged to the young man who had bucked up the courage to confess to her, only to be rejected.

Watching as he walked over a step at a time, his figure looked incomparably large under the rays of the sun.-ge means elder brother, but it's also commonly used by ladies to address their lovers. In Legend of the Condor Heroes, Huang Rong addresses her husband, Guo Jing, as Jing-gege, too.~15 minutesRefers to the two eyes, two nostrils, two ears, and one mouth.

# 1860 Xiang-ge's Identity

Even though Zheng Yang did not want to make a move, he knew his junior's temperament too well. She was not so heartless as to allow Xiang-ge to really kill Su Feifei, but she would only step in at the very last moment.

Even though he no longer felt the passion that he once had for the young lady before him, he could not stand to watch her suffering right before his eyes.

Zheng Yang's arrival was like a final ray of hope for Su Feifei. Clutching tightly onto that ray of hope, she desperately cried, "Zheng Yang, save me!"

"Don't worry!"

With a wave of his hand, the energy that Xiang-ge had wrapped around Su Feifei immediately dissipated.

"Who are you?" Xiang-ge asked with narrowed eyes.

He only had an incense's time left. If he did not quickly find someone to transfuse blood to him, he might just lose his life.

This fellow seemed to have appeared out of nowhere, and from the looks of it, he seemed to have some ties with Su Feifei. This made him extremely wary.

"It doesn't matter who I am. I just want to ask what your relationship with her is. If you don't like her, why did you get together with her, even building such a huge manor for her?" Zheng Yang asked calmly, as if a judge dictating the life and death of a criminal.

After all that he had been through, he was not the young man whom he had been. If not for the fact that Su Feifei was the final fragment of regret in the depths of his heart, the innocent dream of his youth, he would not have come over in the first place.

Xiang-ge pondered for a moment before replying. "I do have feelings for her. Otherwise, given my identity, why would I

lower myself to live in such a trivial Unranked Kingdom?”

He noticed that the young man had been sitting together with the young lady who had poisoned him, and he realized that he was unable to see through the young man’s cultivation as well. Furthermore, the fact that the young man was able to make his zhenqi dissipate was enough to show that the young man was no ordinary figure.

All in all, this made him instinctively realize that he could not afford to offend the young man before him.

“You have feelings for her?” Zheng Yang scoffed. “If you have feelings for her, how could you ask her to sacrifice herself for your sake?”

If the two of them truly had feelings for one another, that would probably have been the end of it. After all, he had already let go of his feelings for Su Feifei, so there was no reason for him to interfere in her affairs anymore.

However, the middle-aged man had actually disregarded Su Feifei’s life just to ensure his own survival. In fact, there was not the slightest compassion or regret that could be seen in his eyes. This made Zheng Yang enraged.

For a noble from an empire to come over to an Unranked Kingdom to build such a massive manor, if it was not due to love, he had to be up to something.

“I really do love...” Xiang-ge hurriedly tried to explain himself.

“There’s no need to lie to me. You aren’t strong enough to do that,” Zheng Yang interjected coldly as he snapped his fingers.

“Argh!”

With a scream of agony, Xiang-ge collapsed to the ground in pain as sweat drenched his entire body.

It was just an instant, but it made him realize the unbridgeable gap between him and the young man before him. It would take a mere thought for the other party to kill him.

“Who in the world are you? Just what kind of grudge is there between the two of us? If you want her, I can give her to you!”

Xiang-ge screamed as he pointed frantically at Su Feifei.

Xiang-ge was a person who could sacrifice his loved ones when his life was at stake, let alone a woman whom he had absolutely no feelings for.

“Give her to me?” Zheng Yang’s face turned even colder. “Is she nothing more than a commodity in your eyes, or do you view her as a chip that you can give to others as and when you please so as to guarantee your own survival?”

“I...” Xiang-ge’s teeth clattered in fear.

In a moment of rage, Zheng Yang failed to control his own aura, leaving Xiang-ge feeling as if he was facing a ferocious beast. With a thought, the latter would be able to crush him into dust, leaving no trace of him at all.

Prior to getting together with Su Feifei, he had made sure to investigate the latter’s background. As someone born and raised in Tianxuan Royal City, there should have been no way that she would be acquainted with such a powerful person!

“He...”

While Xiang-ge was scared out of his wits, Su Feifei found her mind blanking out in confusion.

A year ago, Zheng Yang had been a nobody whom even someone like her could toss to the ground and stomp on. Yet, a year later, it seemed like their positions had completely reversed.

Even Xiang-ge, a figure whom Shen Zhui dared not offend, was nearly scared out of his wits before him...

Just how powerful was the current Zheng Yang?

Seeing that Xiang-ge was on the verge of being crushed to death under Zheng Yang’s pressure, Wei Ruyan walked over while stretching her back lazily as she remarked with a smile, “Our teacher will get mad if you go too far. Don’t say that I didn’t warn you.”

“Un!”

Hearing those words, Zheng Yang retracted his aura before gazing down on Xiang-ge once more. With eyes narrowed into slits, he said, "I only want to hear the absolute truth, so don't you dare play games with me. The person who has just poisoned you is my junior. If I notice any falsehood from you, I will have no choice but to get my junior to conduct a Soul Search on you!"

"Junior?"

Xiang-ge's body trembled as he quickly turned his gaze to Wei Ruyan. Meeting with the smile on her face, his body froze on the spot.

If even the junior was so powerful, would it not be even more so for the senior?

"Speak! Who are you, and what is your purpose here?" Zheng Yang eyed Xiang-ge coldly as a blue glint flashed from the tip of his spear.

In truth, even without relying on Soul Search, he had several hundred methods that he could use to force the other party to speak.

He would truly be a failure as the head of the Combat Master Hall if he did not possess some interrogation methods!

Seeing the blue glint on the spear, Xiang-ge felt as if someone had grabbed his zhenqi and rattled it all around, leaving him with a terrible aching feeling throughout.

If even looking at the blue glint could leave him with such a feeling, he could not imagine the suffering that he would be put under if such a thing penetrated his body.

Knowing that there was no escape from this, Xiang-ge gritted his teeth before starting his story. "I am Xiang Yun, a treasure hunter. I have been scouring Unranked Kingdoms over the years, searching for all kinds of treasures... and my efforts eventually led me here!"

"A treasure hunter?"

Zheng Yang and Wei Ruyan exchanged glances before nodding.

They had heard of such an occupation before, and the most famous treasure hunters in the world were none other than the Sage Yun Clan.

Treasure hunters possessed exceptional means that allowed them to pinpoint the location of hidden artifacts, making them one of the most lucrative occupations on the Master Teacher Continent.

“I detected incredible pulsations of energy coming from the place where Su Feifei lived, so I figured that it was an exceptionally powerful artifact,” Yun Xiang explained. “My first thought was to buy the house, but I quickly dispelled the notion as I knew it would appear rather suspicious if an outsider like me abruptly bought a house in an Unranked Kingdom. Furthermore, treasure hunting is a long-term process, so there’s a risk that an anomaly in my actions will draw the attention of others and place me in trouble. Thus, I used Su Feifei as a cover for me to conduct my work.

“With the relationship between the two of us serving as cover, I was able to successfully purchase all of the houses in the area without any trouble. After that, in order to ensure that I am able to conduct my operations in privacy, I chose to construct a massive manor right here.”

As the saying went, ‘danger comes to those who flaunt their wealth’. It was true that Yun Xiang’s strength was unrivaled in the Tianxuan Kingdom, but news of the emergence of a superior treasure would indubitably draw in more experts from all around the continent. By then, even with the full force of his clan, it was unlikely that they would be able to claim the treasure for themselves.

Thus, he had used marriage as an excuse to buy all of the houses in the area and built a manor before setting up all kinds of protective formations in the area.

This way, no one would suspect a thing.

“You said that you like me... but everything is just a lie so that you can obtain the treasure hidden beneath my home?” Those words made Su Feifei’s face pale as she fell feebly to the ground.

Back then, she had been drawn in by the other party's flowery words and immense wealth. She had thought that she had captured this man with her charms. However, it turned out that what the other party desired had never been her but the treasure hidden beneath her house.

# 1861 The Fearsome Stone Table

Knowing that it would be best for him to distance himself as far from Su Feifei as possible, Yun Xiang harrumphed coldly. “Given your gold digger personality and your subpar looks, do you really think that you are able to move my heart? If not for the fact that there’s a treasure beneath your house, there’s no way I would have put up with you till now!”

“Enough!” Zheng Yang said with a fling of his sleeve.

Peng!

Struck in the chest, Yun Xiang was sent flying before crashing heavily onto the ground. His face reddened, and a mouthful of crimson blood spurted from his lips.

“You only have to answer what I want to know,” Zheng Yang said coldly. “Everything other than that is just a waste of my time!”

“Y-yes!” Suppressing his injuries, Yun Xiang heaved a sigh of relief upon knowing that he had managed to make it clear that he did not have any relationship with Su Feifei at all. “I don’t really know about treasure and the like, but over the past year of work, I have gotten near my goal. However, it’s just that the barrier around the treasure is too strong, such that I’m unable to breach it due to my lacking cultivation...”

Zheng Yang pondered with a deep frown for a moment before replying, “Take me there!”

For someone of the Sage Yun Clan to go through so much effort just to acquire some treasure, it was likely that the treasure was truly nothing ordinary. Since that was the case, he really should head over to take a look.

“Alright!” Yun Xiang nodded.

Given that his life was in the other party’s hands, there was no way he could turn the other party down.

Thus, Zheng Yang released his pressure on Yun Xiang, and under the latter's lead, they entered the manor. As for Su Feifei, she stood hesitantly on the spot for a moment before choosing to follow them.

As soon as Zheng Yang and Wei Ruyan entered the manor, the first thing they noticed were innumerable isolation formations set up all around. It was really no exaggeration to say that the manor was an enclosed fortress by itself, such that nothing inside could get out.

Proceeding ahead, it did not take long for them to stop before a majestic hall. Pushing the door open, they saw a massive pit lying right ahead of them. There was a huge pile of white bones all around, forming a sight of desolation.

“You killed so many people just to acquire the treasure?” Zheng Yang narrowed his eyes as killing intent seeped out of his body. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

The responsibility of the Combat Master Hall lay not only in fending off the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe but to maintain the peace and prosperity of mankind as well. To kill so many humans just to acquire a treasure was already an infringement of the Combat Master Hall's moral code.

“N-no, I didn't kill them! They were workers whom I spent a fortune to hire! They are in charge of the excavation job, but not too long ago, when they dug up a stone tablet, an aura was released, and all of them died on the spot. For fear that it would draw suspicion, I reduced their corpses to white bones and left them here!” Yun Xiang explained in a fluster.

“I have already compensated the families of the workers handsomely. Even though I desire the treasure a lot, I dare not kill the innocent for the sake of it...”

“Stone tablet?” Knowing that these workers were already dead and that it would be difficult to continue investigating this matter, Zheng Yang decided to put that matter aside for the time being and inquire about the other suspicion that he had.

“It’s located at the bottom of the pit. I dispatched ten death soldiers to inspect it, but all of them died as soon as they reached the vicinity of the stone tablet. So, I’m not too sure about what’s going on either,” Yun Xiang explained with a bitter look on his face.

He had thought that he had stumbled upon a huge treasure, but who could have known that the death toll would just keep rising higher and higher? He had already sunk in too much to allow himself to back off with nothing in hand.

As there was no one else who was willing to approach the stone tablet, Yun Xiang had no choice but to turn to Shen Zhui in hopes of acquiring some death soldiers from him. It was just that he had never expected to stumble upon those two experts shortly after leaving his manor.

“Let’s head down and take a look!” Hearing that a stone tablet had actually taken away so many lives, Zheng Yang was growing more and more intrigued.

“This... I am a little too weak for this, so I’ll leave the two of you to be...” Yun Xiang’s face paled.

It went without saying that he did not dare enter the pit himself. He was afraid that he would die just like many others that had gone before him.

“Cut the cr\*p and get moving!” Wei Ruyan harrumphed. With a wave of her hand, Yun Xiang was thrown into the pit before he could release a scream of agony.

Following which, Zheng Yang and Wei Ruyan leaped in.

The pit was roughly several hundred meters deep. There were many Night Illumination Pearls placed all around, making the interior shine as though it was morning.

As soon as they reached the bottom of the pit, Zheng Yang and Wei Ruyan immediately began looking around, only to have frowns creep onto their faces shortly after.

“This aura... feels a little weird!” Zheng Yang said after a moment of careful examination.

“It’s the aura of an Ancient Sage,” Wei Ruyan said. She turned to Yun Xiang beside her and asked, “Where’s the stone tablet supposed to be?”

“It’s supposed to be down there...” Gulping from fright, Yun Xiang pointed in front of him.

Knowing that there was something sinister about this place, Zheng Yang took a deep breath and whipped out his spear.

Hula!

He flicked his wrist lightly, and a large pile of sand was raked up, revealing a massive stone tablet.

There were mysterious, unreadable inscriptions on the stone tablet, and it emanated an air of killing intent. Just looking at the stone tablet was enough to leave one with a splitting headache.

The aura of an Ancient Sage that the two of them had felt earlier originated from that very stone tablet.

“This is the stone tablet that I talked about. Masters, I am a little too weak for this, so I’ll take my leave now...”

With quivering lips, Yun Xiang immediately turned around and darted away fearfully.

However, barely after taking two steps, his body suddenly froze on the spot. No matter how much he struggled, he found himself unable to go a single step further.

“With us around, there’s no way you will lose your life. If we die, there won’t be anyone to treat your poison, and you’ll die,” Wei Ruyan remarked calmly.

Yun Xiang was really on the verge of bursting into tears.

The other party was right. He was afflicted with severe poison, so if these two died, he would be the next to follow no matter where he fled.

“I’ll head over to take a look!”

Taking a deep breath, Zheng Yang placed his spear in front of him before approaching the stone tablet with wary, controlled steps.

Before even reaching the stone tablet, he suddenly felt concentrated killing intent gushing in his direction, seemingly attempting to tear him in two.

In the face of such might, any Great Sage cultivators would have succumbed to the immense pressure by now. However, Zheng Yang was an Ancient Sage cultivator, as well as the head of the Combat Master Hall. He had tempered his mind before, making him exceptionally resilient to the Otherworldly Demons' Zhenqi of Slaughter.

No matter how concentrated the killing intent was, it would not pose a threat to him.

Walking up to the stone tablet, he noticed that it was emanating a warm glow. As if the tens of thousands of years that it had spent buried underground had not damaged it in the slightest, its inscriptions looked as if they were freshly engraved.

Tracing the inscriptions with his finger, Zheng Yang shook his head. "These are characters from the ancient era. I can't read them at all!"

Due to the limitations of his knowledge, he could not discern the content of the inscription. If their teacher was with them, they might still have been able to do something about it.

Geji! Geji!

Seeing that Zheng Yang actually dared touch the stone tablet, Yun Xiang's teeth clattered together in fright.

All of the workers and death soldiers that he had sent in had passed away even when they were standing a long distance away from the stone tablet. Yet, this young man was able to walk up to it and even touch it directly with his hands. Just how powerful was he?

Why would such a formidable figure suddenly come to a place as minor as Tianxuan Kingdom?

Wait a moment. He recognizes Su Feifei, he uses a spear, and his junior is a master practitioner of poison... Could they possibly be...

All of a sudden, Yun Xiang's body froze on the spot as two names surfaced in his mind.

Even though he had not been in his clan over the past few years, there was probably no one in the world who did not know of the deeds of that legendary man and his many disciples.

Thinking about it... they seemed to have their roots in Tianxuan Kingdom.

Could the young man before him possibly be the most talented individual the Combat Master Hall had ever had, Hall Master Zheng?

He knew that the new hall master of the Combat Master Hall went by the surname of Zheng, but he had not been too sure of the other party's full name. However, now that he was raking his mind, he seemed to have the impression that the other party's full name was Zheng Yang...

An ordinary woman like Su Feifei actually had the fancy of the incumbent head of the Combat Master Hall?

This...

Sweat droplets began filling Yun Xiang's head as he felt a hoarseness at the back of his throat. He felt as if he would pass out at any moment.

# 1862 A Corpse

Ignoring Yun Xiang, who was facing the most severe mental breakdown in his entire life, the frown on Zheng Yang's forehead grew deeper and deeper as he walked around the stone tablet to take a closer look. Then, he turned back to look at Wei Ruyan.

Wei Ruyan nodded in response, as if affirming Zheng Yang's judgement.

So, Zheng Yang took a deep breath before taking several steps back. Following which, his spear shot forth with formidable might.

Hula!

Spatial ripples appeared in the air as the spear struck the direct center of the stone tablet.

Kacha!

The sound of the formation being torn apart echoed as the entire stone tablet trembled. A huge crack appeared in the ground, forming a passageway that led further downward.

The smell of decay was absent in the passageway. However, there was the scent of something ancient and sinister, almost like a pathway leading to the netherworld.

“Let's head in to take a look!”

The brave Zheng Yang was the first one to step into the passageway, and Wei Ruyan followed behind him.

The passageway was dark and slightly damp. The inscriptions on the wall had sealed the passageway tightly, such that those whose cultivation hadn't reached Ancient Sage would never be able to sense its existence.

“This seems to be a pathway constructed back during Kong shi's era...” Wei Ruyan said as she inspected her surroundings carefully.

In truth, the passageway looked as good as new, but the construction method and the inscriptions carried clear indications of the ancient era, thus hinting at its age.

Heading down the passageway, they traveled for several dozen li over the course of an hour before finally arriving before a stone chamber.

Zheng Yang placed his spear before his chest in preparation to meet with any unexpected circumstances. At the same time, Wei Ruyan flicked her wrist and embedded several Night Illumination Pearls to the walls all around, bringing illumination to the area.

The stone chamber was roughly forty meters in diameter, and at the center was a coffin made out of bluestone. It emanated an extremely historic aura.

“There’s only a coffin in here?” Wei Ruyan frowned in astonishment.

Which fool would construct an underground passageway that extended several dozen li and seal it with a stone tablet that only Ancient Sages could breach just to store a single coffin?

It was ridiculously extravagant, was it not?

Perplexed, Zheng Yang slowly approached the coffin. Lifting his spear, he was just about to use it to pry open the coffin when a sharp aura suddenly emanated from the coffin. Following which, he suddenly felt a jolt in his hands.

Weng!

Zheng Yang’s spear fell right to the ground, as if paying respects to the coffin.

“What happened?” Noticing that something was amiss, Wei Ruyan swiftly gathered her poison aura as she rushed forward, ready to reinforce Zheng Yang at any moment.

“My spear has been intercepted by another’s Spear Intent. It seems like the person in the coffin comprehended a higher level of Spear Intent than me!” Zheng Yang replied in astonishment.

Even though his spear was not an Ancient Sage artifact, through prolonged contact with him, it would not pale too much in comparison to one. Despite that, it was still forced to bow in submission to the coffin. It was apparent that whatever was in the coffin commanded a higher level of Spear Intent than him, rendering his spear utterly powerless before it.

“Wait a moment... Are you telling me that the thing in the coffin possesses spearmanship more advanced than you?” Wei Ruyan could hardly believe what she was hearing.

Her senior had learned his spearmanship directly from their teacher, and he had already reached the level of Spear Quintessence. It was no joke to say that he was the second most formidable spear user in their era. Despite that, he was actually saying that the thing inside the coffin was more formidable than him.

How could that be?

“No matter what, we have to open it to take a look. Junior, I need you to coordinate together with me in order to forcefully pry open the coffin!” Zheng Yang said.

Wei Ruyan nodded in agreement.

So, the two of them took their positions on the two ends of the coffin. With an understanding glance, Zheng Yang and Wei Ruyan raised their hands simultaneously and grabbed forth.

They were both Ancient Sage experts who had received Zhang Xuan’s personal guidance over the course of a month, causing their fighting prowess to rise to an exceptional level. Even Blood Reincarnation realm experts would be pushed to a corner against their combined might, let alone a mere coffin!

Jiya!

A hideous screeching sound echoed in the air as a crack appeared on the coffin. An overwhelming aura surged into the sky, threatening to collapse the entire underground cavern on them.

Zheng Yang quickly sealed the aura with a wave of his hand, and only after ensuring that it was not leaking at all did he finally proceed forward slowly.

The aura of Ancient Sages was destructive in nature. Even if a sliver of it leaked out, it could cause a huge calamity. Of course, cultivators of their caliber could deal with it easily, but the same could not be said for the civilians of Tianxuan Royal City.

Their carelessness could easily spell countless deaths.

Walking up to the coffin, they peeked inward, only to see a corpse lying still within. Even though years had passed, the corpse had retained its flesh and blood. From its external appearance, it looked as if it was just a person sleeping. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

“It’s the corpse of an Ancient Sage...”

The eyebrows of the two of them shot up.

Only the corpse of an Ancient Sage could possibly retain such frightening might even after death. Only the corpse of an Ancient Sage was non decayable, allowing it to retain its external appearance even after tens of thousands of years.

“This is...”

Taking a closer look at the corpse, Zheng Yang suddenly thought of something that caused his face to pale, and his body stiffened up in shock.

“What’s wrong?” Wei Ruyan asked in intrigue.

Even though they did not interact with one another frequently, she did have a good grasp of Zheng Yang’s personality. This senior of hers had a daring and reckless personality, so it was perplexing to see him getting shaken by a mere corpse.

“He is... Ancient Sage Ran Qiu!” Zheng Yang exclaimed as he clenched his fists tightly.

“Ancient Sage Ran Qiu? You mean the disciple of Kong shi who boasted the greatest fighting prowess, the founder of the Combat Master Hall?” Wei Ruyan was taken aback.

“That’s right!” Zheng Yang took in a deep breath to calm down the chaos in his mind.

Ancient Sage Ran Qiu had been one of the Ten Apostles under Kong shi's tutelage, and he had been the strongest Ancient Sage aside from Kong shi himself. Just the fact that he was the founder of the Combat Master Hall was testimony to his tremendous strength.

On two different occasions, when he inherited the position of the Progeny of Combat and hall master, he had knelt before Ancient Sage Ran Qiu's sculpture, which looked identical to the corpse before him. This was also why he had identified the other party with a single glance.

To think that one of the greatest disciples of Kong shi, the second strongest Ancient Sage in the world, would actually have his corpse buried there.

This was something that could not be found in any records!

It was no wonder his spear had bowed down as soon as it met with the coffin. Ancient Sage Ran Qiu was a spearmaster, and the Dragonbone Divine Spear was something that he had forged on his own.

The fact that the other party had forged such a powerful artifact showed how deep his understanding of spearmanship was. It was little wonder that the other party's comprehension of spearmanship had even exceeded his own.

After recovering from his shock, Zheng Yang turned around and instructed, "Junior, I'll need you to quickly return and inform our teacher of this matter. Meanwhile, I'll stand guard here!"

The scale of the issue went beyond their initial expectations. Given the severity of the matter, it was best for them to bring their teacher in to help make a judgement.

"Un!"

Understanding the logic behind Zheng Yang's decision, Wei Ruyan immediately turned around and flitted back to the surface.

After Wei Ruyan's departure, Zheng Yang walked slowly around the coffin, wanting to take a closer look at the elder who had founded the Combat Master Hall. But all of a sudden,

a series of mechanical clacking noises echoed in the air, and yet another passageway surfaced beneath the coffin.

Zheng Yang hesitated for a moment upon seeing this sight before deciding to venture in.

Bam!

As soon as he stepped into the passageway, the ray of light above him vanished.

The passageway had instantaneously closed on him!

Faced with such a situation, Zheng Yang frowned in bewilderment, but he did not panic. He took out a Night Illumination Pearl before carefully heading deeper into the passageway. A few steps later, he found another massive hall appearing before him. Its layout was very similar to the hall before, and there was also a coffin positioned at the very center of the room.

Zheng Yang pondered for a moment before walking toward the coffin. He raised his hand and pried open the lid, thus revealing a figure before him.

When he got a closer look at the corpse, it was as if a mini explosion had occurred in his mind. He hurriedly retreated several steps, till his back was pressed against the wall. Yet, even so, the disbelief in his mind did not vanish at all.

It was a very long while before a husky voice finally came out of his throat. "K-Kong shi?"

# 1863 Kong shi Is Dead?

The corpse lying in the coffin was none other than the World's Teacher, Kong shi!

Had he not ascended to a higher dimension? Why was his corpse there?

Zheng Yang's mind blanked out in that instant. No thoughts came to his mind at all, and he did not dare think any deeper into the matter. This was so huge that if he spoke a wrong word, it could lead to a major catastrophe.

Kong shi was the pillar of support within the Master Teacher Pavilion. Even though he had vanished from the world, many still held his teachings dear to them and viewed him as their ultimate aspiration. No one could have ever thought that the great Kong shi would actually be dead there!

Just like the sculptures erected in his form outside, he had a gentle smile on his lips, reminiscent of a kind teacher. It was as if he had been killed in the midst of his lecture.

But given the strength that Kong shi wielded, who could possibly have the ability to kill him?

And who was the one who had buried him there, such that even the Master Teacher Pavilion and the Hundred School of Philosophers were completely oblivious to it?

Zheng Yang's heart beat wildly as he felt his throat turning dry. There were so many words at the back of his mind, but he was unable to voice a single one of them. Eventually, he chose to simply sit on the floor and wait for himself to calm down.

It had been a feeling of shock when he saw Ancient Sage Ran Qiu's corpse, and after finding the second corpse, there was nothing but horror in his mind.

It was perfectly normal for anyone in the world to die, but for such a thing to happen to the revered Kong shi as well... The faith of countless would shatter in an instant!

Zheng Yang was so flustered that he did not know what he should do at all.

“It’s fine, it’s fine. Everything will be resolved once Teacher is here...” Zheng Yang struggled to his feet as he shook whatever thoughts he had out of his mind.

Having followed his teacher for so long, he knew that there was no difficulty in the world that could bring his teacher down. It was fine that he could not find a solution out of the current quandary he was seeing; all he had to do was wait.

With such a thought, he left the hall, intending to return to where he had come from. However, his feet suddenly froze in place.

A surge of power washed over him, and his consciousness blurred.

Putong!

Silence.

...Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

Sitting in the room that he had previously lectured in, Zhang Xuan felt his state of mind flowing freely, extending into the distance along with his thoughts.

He had only been an ordinary librarian in his previous life. It was beyond his imagination that the day would come when he would transcend over to another world.

It had been a period of confusion and panic when he first transcended over. He had no idea what he should do, and the only desire that drove him forward was the wish to live on.

It had taken some time for everything to settle down and for him to assimilate into the world.

All of the memories of his life surged into his head, be it his previous life, the period after his transcension, the moment that he first stepped into the Library of Heaven’s Path...

Slowly, something seemed to sprout within Zhang Xuan. It was a strength that seemed to exceed even the heavens

themselves. It was going to break free of the ground and blossom into something beautiful.

In his moment of enlightenment, flurried footsteps sounded in his ears. He slowly opened his eyes, only to see Wei Ruyan standing before him.

...

Hearing Wei Ruyan's words, Zhang Xuan abruptly rose to his feet. "Did you say that you found Ancient Sage Ran Qiu's corpse?"

Ancient Sage Ran Qiu was the strongest out of Kong shi's many disciples, and he had been a figure whom innumerable combat masters looked up to. Why would his corpse be found there, not to mention that it was even hidden in an underground hall several dozen li deep?

"Bring me over to take a look!"

Unable to bear his curiosity, he hurriedly followed Wei Ruyan into Yun Xiang's manor and into the underground passageway. It was not long before he arrived in a hall with a coffin right at the center.

Upon taking a closer look, a tight frown formed between Zhang Xuan's eyebrows. "Judging from outer appearance and the aura, he does seem to be Ancient Sage Ran Qiu..."

Back when he was at the White Creek Mountain, he had the opportunity to meet Ancient Sage Ran Qiu's fragmented soul. The corpse that was right before him shared the same appearance, and even the auras that they emanated were very similar.

The corpse likely belonged to Ancient Sage Ran Qiu.

"You should come over and take a look as well!" Zhang Xuan said with a flick of his wrist.

The Dragonbone Divine Spear flew forth from Zhang Xuan's waist and transformed into a majestic black dragon in the air. Looking down at the coffin beneath it, it descended to the ground and knelt down.

"Master!"

The body of the massive dragon trembled intensely as slight whimpers escaped from its mouth.

It was an artifact forged by Ancient Sage Ran Qiu. All along, it had thought that Ancient Sage Ran Qiu would ascend to a higher dimension together with Kong shi after sealing it in the ancient domain at White Creek Mountain, but who could have known that he would die just like that?

“It seems like it’s real then,” Zhang Xuan remarked. He looked around the hall, and a slight frown appeared on his forehead. He turned to Wei Ruyan and asked, “Where is Zheng Yang?”

“Hmm? I’m not too sure. He should have been here...” Wei Ruyan was taken aback.

Given that Zheng Yang had asked her to get their teacher, it stood to reason that he would be waiting for her there. Why was he nowhere to be seen?

Zhang Xuan scanned the area carefully, but there was no trace of Zheng Yang to be found. Eventually, he placed his palm lightly on Ancient Sage Ran Qiu’s corpse.

If he wanted to make sense of this place, the best way was to do it through the Library of Heaven’s Path.

“Flaws!”

The Library of Heaven’s Path jolted, but no book was formed.

Zhang Xuan shook his head in disappointment.

It was hard to tell whether it was because Ancient Sage Ran Qiu was only a corpse at the moment or that the place had the ability to obstruct the view of the heavens.

It should be the latter, Zhang Xuan thought as he continued surveying his surroundings.

He had used the Library of Heaven’s Path on corpses before, and the only limitation was that he was unable to gather much information on the individual’s life prior to their death. However, as for the other details such as the tier of their corpse and so on, it would still have been compiled and reflected in a book.

This was rather similar to what usually happened when he checked artifacts.

However, the fact that nothing had happened meant that the entire place was likely concealed from the heavens. This also explained why no seers had been able to uncover the fact that the strongest disciple of Kong shi was actually dead there.

“This is an ancient land that hasn’t been ravaged by the wars between mankind and the Otherworldly Demons. It offers the hope of recovering a diminished bloodline. Could this be somewhat linked to the reason why Ancient Sage Ran Qiu’s corpse is buried here?” Zhang Xuan began trying to put clues together to reason the happenings there.

Aside from the fact that most ancient domains were thin in spiritual energy, making them environments unsuitable for cultivation, there were actually many mystical things about them. For one, he had transcended over to an ancient domain, as well as the fact that Ancient Sage Ran Qiu’s corpse had been found here. Could there be any link between those two matters?

Zhang Xuan activated his Eye of Insight to do a thorough scan once more.

“There’s a passageway down here,” Zhang Xuan remarked as he stomped his feet lightly.

Jiyaya!

The coffin began to move to the side, revealing the passageway hidden beneath it.

He exchanged glances with Wei Ruyan for a moment heading down the passageway.

Naturally, Wei Ruyan quickly followed along as well.

The layout of the second hall was an exact replica of the first. Even the locations of the coffins were identical. It really felt as if they were trying to navigate their way through an ancient labyrinth.

Other than the coffin, the entire room was empty; there was not a single person to be seen.

“Teacher, it seems like Senior Zheng Yang was here,” Wei Ruyan suddenly said.

“Hmm?” Zhang Xuan turned to look at Wei Ruyan.

“There’s a slight indentation on the wall over there. Judging from the shape, it seems to have been left behind by him,” Wei Ruyan said as she pointed toward the wall.

Turning to look, he found that there was indeed a deep indentation in the wall. The size was a match with Zheng Yang’s physique. Chances were that it had been created when Zheng Yang’s back was pressed against the wall.

“You’re right. He might have seen the corpse in the coffin and backed away out of fear...” Zhang Xuan reasoned out as a spark of curiosity emerged in his eyes.

Just what could be in the coffin that would frighten Zheng Yang even more than Ancient Sage Ran Qiu’s corpse?

“Let’s open it and take a look!” Zhang Xuan instructed as he walked up to the coffin.

Jiya!

The lid of the coffin was pried open, revealing a figure right before them. He had a calm and peaceful look on his face, as if he had just been put to rest not too long ago.

Seeing this sight, Zhang Xuan felt his blood running cold.

The corpse that was inside the coffin was none other than...  
Zheng Yang!

# 1864 A Powerful Barrier

Lying in the coffin, there was a hint of a smile on Zheng Yang's lips. His body was still warm, and it looked as if he would open his eyes at any moment.

“Senior...”

Concentrated poison aura seeped out from Wei Ruyan's body as strong emotions began building up within her.

Despite her cold exterior, she did care a lot for the others. While she had put Zheng Yang down earlier, just seeing his corpse made it feel as if her heart was going to explode. If she knew who the culprit was, there was no doubt that she would have dashed right in to tear that person into shreds.

“Control your emotions!” Zhang Xuan bellowed.

“Y-yes!” Hearing her teacher's words, Wei Ruyan swiftly snapped out of her condition.

Nevertheless, she could not stop trembling as she looked at the corpse in the coffin.

“This isn't Zheng Yang,” Zhang Xuan said.

He had also received the shock of his life when he first saw the face of the corpse. However, as he took a closer look, he had swiftly realized that something was amiss.

The body was simply too lifelike.

There would inevitably be some changes to a person's body after their death, no matter how powerful they might have been in life. Furthermore, he was well aware of Zheng Yang's character; he would never be one to accept death so peacefully. Even at the cost of his life, he would surely rip off a bone from the culprit before breathing his last breath!

More importantly... he had left a surge of his Heaven's Path zhenqi in Zheng Yang's body, so there was no way that anyone would be able to kill Zheng Yang without drawing his notice.

“If it isn’t Senior Zheng Yang, then...” Wei Ruyan was taken aback by what Zhang Xuan was saying.

No matter how she looked at or touched the corpse, it was very clear that it belonged to Zheng Yang. She could not imagine anything in the world that could possibly create such a lifelike replica of him.

“It’s most likely an illusion, an illusion that blurs the distinction between truth and falsehood. Something that can even deceive the heavens,” Zhang Xuan murmured as he walked back and forth in the hall.

If the one to appear had not been Zheng Yang, he might not have considered the possibility that it was an illusion.

This was because the sight before him was too real, and the Library of Heaven’s Path just happened to be crippled.

“An illusion?” Wei Ruyan looked around her before eventually pinching her own cheeks... “Ouch!”

“Dragonbone Divine Spear!” Zhang Xuan called out.

Hula!

The Dragonbone Divine Spear flew over from the passageway. With his spear in hand, Zhang Xuan felt boundless strength surging into his body. He raised the tip of his spear and directed it right toward the stone coffin.

Boom!

The coffin was pierced through, and the entire chamber dissipated like bubbles. The next instant, they saw Zheng Yang lying diagonally by the wall, unmoving. From the looks of it, it seemed like he had passed out.

What was right before them was not a coffin but a massive barrier that resembled a mirror.

It seemed like the two of them had walked into the world within the mirror, thus blurring their perception of reality.

“It’s actually an illusion,” the Dragonbone Divine Spear exclaimed excitedly. “If that’s the case, could the old master’s

corpse be fake as well? So, the old master actually isn't dead yet!"

It had been a huge blow to it seeing the old master's corpse appearing right before its eyes. Since this was all an illusion, could that corpse possibly be an illusion as well?

"I'm sorry, but Ancient Sage Ran Qiu's body was likely real." Zhang Xuan shook his head. "It's the sheer power of his corpse that has been sustaining everything here. If his body had been fake, this place wouldn't have been concealed from the heavens."

As much as he hated to shatter the Dragonbone Divine Spear's hopes, the truth was the truth. The moment that the illusion dissipated, he had come to realize the truth as well.

An illusion that he had been unable to discern and was able to deceive even the heavens was bound to require a vast amount of energy in order to sustain it, and the very center of this formation was Ancient Sage Ran Qiu's corpse.

Only the second strongest Ancient Sage in the world could possibly have the ability to beguile him, such that he failed to notice that he was in an illusion for a moment.

"So... the old master is really dead?" The Dragonbone Divine Spear fell to the floor weakly.

If the corpse was real, it meant that Ancient Sage Ran Qiu was truly dead.

"It's still too early to say whether Ancient Sage Ran Qiu is truly dead or not. Just because the corpse is real doesn't mean that he has already passed away. Take the old Sovereign Chen Yong for example. His body has already been buried, and his cultivation has already been passed on to Liu Yang. However, his soul has been taken away by a deity from the Azure, and there's a good chance that he could be revived in the future!" Zhang Xuan said.

"Those who have become as strong as Ancient Sage Ran Qiu are unlikely to die that easily!"

Even Vicious could revive despite being divided into so many pieces, let alone Ancient Sage Ran Qiu.

Even if the corpse was real, as long as his soul remained, he could not be said to be dead in the truest sense.

Hearing that explanation, the Dragonbone Divine Spear's glazed eyes cleared up a little as it heaved a sigh of relief.

"This... You're right!"

"First, we have to wake Zheng Yang up," Zhang Xuan said. "Something must have happened for him to be unconscious."

With a tap of his finger, he sent a surge of Heaven's Path zhenqi into his student's body. A few moments later, Zheng Yang slowly opened his eyes.

Zheng Yang had always been an extremely strong-willed individual, and for even someone like him to be knocked out cold, it was likely that he had received some kind of astonishing shock that resulted in an intense fluctuation in his state of mind. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

"Teacher!" Zheng Yang's face reddened as he quickly got to his feet.

"You were the one who entered this room first. What happened in here for you to pass out like this?" Wei Ruyan asked.

"I..." Rubbing his head to alleviate the splitting headache in his mind, Zheng Yang took a deep breath before he began his explanation. "I found the passageway leading here, and there was a hall similar to the one above. There was a coffin as well, and when I opened it to take a look, I saw... Kong shi's body."

"Kong shi's body?" Zhang Xuan frowned.

They had seen Zheng Yang's corpse whereas Zheng Yang had seen Kong shi's body.

Was there some kind of link between the two?

"Regardless of what is happening here, it's likely to have something to do with this barrier! I'm certain that this place has something to do with Kong shi!" Unable to make a precise deduction with the limited evidence they had over here, Zhang

Xuan decided to put the matter aside for the moment and worked on things that were more certain.

Thus, he turned his gaze toward the massive mirror-like barrier in front of him.

The answers that he sought were likely to be beyond there. The only problem left was to figure out a way to get to the other side.

“Let me give it a try!” Zhang Xuan raised the Dragonbone Divine Spear in his hand and pierced straight ahead.

Hula!

The spear tore through space, ripping a hole right through the world. In a flash, it struck the barrier squarely.

Boom!

A massive energy swept across the area. Zhang Xuan’s body stiffened a little before being forcefully knocked back. His back crashed heavily into the wall behind, causing his face to turn pale and his breathing to become a little ragged.

In a brief moment, he had already sustained significant injuries.

“It didn’t work?” Zhang Xuan was astonished.

His might, paired with the Dragonbone Divine Spear, even granted him the strength to put up a fight against the deity that he had met previously. Considering that he had put his full strength behind the pierce, it was unthinkable that he had failed to inflict the slightest damage on the barrier. On the contrary, he had suffered a backlash so severe that he had almost spurted blood.

It was insane! Just what in the world was the barrier made of to be so terrifying?

“Master, let me give it a try!” Vicious’ voice sounded in his mind.

“Go ahead!” Zhang Xuan nodded as he released Vicious from the Book of Heaven’s Path.

Vicious had already completed his body, and he had assimilated the straw garment. His current strength could be said to be on par with Dimension Shatterer realm primary stage cultivators. If he made a move, he might just be able to destroy the barrier.

# 1865 Becoming the World's Teacher

A massive pair of hands reached out from the book, causing the entire underground hall to tremble non-stop, as if there was an earthquake. The massive hands slammed powerfully upon the barrier.

Boom!

A powerful shockwave gushed out into the surroundings, forcing Zhang Xuan and the others to back away uncontrollably. By the time the storm calmed down, they turned their sights to the barrier once more, only to see it still intact. There was not the slightest damage to be seen. On the other hand, Vicious' fingers had started bleeding.

“Master, let me give it another try...”

With his attack failing to breach the barrier, Vicious lowered his head in embarrassment.

“There's no need for that. If you make another move, it's likely that the entire underground hall will collapse on us!” Zhang Xuan said.

The underground hall was already at its limits after the multiple impacts. If they continued, there was no doubt that it would collapse on them. Of course, given their strength, they would not sustain the slightest damage. What was worrisome was the countless citizens of the Tianxuan Royal City living above.

The might of the Ancient Sages was simply too great. If the strength of a Dimension Shatterer realm cultivator ran amok in the slightest, the city could very well be reduced to a living hell.

“What should we do then?”

“We can't do it the forceful way. There's bound to be another way to bypass this barrier,” Zhang Xuan said with a smile.

“The fact that even a Dimension Shatterer realm cultivator like you is unable to breach it meant that the barrier was set up by Kong shi. Going down this line of thought, I think I should be able to figure something out!”

The reason Zhang Xuan had Vicious made a move was to test the limits of the barrier. The fact that it could withstand Vicious’ attack meant that it likely had something to do with Kong shi.

Taking a deep breath, Zhang Xuan walked up to the barrier and infused his Celestial Master Teacher aura within.

Given that they were both Celestial Master Teachers, perhaps this might be the key to resolving the bottleneck before him.

Weng!

As the aura flowed in, the barrier suddenly began wavering. Countless insights regarding education and mentorship flowed into his head, leaving him with a deeper impression of the master teacher occupation.

It was as if all of the ideals that Kong shi embraced had been imparted to him.

“Using the world as an example, one can right their minds to align with nature and encompass everything in the world...”

A voice echoed in Zhang Xuan’s head. It could have been a lingering thought from Kong shi, but at the same time, it seemed like it was his own interpretation as well.

A Celestial Master Teacher was a master teacher recognized by the heavens. Using the heavens as an example, Celestial Master Teachers were able to swiftly rise through the ranks. However, if they wished to surpass the heavens, the difficulties they would face were manyfold.

Liu Yang, Zheng Yang, and the others, for example, had learned under him as his direct disciples, allowing their cultivation to rise far beyond the speed of ordinary cultivators. However, if they wished to surpass him... Well, this was something that they would never be able to achieve in their lifetime.

It was not that they were weak, but most of their cultivation techniques that they had practiced came from him, and it had formed the foundation of their cultivation. If they wanted to surpass him, they would have either to have to gain a deeper understanding of his cultivation techniques or overthrow everything that they had learned before.

Kong shi had more than three thousand disciples in the world, but not a single one of them was able to surpass him. From there, it was apparent how difficult it was to surpass one's lineage.

“I think I understand. I am a Celestial Master Teacher, a master teacher acknowledged by the heavens. In other words, my existence is viewed to be beneath the heavens. As such... it's nigh impossible for me to comprehend any rules that surpass the heavens! Since that's the case... why should I remain as a Celestial Master Teacher?”

It was as if enlightenment had suddenly struck Zhang Xuan as his eyes widened in realization. “Since you deny me of my breakthrough, I shall be a Celestial Master Teacher no more. Instead, I'll become... the World's Teacher!”

If he wished to achieve a breakthrough to Ancient Sage, he would be able to do it easily through his Spear Quintessence, Saber Quintessence, or even Fist Quintessence and the like. However, once he did so, everything would be settled. It would be nigh impossible for him to find a path unique to him anymore.

As such, he had been searching for something that he could say that was his and his alone. This was also why he had been suppressing his cultivation all along, refusing to achieve a breakthrough over the past two months.

And at that very moment, he seemed to have found a direction.

The fact that he could receive the acknowledgement of the heavens and become a Celestial Master Teacher meant that the world was sentient!

Since that was the case, why did he necessarily have to be the one being acknowledged? Why could he not become its

teacher instead?

If one took the world as an example and learned from it, one would never be able to surpass the limits of the world. On the other hand, as the World's Teacher, his position would be above the world right from the start. Naturally, the path leading to Ancient Sage would be much smoother than ever.

However, becoming the World's Teacher is easier said than done. I have to understand the world and grasp its strengths and flaws. Only then will I become worthy of that position. More importantly, I will have to forsake my title as a Celestial Master Teacher!

His mind churned at an incredible speed in order to map out a feasible plan. Once he had confirmed his direction, he closed his eyes and decisively released all of his Celestial Master Teacher aura at once.

All gains were bound to accompany some loss.

If one wanted to fill a sack with gold ingots, one would have to toss away the silver ingots in it first.

While the Celestial Master Teacher might be a position that almost all desired, it had become nothing more than a restriction on him. Thus, there was no pity in casting it away!

His success had always been built on his diligence, tenacity, upright character, and unyielding spirit. As for the role of Celestial Master Teacher? Heh, that was a mere transient title!

As his state of mind settled down, he began expelling the energy that he had absorbed from his five acknowledgements of Celestial Master Teacher. An aura so concentrated gushed out and rose right into the azure sky as if a pillar of light. Reaching the tip of the world, it exploded and transformed into innumerable currents of energy that dissipated into the surroundings.

As the Celestial Master Teacher aura dissipated, Zhang Xuan's will slowly floated into the sky. The will of the heavens crushed down on his will, commencing a battle of willpower.

...

The Baijiang Empire Master Teacher Pavilion.

“The path of teacherhood is centered around three aspects, the impartation of knowledge, the proper conduct of one’s character, and the enlightenment of one’s heart. The reason Kong shi’s teachings were able to reach everyone in the world is due to the lack of discrimination in his impartation. His heart was vast enough to encompass the world. As a master teacher, you should constantly bear your responsibility in mind. The lineages of mankind must be properly passed down from generation to generation in order to ensure our survival through the ages...”

A bunch of newly qualified master teachers were standing before the Teacher Acknowledgement Hall, and an elder was lecturing them with a solemn look on his face.

“Yes!” The master teachers nodded in response.

From the moment that they became master teachers, they came to know of their responsibilities, and they chose to accept the burden.

For tens of thousands of years, the Master Teacher Pavilion had both been respected and humiliated by the population. Nevertheless, the reason it was able to withstand the trial of time and remain at the top of the world was because of the unchanging spirit passed down across the generations.

“Wonderful. Kneel down and pay respects to the ancestors!”

The elder was just about to step aside to allow the newly qualified master teachers to pay respects to the ancestral tablets when the ground suddenly started trembling. The ancestral tablets placed neatly on the altar began to shake nonstop.

Huala!

All of the ancestral tablets fell down simultaneously, and they were all facing the same direction.

“What’s going on?”

The elder widened his eyes in shock. He quickly turned toward where the ancestral tablets had fallen, and he caught sight of a

silhouette formed out of clouds and rainbows. Dressed in a long robe, that figure seemed to tower over the entire world, making it impossible to see his body fully.

The figure was faced against them, but the aura that he emanated made others dare not look at him directly. Instead, it seemed to compel one to bow down before him.

“That’s... a Celestial Master Teacher!” the elder exclaimed as his body stiffened in shock.

In all of history, the only person who was known to have been a Celestial Master Teacher was Kong shi himself.

Many master teachers had sought to emulate his path afterward, but no matter how hard they tried, they had been unable to accomplish that feat. Yet, at that very moment, there was another Celestial Master Teacher among them!

Putong!

Unable to hold back his agitation any longer, the elder kneeled to the ground and bowed.

The elder glared at the newly appointed master teachers, who were still blanked out from the abrupt turn of events, and bellowed, “A new Celestial Master Teacher has descended among us; an era of prosperity lies right ahead! Hurry up and bow down!”

“Y-yes!”

The crowd quickly got to their knees and bowed deeply.

The information regarding a Celestial Master Teacher was only passed down within the Master Teacher Pavilion, but at this very moment, countless people were witnessing this sight together.

The faraway figure had his legs firmly planted on the ground, and his body was shouldering the weight of the heavens. This was a sign of utmost intimacy with the world, but the figure pushed the two away with a look of disdain on his face.

He was actually... scorning the heavens!

# 1866 The Shocked Master Teacher Pavilion

“Wait a minute...” One of the master teachers bowing the ground noticed that something was amiss. “Aren’t Celestial Master Teachers individuals who have earned the recognition of the heavens? Why does it seem like that person... is looking down on the heavens?”

Logically speaking, when a Celestial Master Teacher received the acknowledgement of the heavens, they should accept it with the utmost pride and glory. Yet, the towering person was trying his best to shake it off as if something disgusting had latched onto him.

“Looking down on the heavens?”

Stunned by that remark, the elder raised his head, only to see the towering figure shaking his body wildly. He was desperately trying to prevent any of the aura that had come from the heavens from getting stuck to him.

The elder gulped before muttering with reddened eyes, “He is actually rejecting the acknowledgement of the heavens... Does he not want to be a Celestial Master Teacher anymore?”

The history of Kong shi’s acknowledgements as a Celestial Master Teacher had been fully detailed in the records and passed down through the ages. Even though many years had passed since then, the significance of a Celestial Master Teacher had never vanished from the minds of the population. But somehow, events did not seem to be going in the direction that they were expected to go in.

At the same time, when the other master teachers around the elder heard his words, tears began brimming in their eyes.

Bro, if you don’t want to be a Celestial Master Teacher, you can pass the position down to us! We would be laughing even

in our dreams if such an opportunity were to ever chance upon us!

Really, is it alright for you to reject the heavens so directly? Aren't you pretty much making an enemy of the world?

“Scram!”

While they were feeling deeply stifled by the happenings, the figure in the sky suddenly bellowed before kicking at the heavens, which had latched onto his leg.

Hong long!

A rift appeared in the sky.

“He's indeed abandoning his position as a Celestial Master Teacher...”

If there had still been any doubts previously, they had completely vanished without a trace.

It was obvious that the towering figure no longer wanted to be a Celestial Master Teacher, but the relentless heavens simply refused to back down and continued trying to suffuse the towering figure with their aura.

“Who in the world is that fellow?”

Unable to take it any longer, the elder leaned in to take a closer look. He wanted to know the identity of the man who was so heartlessly shattering their image of a Celestial Master Teacher!

For tens of thousands of years, there had been no master teacher who did not desire the acknowledgement of the heavens. Such a feat meant the resounding of their name through the ages and the continued inheritance of their lineage through thousands of generations.

Yet, that fellow was trying to shake off the heavens as if they were pests on his hands, going to the extent of even stomping on the latter.

Will you die if you don't provoke us like that?

Hula!

It was at this moment that the towering figure in the sky turned around, revealing his appearance. He was a dashing young man in his early twenties with sharp eyebrows.

“Isn’t that... Zhang Xuan? B-but... I thought that he was dead!” The elder was taken aback.

The Master Teacher Pavilion had once issued an arrest warrant on the young man across the entire Master Teacher Continent, such that there was no master teacher who did not know this name. Afterward, things had gotten worse, and eventually, the young man had ended his life at the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters.

A person who should have died three months ago... how could he possibly bounce back to life and even be a Celestial Master Teacher at that?

What in the world had happened in between? It was as if the story had jumped from the prologue to the epilogue all of a sudden!

The master teachers in the area were flabbergasted by this unexpected happening.

The same scene was occurring in other Master Teacher Pavilions across the world.

Countless master teachers looked at the towering figure in the air with reddened eyes. Some were even crying miserably, exclaiming that they had lived in vain.

It was way too much.

For someone to reject even being a Celestial Master Teacher...

Could anyone be more arrogant than that?

...

In the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters, a group of Ancient Sages and 9-star master teachers were gathered together in a stately room.

“So, that’s what happened,” Yang Shi said. “The Otherworldly Demonic Tribe has almost been unified, so we can be certain that it no longer poses a threat to us. This means that it’s time

for our Master Teacher Pavilion to shift its strategic goals and manpower deployment. We should devote more resources into imparting the wisdom of the predecessors and nurturing young talents.”

“Yang shi, if I understand your words correctly, you are saying that not only did Zhang shi not betray mankind, he’s even a Celestial Master Teacher as well. The reason he ended his life at the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters was to use the incident as a cover to sneak into the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe and resolve the threat once and for all?” a 9-star master teacher asked with a deep frown on his forehead, seemingly unwilling to believe this tall tale.

“Indeed.” Yang shi nodded. “However, some of what I have shared so far is still conjecture on my part, so we’ll need some further verification. Nevertheless, I’m ninety percent certain of the matter!”

“As long as we can’t fully verify the matter, there is a chance that your conjecture might fall through. With all due respect, Yang shi, I find it hard to believe your story. If Zhang shi is truly a Celestial Master Teacher, he should have reported it to the Master Teacher Pavilion. Why would he hide his identity?”

“I don’t deny that he has a way with imparting knowledge to others, but going to the extent of saying that he’s a Celestial Master Teacher seems a little too far-fetched to me!”

“Indeed. All of us here are familiar with Kong shi’s compassionate temperament and benevolent heart. I have browsed through Zhang shi’s records, and I don’t think that he has the character needed to be acknowledged by the heavens.”

...

Some master teachers posed their doubts.

It was not that they were intentionally making things hard for Yang shi, but it had been tens of thousands of years since a Celestial Master Teacher last appeared. Furthermore, the person who was said to be a Celestial Master Teacher was someone who had a relationship with the Spirit God.

It was inevitable that there would be some doubtful naysayers.

“I’m afraid that you are mistaking my intention. I’m not opening this matter up for discussion; I am informing you of it! I’ll permit you to discuss it among yourselves behind closed doors, but for the time being, we are going to proceed with this meeting under this premise,” Yang shi replied sharply.

The reason he had chosen to roam the world was because he did not like that the Master Teacher Pavilion had already strayed from its original intentions. He wanted to make use of this opportunity to correct things, but it was truly frustrating how he was facing obstacles every step of the way. He knew that there was no way to fully convince those master teachers, so he chose to take a more forceful approach.

“I’m willing to go on with the meeting under such a premise if that’s what you wish, but I refuse to believe that he’s a Celestial Master Teacher. If even he’s able to become a Celestial Master Teacher, there’s no reason the rest of us can’t...” one of the 9-star master teachers replied indignantly, but in the midst of his words, the ground suddenly began to tremble.

Alarmed, the crowd quickly left the room to look outward, and they soon saw a familiar figure towering in the sky. A unique aura originating from the world was surging toward him, attempting to enter through his apertures and fill his body.

Who else could that familiar figure possibly be other than Zhang shi, who had ended his life at the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters three months prior?

“That is... the aura bestowed by the predecessors during the acknowledgement ceremony?”“Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

“No, that’s not the aura from our predecessors. It’s the aura bestowed from the world on a Celestial Master Teacher...”

As 9-star master teachers, they swiftly comprehended what was going on with just a glance. However, just because they were able to comprehend it did not mean that their minds were capable of processing it in a moment’s time.

That was a historic moment where an entire group of 9-star master teachers and Ancient Sages stood with slackened jaws and widened eyes.

Just a moment earlier, some had claimed that there was no way that Zhang Xuan could be a Celestial Master Teacher. It was as if the other party was carefully timing his actions in order to bring about the greatest face slap to them!

“Wait a moment. He doesn’t seem to be accepting the acknowledgement at all... On the contrary, it seems like he’s trying to free himself from that identity!”

It did not take long for someone to notice the anomaly.

“Now that you mention it, that does seem to be the case. Zhang shi seems to be trying to expel the celestial aura within his body...”

“A Celestial Master Teacher casting away the aura bestowed from the heavens? Is he out of his mind?”

The sheer preposterousness of what they were seeing had exceeded the limits of what they could rationally process. All they could do was shake their heads endlessly and murmur words of disapproval as they watched Zhang Xuan flinging out the aura from his body with a look of disgust on his face, as if he was purging his body of some repulsive poison.

Even the heavens seemed to be a little taken aback by the situation.

Such a thing had simply never happened before!

“Do you still think that he isn’t a Celestial Master Teacher?” Yang shi asked as he gulped down a mouthful of saliva.

His senior was truly an extraordinary individual. Everything he did was able to leave one utterly shocked.

Becoming a Celestial Master Teacher was something that everyone desired, but he was so frantically trying to free himself from it such that it almost looked as if he was a heartless man trying to dump his girlfriend.

The world was really going mad!

“He is a Celestial Master Teacher...”

“We were blind...”

Those 9-star master teachers who had doubted Yang shi’s words earlier felt a fiery pain on their cheeks. If there was a pit in the ground, they would have dived right in without a moment’s hesitation.

It was truly embarrassing how they had to swallow their words a moment after making such confident declarations!

Sighing deeply at Zhang Xuan’s actions, Yang shi turned to the 9-star master teacher who had argued with him a moment ago. “You said earlier that there’s no reason why the rest of you can’t be Celestial Master Teachers if Zhang shi is one, right? Since he’s going to shake away his identity right now, why don’t you give it a try?”

Given all the miracles that his senior had produced, this bunch of people still dared to doubt his credentials as a Celestial Master Teacher.

If you think so highly of yourself, why don’t you give it a try?

The 9-star master teacher really burst into tears on the spot.

# 1867 Entering the Barrier

While Zhang Xuan was relinquishing his title as a Celestial Master Teacher by releasing the aura that he had absorbed in his five previous acknowledgements, a huge uproar erupted across the Master Teacher Continent.

Previously, when Zhang Xuan obtained the acknowledgement from the heavens, the phenomena that occurred had mostly been limited to the regional Master Teacher Pavilions. In view of the severity of the issue, the Master Teacher Pavilions had chosen to suppress the matter, so there were not many people who were aware of it.

However, at that moment, nearly every single living being on the Master Teacher Continent was witnessing the release and dissipation of the heavens' aura back to the world with their own eyes.

They would really have to be fools if they still did not get what was happening.

It was not easy for another Celestial Master Teacher to appear on the continent once more, but who would have thought that the other party would quit just like that?

“As expected of Teacher...”

The reverence reflected in Zhang Jiuxiao's eyes was more than what any words could possibly bring out.

Upon discovering his teacher's identity, he had not hesitated to become the latter's student. Yet, it turned out that his teacher did not even care about that identity at all, throwing it away without the slightest hesitation.

As expected of someone who had already seen past the material world! Things such as glory and honor were not even worth a gold coin to him!

While the whole world was going into a frenzy due to the happenings, Zhang Xuan was still sitting in front of the barrier, forcefully expelling the energy in his body.

Unless he emptied out the aura that he had received from the previous Celestial Master Teacher acknowledgements from his body, there was no way that he would be able to become the World's Teacher!

Geji! Geji!

Even as the heavens exerted a pressure so great that it seemed as if his soul would be crushed to bits, Zhang Xuan maintained a nonchalant look on his face. It was impossible to tell what was going through his mind.

In truth, he harbored some doubts about relinquishing his Celestial Master Teacher title as well. He knew of the significance of the title after all. However, when he came into contact with the barrier and inherited Kong shi's philosophy, he had become certain that this was the path that Kong shi had walked on as well!

Otherwise, no matter how powerful or talented he might be, he would never be able to go any further than being an Ancient Sage in this world. It would be impossible for him to break the dimension barrier and ascend to a higher dimension!

The recognition from the heavens of this world was both a blessing and a curse. It served to shackle one down to this world. If he wanted to free himself from his shackles, he would first have to relinquish his identity!

Kacha!

As the aura dissipated, the pressure coming from the heavens seemed to intensify, as if symbolizing the rage of the heavens at the blasphemous act. Ominous clouds swiftly rolled in together with devastating lightning and flames.

"Here it comes," Zhang Xuan murmured as he rose to his feet.

However, he remained within the underground hall, not leaving at all.

He knew that if he left, the strength of the lightning tribulation would surely ravage the entire Tianxuan Kingdom, destroying every last soul within the perimeter of the tribulation.

As long as he remained in the underground hall, the lightning tribulation would have to have no choice but to concentrate its prowess within the area. It was fortunate that the manor extended far and wide, so it was unlikely that any bystanders would be caught in the conflict.

Huala!

The cataclysmic lightning swiftly gathered in the sky and formed a massive saber with destructive flames and lightning crackling around it. Even the fabric of space seemed to be as feeble as a piece of paper in the face of the powerful saber, and it seemed as if everything would be eradicated in its face.

This was the most fearsome trial of the Ancient Sage Ordeal, the Ordeal of Lightning Armament. Who would have thought that he would face it once more there?

Sou!

The lightning saber surged right down toward the underground hall, appearing right above Zhang Xuan's head in the blink of an eye.

Tz la!

The formations around the manor and the underground hall were decisively sliced in two as if they were mere tattered pieces of cloth.

“Heh. I've been waiting for you!” Taking a deep breath, Zhang Xuan's fist shot right up to strike down the lightning saber.

The previous time he faced the Ordeal of Lightning Armament, he had been far too weak to be able to withstand its might. However, he was no longer as helpless as he used to be. Even without using the Dragonbone Divine Spear, the might that he exerted would allow him to take down any Blood Reincarnation realm expert!

Boom!

As the fist and the lightning saber clashed, Zhang Xuan found himself knocked several steps back. This momentary clash had left his fist marred with slightly charred flesh and boiling blood.

It seemed like despite the massive increase in his cultivation, his strength was still not up to par with the Ordeal of Lightning Armament.

The last time he underwent it, he had needed to summon Little Tribulation and further augment it by summoning hundreds of cultivation ordeals all at once before it was a match for the Ordeal of Lightning Armament. However, in the Tianxuan Royal City, there was no way he would be able to do what he had done previously. Nevertheless, that did not mean that he was going to go down without a fight.

Zhang Xuan flitted over to the side of the barrier before turning to face the massive saber once more.

Driving his zhenqi to the maximum, he punched in the direction of the massive saber, which threatened to scorch every inch of his body with the blazing heat it was emanating.

Once again, the collision ended with Zhang Xuan's defeat as his body was knocked back from the saber, causing a series of energy ripples to traverse across the barrier.

On the other hand, the massive saber continued to descend with formidable might, striking right down upon the barrier.

Weng!

There was a light buzz as the massive saber inflicted its black flames onto the barrier, causing a small hole to corrode on it. However, the black flames only lasted for a brief moment before they were extinguished by the tremendous energy rippling through the barrier.

"It's working!" Zhang Xuan's eyes lit up.

Part of the reason for him choosing to cultivate and summon the lightning tribulation there was because he wanted to use the power of the lightning tribulation to deal with the barrier.

Considering how the barrier was able to withstand both his and Vicious' strength, it was unfeasible to attempt to break it with their strength. Furthermore, even though the barrier had been left behind by Kong shi, it did not seem like it would open up solely on the merit that he was a Celestial Master Teacher.

Since that was the case, he had no choice but to tap into external forces to breach the barrier!

Opening his fist into a palm, he struck at the massive saber once more.

Kacha! Kacha!

The massive saber retaliated with ferocious slashes time and time again, but most of the energy coming from its attacks was halted by the barrier right behind him. Under the relentless attacks of the saber, cracks began to appear on the surface of the barrier.

However, due to the multiple clashes with the saber, Zhang Xuan's body also sustained significant damage. Just like when he had faced the Ordeal of Lightning Armament before, he was already on the verge of collapse.

“Canvas of Four Seasons!”

With a thought, Zhang Xuan swapped into the appearance of Sovereign Chen Ling with the disguise amulet before taking out the Canvas of Four Seasons to release the energy that he had sealed within it.

He had stolen this energy from the deity whom Sovereign Chen Ling had summoned, and it was exceptionally effective in healing injuries.

It took a few moments before Zhang Xuan fully recovered from his injuries. After he was all healed up, he turned his sights to the massive saber and continued his attacks once more.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The massive saber continued striking down on the barrier, causing the cracks that had appeared to grow larger and larger, seemingly on the verge of being torn apart at any moment.

By this point, the Ordeal of Lightning Armament had already expended a large portion of its energy, making it much weaker than before.

“It seems like it's indeed possible to grind it down...” Zhang Xuan heaved a sigh of relief.

The risk had paid off. Even though he was not the World's Teacher yet, it seemed like he would be able to free himself from his position as a Celestial Master Teacher, allowing his cultivation to rise once more.

At the same time, he would probably be able to shatter whatever was left of the barrier. He had no idea what lay on the other side, but considering the secrecy surrounding it, he had a feeling that the Hundred Schools of Philosophers might have something to do with it.

Even if the Hundred Schools of Philosophers was not involved, it was bound to have something to do with Kong shi. As long as he traced Kong shi's footsteps, he would eventually be able to ascend to a higher dimension. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

Kacha! Kacha!

As the Ordeal of Lightning Armament struck down another two more times, the cracks grew larger and larger, to the extent that they were already large enough for a person to pass through. At the same time, the ominous clouds in the sky were starting to dissipate.

Another few breaths passed, and it seemed like the Ordeal of Lightning Armament had finally reached its limits.

The multitude of attacks that it had launched had completely sapped its energy. With a light tap of Zhang Xuan's finger, it dissipated into countless strands of energy.

“Let's enter!”

Finally overcoming the lightning tribulation, Zhang Xuan beckoned the others before diving right into the hole in the barrier.

Zheng Yang and Wei Ruyan nodded. They swiftly sent a message to Zhao Ya before following their teacher to the other side of the barrier.

# 1868 Greensprout Whea

What appeared before Zhang Xuan was a vast world.

The blue sky, dabbled with traces of white clouds, extended far and wide. Greenery flourished from the earth, creating a peaceful scene that went well with the melodious chirping of birds. The spiritual energy in the air was so concentrated that it was on par with the most blessed land back at the Master Teacher Continent.

Not too far away from where Zhang Xuan was standing, there was a farmland filled with wheat.

“Where are we?” Wei Ruyan asked with a confused frown as she slowly walked out from the darkness. She drove her zhenqi carefully for fear that there would be danger lurking in the area.

“It’s probably some sort of ancient domain,” Zheng Yang replied.

Zhang Xuan carefully assessed his surroundings as he slowly proceeded over to the farmland. He bent down before one of the wheat plants and plucked it out in order to conduct a closer examination. A moment later, he chuckled softly and asked, “Have you noticed?”

“Noticed?”

The two youths replied in bewilderment to Zhang Xuan’s abrupt question.

Zheng Yang walked closer to take a closer look at the wheat stalk in Zhang Xuan’s hand before remarking, “The wheat over here seems to be much bulkier than what we can find in the Master Teacher Continent. It seems to retain more spiritual energy from the surroundings too!”

“You’re right. The wheat here seems to be infused with much more spiritual energy.” Wei Ruyan nodded with a slightly confused look still on her face. She could not understand why

her teacher was more interested in a stalk of wheat than figuring out where they were and what they should do.

As Ancient Sages, they could continue living without any problems even if they went without food. As such, agriculture produce and the like no longer caught their attention.

“This is Greensprout Wheat. Due to the high concentration of spiritual energy it contains, an ordinary human will be able to enhance their constitution if they consume it for a long period. Take your Innate Poison Body for example; if you had consumed the Greensprout Wheat from a young age, you wouldn’t have had to go through so much pain. Instead, you would have easily awakened your unique constitutions.” Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

It was the potency of Wei Ruyan’s Innate Poison Body, to the extent that she was unable to awaken or control it, that caused a huge strain on her body, resulting in her constant feeble condition back when she was younger. If not for her father, Wei Changfeng, going to great lengths to find all sorts of treasures to sustain her life, there was no way she would have survived long enough to meet Zhang Xuan.

If she had eaten this Greensprout Wheat from a young age, her constitution would have been strengthened significantly, allowing her to better cope with her unique constitutions. Perhaps she would have been spared from much suffering, and Wei Changfeng would not have lost his life over a single stalk of a medicinal herb.

“If this Greensprout Wheat is that formidable, wouldn’t it be a blessing to mankind if we could bring it back to the Master Teacher Continent and cultivate it?” Zheng Yang’s eyes lit up in excitement.

As the head of the Combat Master Hall, he had to constantly push himself to think of issues from a higher perspective. There were also medicinal herbs on the Master Teacher Continent that could enhance one’s constitution, but those medicinal herbs could not be cultivated on a large scale due to the stringent conditions required for their survival.

On the other hand, the fact that the Greensprout Wheat was growing in large fields meant that it was possible to cultivate it on a large scale!

If they could enhance the constitution of mankind as a whole, there was no doubt that it would be a huge blessing to mankind!

The reason mankind had been unable to claim the absolute advantage in the battle against the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe despite the efforts of countless master teachers was because the starting point of the Otherworldly Demons were simply too far ahead of their human counterparts.

Even the Otherworldly Demons with the weakest bloodlines were bestowed with the strength of a Transcendent Mortal from birth. This difference in the starting points created a gap that was nigh impossible to bridge with effort alone.

In fact, it could already be said to be a miraculous feat that mankind had been able to survive for so many years in the face of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe's aggression.

Knowing what Zheng Yang was thinking of, Zhang Xuan replied with a shake of his head. "It's impossible to cultivate the Greensprout Wheat on the Master Teacher Continent."

The existence of this plant was not detailed in the records of the Master Teacher Pavilion. Instead, he found it amid the knowledge from the mountain of books in the Temple of Confucius. This was a plant that Kong shi had conceptualized in accordance to his vision, and it should have been non-existent in their world.

Zhang Xuan had to verify time and time again before he could be certain that the plant that he was holding was indeed the Greensprout Wheat.

"Why not?" Zheng Yang asked with in incomprehension.

It was true that the spiritual energy there was considerably more concentrated than that on the Master Teacher Continent, but given their capabilities, it should be possible for them to create large enclosed spaces that emulated that environment.

Why would it be impossible for them to cultivate it on the Master teacher Continent?

“In the many years of battle with the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe, the atmosphere of the Master Teacher Continent has already become suffused with their killing intent, albeit in nearly undetectable amounts to us. Unfortunately, the Greensprout Wheat is exceptionally vulnerable to killing intent, such that even the slightest contact with killing intent can lead to its death!”

As Zhang Xuan explained, he tapped his finger lightly and infused the field before him with a surge of zhenqi harnessing a slight hint of killing intent.

Hula!

As if a droplet of ink falling in the midst of clear water, the Greensprout Wheat within an area of ten mu from his fingers turned yellow and fell limp in an instant. It was almost as if someone had set the crops in the entire area ablaze.

“This...”

Zheng Yang and Wei Ruyan were surprised. Even Zhang Xuan was slightly taken aback by how sensitive the Greensprout Wheat was.

While he had known that Greensprout Wheats were exceptionally vulnerable to killing intent, he did not think that they would be so weak to it.

He had controlled the killing intent in that surge of zhenqi to an extremely minute amount, but it had still ended up afflicting such devastation upon the field. As such, there was no way that those plants could possibly survive on the Master Teacher Continent.

“There are quite a few Otherworldly Demons hidden on the Master Teacher Continent, causing there to be a slight concentration of killing intent in the air. While it’s negligible and perhaps even imperceptible to most humans, it’s more than enough to spell a catastrophe to the Greensprout Wheat,” Zhang Xuan remarked.

Zheng Yang and Wei Ruyan nodded in agreement.

“The lands of the Tianxuan Kingdom aren’t plagued with killing intent, right? So, shouldn’t it be possible for us to cultivate the Greensprout Wheat there?” Wei Ruyan asked.

She had noticed as soon as she entered the Tianxuan Kingdom that there was a natural barrier in the ancient domain that seemed to prevent the killing intent lingering in the atmosphere from corroding its lands.

In other words, this ancient domain was devoid of killing intent.

“You’re right to say that there isn’t any killing intent in the Tianxuan Kingdom, but it’s a pity that its spiritual energy is simply insufficient. Furthermore, haven’t you noticed that there isn’t the unique aura that allows one to advance as a master teacher there?” Zhang Xuan replied.

“This...” Wei Ruyan pondered for a moment before nodding slowly in response.

She had not paid particular attention to the matter since it did not affect her as a poison master. However, that did seem to be the case.

There was no killing intent in the Tianxuan Kingdom, but the conditions required for master teachers to advance to higher ranks were also absent.

As such, one who wanted to be a master teacher had no choice but to depart from the Tianxuan Kingdom and head elsewhere.

Even Lu Xun, whom they had met earlier, had become a 2-star master teacher because he had migrated to other kingdoms.

“Ancient domains are barren places, devoid of any auras and poor in spiritual energy. While killing intent is completely absent in this area, its climate is still unsuitable for the growth of the Greensprout Wheat. Even if the Greensprout Wheat is able to survive in the Tianxuan Kingdom, it won’t be able to germinate and grow!” Zhang Xuan replied with a sigh.

It was after he forsook his Celestial Master Teacher title that he gained a clearer view of the Tianxuan Kingdom. With just a glance, he was able to see right into the crux.

He was still unable to figure the reason behind the anomalies present in ancient domains, but he was certain that the Greensprout Wheat would be unable to thrive there.

Otherwise, Kong shi would have turned the ancient domains into the core of the Master Teacher Continent!

“Even though the Greensprout Wheat won’t grow in ancient domains, it seems to be flourishing well here. Just what kind of place have we entered?” Zheng Yang wondered in curiosity.

For something that wouldn’t survive anywhere else to actually thrive in this land... could there be something special here?

Zhang Xuan pondered for a moment before replying. “If I’m not mistaken, this is probably the Kunxu Domain where the Hundred Schools of Philosophers reside. This area is unlike any of the other folded spaces we have entered. Instead, it has already developed to become a brand-new world!”

“The Hundred Schools of Philosophers?” Zheng Yang and Wei Ruyan widened their eyes in astonishment.

Wuuuuu!

Just as they were about to ask further about the matter, the sound of a horn suddenly echoed from afar. Following which, a large group of people suddenly rushed over with wrathful looks on their faces.

# 1869 Village Belle

This group of people were dressed in ordinary-looking shirts with short sleeves. Their hands were equipped with hoes, machetes, spades, and all kinds of farming tools, and they seemed to be ready to wage a war.

“Their cultivation realms...” Zheng Yang muttered with widened eyes.

The group of people before them were ordinary civilians who could not have appeared more normal; their counterparts on the Master Teacher Continent would not even be Fighters. Yet, every single one of them was actually at Zongshi realm!

“They haven’t cultivated at all. There’s no trace of zhenqi in their bodies...” Wei Ruyan was also taken aback.

From the heavy footsteps of this group of people, she could tell that there was no zhenqi in their dantians. Without a doubt, none of them were cultivators.

Despite never absorbing spiritual energy and refining it into zhenqi, they were already emanating the aura of Zongshi realm cultivators.

“This is likely the effects of consuming Greensprout Wheat for extended periods of time, resulting in some development in their constitution,” Zhang Xuan explained. “They are no longer ordinary humans.”

Such a situation was probably related to the Greensprout Wheat. Their genes had been refined by the Greensprout Wheat over many generations, causing a fundamental change in their constitution.

As a result of these changes, they had been born with strength superior to other humans at birth, much like the Otherworldly Demons.

“This...” Zheng Yang’s eyes lit up in excitement.

He was already moved by the idea when he heard his teacher's words, but seeing the miraculous effects of the Greensprout Wheat in action, he felt as if he saw endless possibilities for the advancement of mankind.

If everyone on the Master Teacher Continent became like this group of people, they would really be able to stand up against the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe fearlessly even if something went wrong.

While one's starting point was not everything, there was no denying that it played a significant role in deciding how high one would be able to reach in the future. Without a doubt, being born with strength comparable to Zongshi realm cultivators would be a huge boost.

This was really a step closer in achieving Kong shi's ideal of creating a prosperous and powerful society for mankind.

“Who in the world are you? How dare you destroy our crops!”

The encircling crowd slowly marched up to Zhang Xuan as they bellowed furiously.

The one leading the group of men was an elder who appeared to be eighty years old. Despite his advanced age, he was brimming with energy. His hair and beard were still dyed a youthful black, and his movements were vigorous.

Even though he had not cultivated, his cultivation had reached the highest level beneath Transcendent Mortal, Zhizun realm!

Zhizun realm experts were able to snub even Emperor Shen Zhui from the Tianxuan Kingdom, but those villagers were able to reach that level just by ageing.

This was something that no one would believe possible outside!

“I apologize for my careless action; I didn't mean to ruin your crops. I'm willing to compensate you for them,” Zhang Xuan said apologetically as he took out a pile of medicinal herbs and weapons.

While they were already the least expensive goods in his storage ring, they were still commodities that would fetch a

relatively high price anywhere else.

Seeing such a sight, the crowd who had marched over here with gusto suddenly halted.

They were unable to accurately identify the value of the artifacts before them, but they were still able to feel the incredible spiritual energy gushing out from them.

The reason they had dashed there was because they had found that intruders had damaged several mu of their farmland, but even the ruined wheat could not begin to compare to the treasures laid out before their eyes.

“You are going to give those to us as compensation?” The elder dared not believe what was happening.

“That’s right,” Zhang Xuan replied with a smile. “Please feel free to take them. To be honest, I have some questions that I hope you will be able to answer.”

The elder quickly instructed the villagers to inspect the treasures, and after confirming that they were invaluable artifacts, he could not help but feel a little giddy.

He hurriedly shook his head to snap out of his state and said, “What is it? Ask anything you like!”

Given that the other party had spoken to them humbly and given them such generous compensation, there was no way that he could stay angry at them.

“It’s actually the first time that the three of us have come here, so may I ask where we are?” Zhang Xuan asked.

“You are in our Stone Village, which is located within the territories of the Estate of Edification!” the elder replied.

“Stone Village? Estate of Edification?” Zhang Xuan frowned. “Pardon me, but what is the Estate of Edification?”

The villagers were confused by the question, but a middle-aged man suddenly spoke up. “It’s one of the areas of jurisdiction under the lineage of Ancient Sage Zi Chi!”

“Ancient Sage Zi Chi?” Zhang Xuan nodded slowly in realization.

Ancient Sage Zi Chi was one of the seventy-two Sages under Kong shi's lineage. While his reputation paled far in comparison to Ran Qiu, Bo Shang, and the others, his name had still appeared frequently back in Kong shi's era.

Ancient Sage Zi Chi was known to be skilled in agriculture. Perhaps, while the idea of the Greensprout Wheat was conceptualized by Kong shi, he was the one who had carefully cultured it.

Since this area was under the jurisdiction of Ancient Sage Zi Chi, it meant to say that they were within the territories of the Hundred Schools of Philosophers.

He had still been thinking of conducting a thorough investigation after arriving at the Tianxuan Kingdom, but who could have known that Zheng Yang and the others would stumble upon it so swiftly?

“May I know where I should go in order to reach Ancient Sage Zi Chi's residence?”

Given that tens of thousands of years had passed then, Ancient Sage Zi Chi himself was bound to have already passed away. Nevertheless, he should still have descendants living in the area. If he wished to trace Kong shi's footsteps and uncover what he did and where he went after capturing a deity, he would have to first find the experts of the Hundred Schools of Philosophers.

“The residence of the Ancient Sage is located in Fan City. It's quite far away from here though. If you are in no rush, why don't I have Xiu Ru from our village to take you there?” the elder asked. “Xiu Ru is our village belle. She is a cultivator, and she has a spirit beast under her command. If you were to ride her spirit beast, you should be able to get to Fan City faster...”

“Village belle?” Zhang Xuan shook his head politely. “It's fine. That would be imposing too much on you. It'll be fine as long as you point out the direction of Fan City to me.”

“No no, you aren't imposing on us at all. It's our pleasure to be of assistance to you! Fan City is a major city, and not just

anyone can enter it. If you attempt to go in despite not being a local, it's very likely that you'll be arrested and interrogated. It'll be much safer for you to have Xiu Ru lead you there. She's more familiar with the area, and it'll be more convenient for you to move around with her by your side!" the elder replied affirmatively, not leaving any room for rebuttal at all.

It was true that the group before him had destroyed their farmland, but they had willingly offered generous compensation while maintaining a polite attitude. Naturally, they would welcome them with hospitality.

Seeing that the elder was adamant on the matter, Zhang Xuan could only hesitantly nod in agreement.

The Stone Village was not a large village. All in all, there were only around a hundred households. When they heard that there were guests, they swiftly rushed out of their houses to welcome them warmly.

Soon, the rumored 'village belle' appeared as well. She was not a top-notch beauty, but her looks were decent and pleasing to the eye. In a small village like this, it was understandable that she would be considered the village belle.

As the village belle walked over, Zheng Yang looked at her and murmured beneath his breath, "Transcendent 2-dan."

Just as the elder had said earlier, she was a cultivator. Through the zhenqi flowing through her body, it was not too difficult to see that her cultivation was at Transcendent Mortal 2-dan.

Xiu Ru walked up to Zhang Xuan and the others and spoke haughtily with raised eyebrows. "I can take to Fan City, but I would like to remind you that the residence of Ancient Sage Zi Chi is not a place where anyone can come and go as they please. You'll have to submit your name scrolls in advance if you wish to pay a visit. Know that if you make any trouble such as rudely barging into the residence and offending those living there, I'm not going to save you!"

As the village belle, she had her own pride and dignity.

"Rest assured, we don't intend to stir any trouble," Zhang Xuan replied.

While their cultivation had pretty much reached the pinnacle of this world, the reason for them visiting the Kunxu Domain was not to start a fight but to uncover answers. Naturally, there was no reason for them to intentionally get into conflicts with others.

“That would be for the best. Also, I’ll just put this out here in case you misunderstand anything. It’s due to the village chief’s instruction that I’m leading you to Fan City. If I had a choice, I would never accept something as troublesome with this. So, don’t bother thinking that you will get together with me or anything just because we are journeying together; I’ll only accept the confessions of someone from the village. I have no plans of marrying into any other villages at the moment!” Xiu Ru said sternly.

Constipated looks appeared on the faces of Zhang Xuan and Zheng Yang. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

# 1870 Bidding Farewell

The beast that Xiu Ru had tamed was an Eaglebeak Beast. It boasted a massive physique, such that it was not cramped even with so many people sitting on its back.

Zheng Yang and Wei Ruyan had been thinking of flying over to the destination on their own, which would have made a much faster journey, but recalling their teacher's low-profile personality, they eventually abandoned the thought and sat down quietly on the back of the beast.

Seeing the group of three controlling their breathing, Xiu Ru asked with a doubtful look in her eyes, "You are cultivators too?"

She had thought that the group before her were no different from the villagers, ordinary humans devoid of zhenqi. Who knew that they would be able to absorb spiritual energy?

"You can say so!" Zheng Yang replied with a smile.

Xiu Ru heaved a sigh of relief before continuing on with a prideful smile. "Not bad! Just to let you know, I have also cultivated before. Of everyone in the village, I am the only one who has cleared the examination and inherited the true heritage of the old village chief!"

"Not bad," Zheng Yang remarked nonchalantly. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

"You might not be aware of this, but the old village chief is someone who has inherited Ancient Sage Zi Chi's lineage!" Xiu Ru said.

"Oh?" Zhang Xuan shot a curious glance over.

"The old village chief went to Fan City in his earlier years and received the guidance of the experts there. Even though he has aged since then, he's still the strongest individual in the village. It's a pity that you didn't meet him, or else you would

surely be filled with admiration for him, just like me!” Xiu Ru explained.

They had only met the incumbent village chief so far, but the strongest person in their village was actually the old village chief. It was because she had cultivated with the old village chief that she had managed to achieve such accomplishments to date.

“May I know... what cultivation technique you practice? Were you taught by a master teacher?” Zhang Xuan asked out of curiosity.

The heritage left behind by Ancient Sage Zi Chi could not possibly be anything ordinary. Even if Xiu Ru had only come into contact with a small sliver of it, he should still be able to tell something about it.

“Master teacher?” Xiu Ru frowned in confusion.

It seemed to be a foreign term to her.

“It’s an occupation that specializes in imparting knowledge and clarifying the doubts of others,” Zhang Xuan said.

“I have never heard of it before.” Xiu Ru shook her head.

“Aren’t cultivation techniques all family heirlooms that can’t be leaked to outsiders? Why would anyone ever impart it to an outsider? Other than in the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism, there shouldn’t be any place where anyone would impart cultivation techniques to outsiders. In any case, I have never heard of a master teacher before...”

After asking a few more questions, Zhang Xuan finally came to a realization.

There was no Master Teacher Pavilion in the Hundred Schools of Philosophers!

If one wanted to cultivate, one needed to inherit the heritage from their clan or earn the right to enter the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism.

The Great Phrontistery of Confucianism was not too different from the academies on the Master Teacher Continent.

However, the requirements to enter were extremely harsh,

such that only the most talented of individuals were accepted. Even the village belle before them was unlikely to stand a chance.

The members from the Hundred Schools of Philosophers whom he had met previously, Xue Yan, Nangong Feng, and the others, were all experts from the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism.

“Are you trying to seek new opportunities in Fan City? Let me tell you, it isn’t as simple as that. I’ve been there a few times, but I still haven’t had a chance to meet any experts yet,” Xiu Ru said as he looked at Zhang Xuan and the others with a look of pity in her eyes.

Cultivation techniques were the bare necessity required for one to cultivate, but cultivation techniques were exclusive. They were not readily available just because someone wanted one.

The only reason that she had managed to become a cultivator was due to her innate talent and a bunch of coincidences working in her favor.

When she realized that the three of them were just trying their luck, her attitude toward them swiftly became cold. As such, the rest of the journey ended up in silence.

Roughly two hours later, a massive city came into sight.

They had arrived at Fan City!

The village belle had described it as an incredible city of massive proportions, but having witnessed the grandeur of the Master Teacher Continent, Zhang Xuan and the others could not help but shake their heads in disappointment.

In terms of size, Fan City was nothing in comparison to the Zhang Clan’s Dracotiger City or the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters. At the very most, it could only be said to be at the level of Tianxuan Royal City.

There was an inspection at the entrance, but the group managed to enter the city without any hiccups. They walked down the streets before finally stopping before a massive residence.

Xiu Ru pointed to the residence and said, “This is Ancient Sage Zi Chi’s residence. There are plenty of people who knock on the doors in hope of a fortuitous encounter. Look over there, those are the people who wish to learn their arts. However, it’s a pity that they are dreaming of the impossible. No matter how long they camp out here, they won’t receive anything!”

Looking at the outer perimeters of the residence, there was a large group of people kneeling all around.

From young children to teenage youths, the kneeling group were dressed in different attires, which hinted that they had come from far and wide. However, one thing they had in common was the determined glint in their eyes.

There were some of them who had kneeled for so long that their bodies were shaking nonstop. They were already approaching their limits, but they gritted their teeth and forced themselves to persevere.

Seeing such a sight, a frown crept onto Zhang Xuan’s forehead.

There were so many people who desired knowledge and would go to great lengths to it, but the massive gates of the residence still remained unforgivingly sealed. It was as if their prayers would never be answered.

“Kong shi preached the right to education. Considering that the entire Hundred School of Philosophers are his students, why are they so unwilling to pass down their cultivation techniques?” Zhang Xuan could not understand what he was seeing.

It was due to Kong shi’s magnanimity that he had eventually become the World’s Teacher. Since the lineage of the Hundred Schools of Philosophers originated directly from Kong shi, why would they maintain such tight control over their heritage, refusing to share it with others?

Jiya!

While Zhang Xuan was still wondering about this matter, the massive gates to the residence suddenly opened, and several

tall, slender figures walked out.

They were three youths and a middle-aged man. The youths seemed to be barely in their twenties whereas the middle-aged man had his brows sternly furrow.

“A Great Sage cultivator,” Zheng Yang murmured.

The middle-aged man was actually a Great Sage cultivator whereas the three youths were at Saint 9-dan. Without a doubt, all four of them were highly talented geniuses.

“The examination of the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism is fraught with difficulties. Take my teachings to heart, and do your best to clear it!” the middle-aged man instructed the three youths in front of him.

“Yes!” The three of them nodded solemnly in response.

“The Great Phrontistery of Confucianism?” Zhang Xuan’s eyebrows shot up upon hearing that familiar term.

“That’s the current head of the Fan Clan and his juniors! Are they going to the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism to challenge the trial? That’s incredible!”

“Those who are permitted to step through the doorways of the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism are the most talented of geniuses. If I could receive even just a single pointer from a person of that caliber, all my effort wouldn’t have been in vain!”

“It’s a pity that their cultivation techniques aren’t imparted to outsiders. Given our standing, there’s no way we will ever be able to lay our hands on them!”

...

Such discussions could be heard amid the crowd.

Ancient Sage Zi Chi was an honorary title; his real name was Fan Xu. The Fan Clan whom the crowd were speaking about referred to the clan of his descendants.

“Good. I wish you all the best!” the middle-aged man said with a wave of his hand.

Hu!

The three youths soared into the air and flitted into the distance. All it took was a few moments for them to vanish without a trace.

Watching as the silhouettes of the three youths vanished, Zheng Yang turned to look at Zhang Xuan anxiously. “Teacher...”

“Un, let’s follow them. I think the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism holds the key to all of the secrets we have been wondering so far!” Zhang Xuan said.

Previously, the experts who had snuck into the Master Teacher Continent had all been from the Hundred Schools of Philosophers. Instead of posing questions to the not-too-beautiful village belle, it would be much better to them to simply follow those three youths.

Hearing their words, the village belle scoffed. “Follow them? Have you eaten the wrong medicine? They are Saint experts! Given the speed that they are traveling at, even if my spirit beast snapped its wings, it would still be unable to catch up with them! You won’t be able to even see their silhouettes...”

She also desired to learn from the three youths... but they simply were not even close to being at the same level as those three youths. Putting aside seeking guidance from them, they would not be able to reach them even if they ran with all of their might!

It was not as if she could not understand Zhang Xuan and the others’ agitation at seeing the three experts, but they should be realistic! They would never achieve anything great with their heads in the air!

“Thank you for bringing us here. We won’t be riding your aerial spirit beast back. Farewell!” Interrupting Xiu Ru’s words, Zhang Xuan clasped his fist with a smile before turning around.

Hu!

He rose into the air, and as if teleporting through space, he abruptly disappeared into thin air.

“You...”

The eyes of the village belle nearly popped out of their sockets upon seeing Zhang Xuan's vanishing act. She quickly turned to look at Zheng Yang and Wei Ruyan, only to see the two of them smiling at her.

Hu!

They vanished as well.

Putong!

Xiu Ru's bottom fell to the ground as she sat in a daze over what had just happened, dumbstruck.

She had thought that they were weaklings, but contrary to her expectations, they turned out to be experts... top-notch experts who far surpassed her imaginations!

# 1871 Fan Xiaoxu

Paying no heed to the frenzied village belle, Zhang Xuan and the others hastened their footsteps. It did not take them long to catch up to the three young men.

While those three youths were not able to sever space to travel through dimension rifts, they seemed to have practiced some kind of unique movement art, allowing them to travel at an incredible speed.

“Shall we stop and question them?” Zheng Yang asked.

“There’s no need for that. Even if we question them, I reckon it’s unlikely that they will be able to answer my doubts. It’ll do for us to just follow them for the time being. Everything should come to light at the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism!” Zhang Xuan replied with a shake of his head.

The information that Zhang Xuan wanted to know was one of the deepest secrets of the Master Teacher Continent, such that there was no way the youths from the younger generation would know a thing. Furthermore, revealing their goals might not necessarily work to their advantage. As such, it would be best for them to trail the youths for the time being and decide on their next move after they reached the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism.

Trusting his teacher’s judgement, Zheng Yang nodded before falling silent.

The group continued heading forward, and three days later, they finally found themselves standing before a humongous mountain. The area in front of the mountain was filled with huge crowds that numbered in the thousands.

Zheng Yang discreetly landed on the ground and blended into the crowd to gather some information whereas Zhang Xuan and Wei Ruyan took this opportunity to swiftly assess their surroundings.

None of those amid the crowd of several thousand around them were older than thirty. All of their cultivation levels were similar to those the three youths from before, Saint 9-dan. In fact, there were some who had reached Half-Great Sage.

Other than Zheng Yang and the others, there was probably no one else on the Master Teacher Continent who had reached Saint 9-dan before their thirties. Yet, for so many of them to appear there all at once... As expected of the Hundred Schools of Philosophers, they were indeed extraordinary!

They possess the bloodlines of Ancient Sages, their constitutions have been refined by the Greensprout Wheat over generations, and they have inherited the entirety of Kong shi's heritage. Given so, it's difficult for the youths of the Master Teacher Continent to compete with them, Zhang Xuan thought.

There were plenty of geniuses on the Master Teacher Continent, but even among the Three Great Clans, most of those who were at Saint 9-dan were already in their two hundreds, and they were already esteemed elders in their own clans.

It was spectacular for one to wield such great strength despite only being in their twenties.

“Teacher, I sense a particularly sharp aura from them.” Wei Ruyan sent a telepathic message to Zhang Xuan. “It's as if they've been through countless battles. It's something that I rarely sense even from the experts of the Master Teacher Continent.”

Hearing those words, Zhang Xuan nodded in response.

This particular quality of those several thousand youths had caught his eye as well.

Most of the experts on the Master Teacher Continent were master teachers. While they boasted remarkable fighting prowess, they were more skilled in imparting knowledge and guiding the later generations. On the other hand, the cultivators who had gathered in front of the mountain

emanated the feral aura of the battlefield right from their bones, reminiscent of combat masters.

It was apparent that they had not just focused solely on their cultivation. They had also fought many battles, granting them a deep understanding of fighting techniques. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

Some time later, Zheng Yang returned and reported back to Zhang Xuan telepathically.

“Teacher! Based on what I’ve heard, the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism isn’t here. Instead, it’s hidden within a folded space. If we wish to enter the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism, we’ll have to first join their ranks. Apparently, all of the people here are all the descendants of the seventy-two Sages, and they are here to take the examination!”

“I see...” Zhang Xuan nodded contemplatively.

“The examinees have to clear many trials in order to enter the peculiar folded space where the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism is located. Otherwise, the barrier will repel them, denying them entry,” Zheng Yang explained.

Hearing those words, Zhang Xuan activated the Eye of Insight to scan the surroundings, hoping to find the whereabouts of the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism. However, he soon shook his head.

He did find formations in the area around them, but there were no folded spaces or the like to be found. It seemed like he would not be able to sneak into the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism that easily.

Do I have to impersonate an examinee to participate in the examination as well? Zhang Xuan thought in exasperation.

He was someone who wielded fighting prowess invincible beneath the Dimension Shatterer realm. Even the powerful Ancient Sage Yan Qing would be no match for the current him! Yet, he was actually going to have to disguise himself as an ordinary examinee and compete with a bunch of Saint 9-dan and Half-Transcendent Mortal cultivators.

Just the notion of it felt extremely embarrassing. It was as if he was an adult marching into a playground to challenge the kids playing there!

However, if he did not do that, it would be difficult for him to get to the Great Phrontistry of Confucianism. He had no idea about its whereabouts or how powerful the barrier around it was, so forceful methods might not work out too well.

Even with his current cultivation, he dared not make a move recklessly when it came to matters relating to Kong shi's heritage. The barrier that he had to cross in order to enter this dimension was one good example. If the Great Phrontistry of Confucianism had something of the same caliber as well, he could very well find himself cornered even if he had Vicious' aid.

Zhang Xuan pondered for a moment before turning to instruct his two students. "The Great Phrontistry of Confucianism is likely to be fraught with dangers, and your disguises aren't perfect. For the time being, you should find a place in the vicinity and stay there till I contact you."

The disguise amulet that Luo Ruoxin had given him would alter even his bloodline, making it impossible to discern any anomalies. With that, he should be able to impersonate one of the examinees without any issue. On the other hand, while Zheng Yang and Wei Ruyan were able to alter their appearances, they were not able to disguise their fundamentals. Under the inspection of another Ancient Sage, they would be exposed in an instant.

Since that was the case, it would be wiser for them to stay put.

"Yes, Teacher!" Knowing their teacher's capabilities, the two of them nodded in response.

They swiftly drafted out a plan before Zheng Yang and Wei Ruyan walked away with smiles on their faces. Without much trouble, they managed to lure the other two youths of the Fan Clan away before Zhang Xuan approached the last youth with a bright smile on his face.

"Fan Xiaoxu, it's a pleasure to meet you!"

After following these three youths for the past three days, he was already well aware of their backgrounds. The youth standing before him was Fan Xiaoxu, and he was also the one deemed most likely to clear the examination and enter the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism.

“You are...”

Even though Fan Xiaoxu was a descendant of Ancient Sage Zi Chi, there was no way that he could have noticed Zhang Xuan and the others’ presence given the difference in their strength. As such, he was perplexed to see that Zhang Xuan actually knew his name.

“I’m aware that you may not know me, but your father is a close friend of mine. He has entrusted me to take care of you, so I would like to have a private talk with you about the upcoming examination!” Zhang Xuan said.

“You are a close friend of my father’s?” A hint of doubt surfaced in Fan Xiaoxu’s eyes.

His father was the incumbent head of the Fan Clan, the middle-aged man who had sent them off three days ago. If his father had any friends here, his father would have told him about it in advance. There was no way that he would not have been unaware of it.

“Indeed. There are too many people here at the moment, so shall we move to the side?” Zhang Xuan could sense that Fan Xiaoxu was skeptical of his identity, but he maintained a nonchalant look on his face.

“Alright then!” Fan Xiaoxu was filled with doubt, but he eventually gave a nod of approval.

Putting aside the fact that he was a Saint 9-dan pinnacle expert, just the fact that they were surrounded by formidable experts made it highly unlikely for anyone to make a move on him directly even if that person did harbor malicious intentions toward him.

Besides, he was just a humble nobody. There was nothing one could get out of him.

They walked over to the back of a nearby building. Fan Xiaoxu was just about to inquire about the reason behind this talk when he saw the other party's palm expanding right before his eyes.

Struck directly in the face, he fainted in an instant.

Right up to the moment that he fainted, he was astonished that someone actually dared to make a move on him at a place like that!

Zhang Xuan placed Fan Xiaoxu's body into his folded space before using the disguise amulet to alter his appearance in the form of Fan Xiaoxu. He made sure that even their clothes were identical.

While it had not been too long since he had come to this dimension, he had already grasped some rules regarding the culture there.

Only those who belonged to the clans of the seventy-two Sages were allowed to cultivate. Ordinary civilians were not allowed to access any cultivation techniques at all.

He would not be allowed to take the examination if he disguised himself as a normal cultivator, so he could only wrong this fellow.

Then again, this could be an opportunity for the other party.

At the very least, the other party was sure to clear the examination without any hiccups. It was a golden ticket that guaranteed that he would get into the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism.

Zhang Xuan quickly returned to where he had taken Fan Xiaoxu from earlier. Soon, he saw Zheng Yang and Wei Ruyan returning with the two youths that they had lured away. The two youths had confused looks on their faces, apparently not understanding why they had been pulled away at all.

Zheng Yang and Wei Ruyan made up some excuse about recognizing the wrong people before taking their leave, leaving those two dumbfounded on the spot.

Not too long later, several tall figures flitted over from afar,  
and a heavy pressure crushed down on them.

The experts from the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism had  
arrived!

# 1872 The Topic of the Examination

Zhang Xuan looked at the tall figures floating in the sky with slightly raised eyebrows.

Surprisingly, there were two familiar faces among the group. They were Nangong Yuanfeng and Tantai Zhenqing, who had paid a visit to the Luo Clan and Zhang Clan respectively not too long ago.

In order to preserve their lifespan, the Ancient Sages of the Hundred Schools of Philosophers likely spent most of their time in hibernation. Thus, most affairs were passed down to the Great Sage cultivators to handle. It was apparent that those two had a rather high position in the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism.

The Sempiternal realm consummation expert standing at the forefront of the group shot a sweeping gaze across the crowd before speaking with a booming voice. “Welcome. You are the most outstanding descendants from the clans of the seventy-two Sages in this generation, and I believe that you must have put in a lot of effort in order to come this far!

“However, the resources we have are limited, and I believe that I need not say anything more about the recruitment criteria of our Great Phrontistery of Confucianism. We only open up a hundred slots every year, and this year won’t be an exception!

“This year, we have a total of 2,143 applicants, which means that only one out of twenty of you will be able to join us. You’ll have to put your lives on the line in order to be the ones standing at the end of this intense battle. If you are afraid, I’ll allow you to step out right now!”

“The Great Phrontistery of Confucianism is only accepting a hundred people?” Zhang Xuan frowned.

The two thousand applicants who had gone there were all incredibly talented individuals who had reached Saint 9-dan in their twenties. On the Master Teacher Continent, geniuses of this caliber would indubitably become powerhouses in the future. Yet, the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism was going to eliminate so many of them at once...

Was this examination not a little too strict?

Noticing Zhang Xuan's bewilderment, one of the two youths beside him spoke up. "Didn't the clan head say it earlier before coming here? The Great Phrontistery of Confucianism has always been this strict. Besides... isn't it the same for our clan?"

His name was Fan Xiaoxing, and while his cultivation was beneath that of Fan Xiaoxu, he was also a Saint 9-dan pinnacle cultivator.

"What's the same?"

"The selections! There is an examination for us every single year, and those who fail will be denied cultivation resources and cultivation techniques, thus losing the privilege to cultivate. Have you forgotten how many battles we had to go through in order to come this far?" Fan Xiaoxing shook his head with a bitter smile.

"How could I possibly have forgotten all of that? I just can't help but feel a little melancholic at this harshness," Zhang Xuan replied with a slight smile to cover up his astonishment.

To hold examinations every year and deprive those who had failed of their cultivation resources... was it not a little cruel to enforce such rules within their own clans?

Was Kong shi's goal not to nurture every human to become powerful, independent experts?

If so, why would the Hundred Schools of Philosophers intentionally deprive their own people of the resources required for them to grow?

"The examination this year is slightly different from the previous years, but it will be much simpler than before. I believe that every single one of you has noticed that the

mountain in front of us have been sealed. This mountain will serve as the venue of your examination. Before entering the mountain, we'll have every single one of you wear a teleportation jade token in front of your chest. As soon as you crush it, you will be immediately teleported out, thus losing your right to enter into the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism!

“You are free to make allies and make a move on others; there will be no restrictions on that. As long as you are one of the hundred survivors remaining at the end, you will have cleared the examination and earned the right to enter the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism!” the Sempiternal realm consummation middle-aged man standing at the forefront of the group above reiterated.

“We'll be immediately teleported out if the teleportation jade token we are holding is crushed?”

“That's unfair! If someone skilled in concealment hides himself as soon as we enter the mountain, such that no one is able to find him, won't he be able to clear the examination without battling at all?”

“That's the same for those who are skilled in formations! If he sets up his defenses well, no one will be able to eliminate him!”

“What if everyone hides and we don't eliminate others?”

Such discussions sounded from the youths beneath.

They had thought that the examinations would take on the same format as previous years, such as a round robin tournament or some sort of trial, but who could have known it would just be a mass elimination battle?

“There's no need to worry. Since we have already set the rules, there's no way we'll allow that sort of problem to occur. The Great Phrontistery of Confucianism will be dispatching an enforcement squad to eliminate those who hide or proactively avoid battles. Furthermore, the duration of the examination is only six hours. If you are unable to reduce your numbers to a hundred people by the end of this duration, we'll deem all of

you to have failed the examination!” the Sempiternal realm consummation middle-aged man said.

“Six hours?”

“Enforcement squad?”

Everyone’s eyes widened in astonishment.

There were still some who had been thinking that they would be able to exploit the rules to clear the examination with ease, but they dared not to harbor such thoughts anymore.

To eliminate more than two thousand people within three hours was no easy feat. In order to ensure that the number was reduced to a hundred people by the end of the duration, they would have to actively seek out individuals to eliminate. Furthermore, if they dared hide, they would risk being weeded out by the enforcement squad.

In other words, if they wished to be one of the hundred survivors at the end, they would have to try their best to eliminate others.

The Sempiternal realm consummation middle-aged man looked at the crowd after explaining all of the rules. “Are there any other questions?”

“No!” the crowd replied resoundingly.

The Sempiternal realm consummation middle-aged man waved his hand, and an elevated platform materialized at the center of the crowd. On it were several thousand jade tokens.

“Verify your identities and claim your jade tokens,” he instructed.

One of the youths took the lead and walked up to the elevated platform. He bit his finger and squeezed out a droplet of blood on the elevated platform.

Weng!

There was a slight buzz as a line of words appeared above the elevated platform: Ancient Sage Zi Qi.

Hu!

With the acknowledgement of his bloodline, a jade token flew over and pinned itself to his chest.

Following which, the second youth walked up to the elevated platform.

“Their procedures sure are strict...” Seeing this, Zhang Xuan could not help but pat his heart in relief.

It was fortunate that he had knocked out Fan Xiaoxu in advance to disguise himself as the other party. If he had not sent Zheng Yang and Wei Ruyan away, their disguises would surely have crumbled in the face of this verification method, thus putting the Hundred Schools of Philosophers on their guard.

The crowd around Zhang Xuan slowly moved toward the elevated platform, and soon enough, it was finally Zhang Xuan’s turn to claim his jade token. He squeezed his blood on the elevated platform and successfully obtained a jade token too.

Fan Xiaoxing and the other youth, Fan Xiaofeng, then went up.

In less than an hour, all two thousand examinees had claimed the jade tokens that they would have to lay down their lives to protect during the course of the examination.

“Good! Quickly head over to the mountain. As soon as the last participants steps into the mountain, the six hours will officially start ticking down!” The Sempiternal realm consummation middle-aged man in the air waved his hand grandly.

Huala!

The seal around the mountain opened up, and the crowd swiftly dashed toward the peak.

Those who first headed in would be able to claim the advantageous terrain, thus significantly boosting their chances at clearing the examination.

Fan Xiaoxing and Fan Xiaofeng were intending to rush right in as well, but they felt someone tugging their clothes from

behind. It was Fan Xiaoxu.

“It’s likely that we’ll be forcefully separated after entering the mountain. Find somewhere to hide first. I’ll come looking for you!”

Zhang Xuan noticed that there were Teleportation Formations set up along the perimeter of the mountain, so it was likely that examinees would be randomly teleported to various places on the mountain.

Otherwise, if those from the same clan huddled together, it would make an unfair battle.

“Hide?” Fan Xiaoxing and Fan Xiaofeng frowned.

In truth, the three of them would not form too powerful a force even if they did group together. They would just become a larger target for others to attack if they huddled together, so they might very well fare better going off on their own paths.

“Listen to me. I’ll make sure that all of us clear the examination!” Zhang Xuan said confidently. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

Since he had knocked out the real Fan Xiaoxu and assumed the latter’s identity, he should give something back to Ancient Sage Zi Chi’s descendants in compensation.

Seeing how adamant Fan Xiaoxu was about this matter, Fan Xiaoxing and Fan Xiaofeng hesitated for a moment before nodding in agreement. “... Alright then!”

Zhang Xuan also did not bother explaining how he would go looking for them after they went into hiding. Instead, with a light smile, he swiftly flitted over to the mountain.

Hula!

Light burst forth from the Teleportation Formation and shrouded his figure, causing him to vanish.

# 1873 The Law of the Jungle

When the light finally faded from view, Zhang Xuan found that he was already standing behind a boulder. As soon as he regained his balance, he felt a chilling intent moving along the ground, dashing right toward the jade token in front of his chest.

If the strike landed, he would be eliminated right away.

This examination was indeed advantageous toward those who entered the mountain early. Those who had arrived earlier were already lying in ambush, waiting to spring upon those who walked into their trap.

“Not bad. You are quite fast!” Zhang Xuan chuckled as his fingers darted forward in retaliation.

Weng!

The weapon that was surging in his direction was held firmly on the spot, unable to advance any further on him.

Even though Zhang Xuan had limited his strength to the level of a Saint 9-dan cultivator, his eye of discernment and reaction speed were more than enough to make him a match for Great Sage cultivators. Considering how his assailant was only an ordinary Macrocosm Ascendancy realm cultivator, there was no way his ambush could possibly succeed!

Having blocked the assault, Zhang Xuan took a good look at his assailant—it was a young man dressed in black. A hint of horror could be seen reflected in the depths of the young man’s eyes upon seeing how Zhang Xuan caught his dagger so easily. Knowing that he was outmatched, the young man decisively abandoned his dagger and turned tail.

It was a wise move on the young man’s part. Had it been any other competitor, his decisiveness would have ensured his survival.

“I have to say that you are very sharp on your feet. It’s only unfortunate that you chose me as your opponent...” Zhang

Xuan nodded in approval as he lifted his finger and tapped it lightly in the air. “Freeze!”

Huala!

As if the air had frozen over, the young man found himself standing completely still on the spot, unable to move at all.

“This is... a spatial seal!” the young man cried in fright.

For a Saint 9-dan cultivator to actually comprehend such an ability... this meant that the young man before him was ranked amid the top among the descendants of the seventy-two Sages! How could he have been so unlucky as to meet such a powerful foe at the very start of the examination?

“F-friend, I-I apologize for my brash actions. I was truly foolish to have dared make a move on you. Please be so magnanimous as to spare me...” The young man begged desperately for mercy.

He boasted the greatest fighting prowess among his peers in his clan. He had thought that as long as he prepared himself well, he would be able to hunt down others with ease. However, who could have known that his first target would end up being this ridiculously powerful expert?

If only he had known earlier, he would have surely snuggled up tightly in his hiding position. He wouldn't have courted his own death!

“It's not entirely impossible for me to spare you,” Zhang Xuan remarked as he looked at the young man before him purposefully.

“Please speak of any conditions you have for me!”

Understanding the intention behind Zhang Xuan's gaze, the young man gritted his teeth. “I am willing to offer up my possessions in exchange for your mercy. However, you should also be aware that the resources that each clan passes down to us are limited, so I don't have too many good items...”

“I don't need your possessions. You have two choices in front of you. You can either have your jade token destroyed and be eliminated, or you can tell me what I want to know,” Zhang Xuan said as he gazed deeply at the young man. “Rest assured,

I won't probe into the secrets of your clan and put you in a tight spot."

"I'll choose the second!" the young man replied decisively.

Only he knew how much effort he had put in to get so far. If he failed to get into the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism, all of the resources that he had been entitled to would come to a halt, making it impossible for him to advance any further in the future.

No matter what, he could not allow himself to be eliminated there!

"Wonderful," Zhang Xuan remarked nonchalantly as he placed his hands behind his back. "From the moment you started how cultivating, how did you climb to the current stage you are at? I want you to describe every single thing in detail, be it the trials or examinations you have been through!"

"H-huh?"

The young man had been wondering what Zhang Xuan would ask him, but it turned out to be something that practically everyone knew about. Even though he was bewildered by the question, he still answered it honestly. "I have been through twenty-seven exams so far, roughly one or two every single year. In every single examination, I saw many of my peers getting eliminated, thus having whatever resources they had been entitled to completely cut off. Instead, they are entrusted with the responsibilities of managing the clan's businesses instead..."

It did not take long for the young man to go through his entire story. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

As Zhang Xuan listened to the young man, a frown slowly etched its way between his brows.

Just as he had guessed, it seemed like competition was an integral part of the life of the Hundred Schools of Philosophers. From the moment they started cultivating, they were put through trial after trial. They would be entitled to

more cultivation techniques and resources if they cleared the trial, but if they failed, they would be stripped of their right to cultivate.

This was no longer nurturing the young; it was practically nurturing gu!

It was rumored that those who nurtured gu would toss thousands of poisonous creatures together into a jar and have them kill one another. The one to emerge victorious at the end of it all would be the strongest gu of all.

This seemed to be the same method that the Hundred Schools of Philosophers were employing as well. Those who were given the opportunity to participate in the examination of the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism had to go through many trials and rise above all of their peers in order to come this far.

It was no wonder all of them emanated such feral auras, reminiscent of the combat masters. Only those who had the most tenacious drive of all could possibly survive under such conditions.

Perhaps this was also why Yan Xue and the others had no qualms about collaborating with the Otherworldly Demons. To them, results were the most important of all. As long as they achieved what they aimed for, the means were not important at all.

It seems like the Hundred Schools of Philosophers have created an environment that promotes the survival of the fittest, Zhang Xuan thought as he looked at the young man once more.

“You said earlier that the resources you are given from your clan is limited. What does that mean?”

“As an offspring of a major clan, do you not know that?” the young man asked incredulously.

However, knowing that his future was in the other party’s hand, he could only answer obediently. “Depending on one’s level of cultivation and the examinations one has passed, the amount of resources that one is entitled to is fixed. Based on

what I know, it's the same for all clans. There is no exception at all!"

Zhang Xuan gasped in shock. It felt like he had suddenly gotten a glimpse into how the Hundred Schools of Philosophers operated.

At the very start, they would choose the offspring that showed some aptitude toward cultivation and groom them. At fixed intervals, those who failed to advance beyond a certain level would be eliminated, thus losing their right to access cultivation resources and cultivation techniques. Other than that, there would also be all kinds of competitions and trials that they would have to overcome.

If they wished to continue cultivating, the only thing they could do was charge ahead as desperately as they could in order to ensure that they would not lag behind.

It could be said that the resources in this world were controlled to a degree so precise that it could make one shudder in fear!

"Can't one venture into ancient domains or the like in order to obtain cultivation resources and cultivation techniques?"

Zhang Xuan asked.

Most cultivators on the Master Teacher Continent did not have too many resources either. However, through trading or venturing into ancient domains and finding treasures, they would be able to gather the resources required for them to continue cultivating for quite a while.

So, why could the population here not do the same? There was no way they had not thought of such a thing.

"How could there be any ancient domains around? After a cultivator dies, all of the resources he has been given are taken back by their respective clan. Even if you kill me right now, you won't be able to take my resources because every single item I have brought with me has been logged in my clan's logistics records. If there's anything missing, my clan will make an official visit to your clan and demand the return of the missing resources!" the young man said.

Zhang Xuan's eyebrows shot up in disbelief.

Just what in the world was the Hundred Schools of Philosophers up to? Why in the world would they go to such extreme lengths to control the circulation of resources in the Kunxu Domain?

Was this dimension in such a dire shortage of resources?

After asking a few more questions to clarify the matter, Zhang Xuan flicked his finger lightly at the young man.

Hu!

The young man collapsed to the ground.

“You will regain your consciousness after I leave, but you won’t remember meeting me and everything that has happened afterward,” Zhang Xuan whispered softly before leaving the area.

Memories were stored in the soul, and given Zhang Xuan’s prowess in soul arts, it was not too difficult for him to isolate a specific memory and wipe it away. Even though the questions that he had asked were insignificant in nature, it was likely that it could bring some trouble to Fan Xiaoxu in the future.

Since that was the case, he should stem any potential problems at the roots.

# 1874 Fan Xiaofeng

“Spiritual Perception!”

After parting from the young man, Zhang Xuan walked a distance away before releasing his Spiritual Perception. In an instant, he gained an overview of the entire mountain.

In truth, there were formations in place that prevented the examinees from using their Spiritual Perception. However, through exploiting the flaws of the formation and his superior strength, he was able to use his Spiritual Perception without catching anyone’s notice.

Soon, he found the trails of the two youths that he was looking for.

“Oh? Fan Xiaoxing is quite lucky, isn’t he? He was teleported in the midst of a mountain stream, so as long as he hides there, he should be able to avoid the attention of others for quite some time. Ah... did Fan Xiaoxing take up all of the luck?”

The three examinees from Ancient Sage Zi Chi’s lineage were Fan Xiaoxu, Fan Xiaoxing, and Fan Xiaofeng.

Fan Xiaoxing had managed to hide himself well, so no one had noticed him thus far. On the other hand, Fan Xiaofeng was in a precarious position. There were two powerful candidates chasing after him.

It was fortunate that Fan Xiaofeng was extremely nimble, or else his jade token would have already been shattered.

Thus, Zhang Xuan began flitting in the direction of Fan Xiaofeng. He knew that there was an enforcement squad constantly keeping track of his movements, so he made sure to maintain his speed at Saint 9-dan pinnacle.

Wuuuuuu!

While he was traveling, he could sense shockwaves rippling all around him.

The competition among the examinees was really not to be underestimated. It was no exaggeration to say that multiple battles had been ongoing every second since the start of the examination, and the examinees were swiftly being eliminated one after another.

The examination of the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism was truly cruel.

It was true that the rules permitted the examinees to form alliances, but in the face of limited slots, all alliances were transient. The moment a person lowered their guard, a dagger would be plunged into their back.

From the start of the examination, Zhang Xuan had already caught sight of such occurrences several times. Three examinees were working in coordination with one another to corner a cultivator traveling alone, but in the midst of the battle, one of the three examinees working together let his guard down for a moment and ended up getting injured. At the end of the battle, his teammate suddenly turned against him and eliminated him as well.

In this examination, sustaining injuries was extremely dangerous. Not only did it cause a decline in one's fighting prowess, it was also a sign of weakness for other examinees to exploit. As such, being in an alliance might not necessarily be a good thing for this examination.

While Zhang Xuan was dashing ahead, Fan Xiaofeng was trembling nonstop as cold sweat trickled down his head.

Under the simultaneous assault of three examinees, he had already sustained significant injuries. With half of his energy expended, exhaustion was starting to seep into his body.

“Why struggle so hard? Just obediently accept your elimination, and all of your suffering will be over. You should have known from the start that the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism is not a place that someone of your caliber can possibly enter!” one of the youths scoffed with the confidence of a hunter cornering a prey.

The other two youths behind him encircled Fan Xiaofeng in a fan-shaped formation.

“Do your best to eliminate me then! Even if I can’t enter the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism, I’ll make sure to bring you down together with me!” Knowing that there was no escape for him, Fan Xiaofeng gritted his teeth furiously as he glared at the trio before him.

His luck was really horrible. As soon as he entered the mountain, he had been teleported right into the middle of these three. It had really taken his all to survive for so long.

“Hahaha! You’re going to bring us down together with you? That must be the greatest joke of the century!” The youth leading the team of three harrumphed disdainfully. “Get him!”

Huala!

Hearing the signal to attack, the three of them dashed forward and rained blows down upon Fan Xiaofeng. Their attacks covered all directions, making it impossible for the latter to escape.

The youth leading the team had already reached Half-Great Sage whereas the other two were at Saint 9-dan pinnacle. Fan Xiaofeng would have struggled against any one of them, let alone the three of them simultaneously. He flew into a fluster right from the start.

Peng!

A powerful blow sent him crashing heavily into a boulder behind him. Completely sapped, his body slumped to the ground as if a pile of loose mud.

Seeing that Fan Xiaofeng was already powerless to retaliate, the youth leading the team told the other two youths beside him, “Let’s not waste any more time. Quickly crush his jade token, and we’ll start finding our next prey!”

“Yes!”

The youth on the left chuckled softly as he leaped up to Fan Xiaofeng and darted his finger toward the jade token in front of the latter’s chest.

If the attack landed, there was no doubt that Fan Xiaofeng would be eliminated.

“It seems like I’m going to have to let down the expectations of the clan...” With a despaired look on his face, Fan Xiaofeng knew that there was no way he would be able to make a comeback.

Thus, he closed his eyes helplessly and accepted his fate.

However, as time ticked by, the jade token in front of his chest failed to shatter. Opening his eyes once more, he saw a figure sitting on a boulder not too far away. That figure was shaking his right leg casually as he looked in their direction with a trace of a smile on his face.

“Are the three of you proud of yourselves for ganging up on a lad?”

“Xiaoxu...” Fan Xiaofeng’s heart jolted upon hearing that voice.

It was none other than the son of the clan head, Fan Xiaoxu!

The other party had arrived at this crucial moment to save him!

“Another person who has come to court his death, eh?” Seeing how the newly arrived young man dared to provoke them, the youth leading the team sneered coldly. He gestured at the other two youths with a tilt of his chin, and they swiftly surrounded Zhang Xuan.

“You should see for yourself how proud we are of ourselves!”

Hula!

Knowing that time was precious, such that every single second that they remained in the open would spell a greater risk for them, the three of them charged right at Zhang Xuan.

Seeing that the three of them had turned their sights to the son of the clan head, Fan Xiaofeng exclaimed in a panic, “Xiaoxu, hurry up and run away! At the very least, one of us has to clear the examination. You don’t have to care about me...”

He knew that Xiaoxu was only slightly stronger than him, so there was no chance that the latter could defeat the three standing before him. Rather than getting eliminated just like that, the latter would be better off escaping. At the very least, there would still be a ray of hope for their lineage.

Peng peng peng!

However, before Fan Xiaofeng could finish his words, the sound of fists and kicks plunging into flesh echoed resoundingly in the air. Watching as everything unfolded before his eyes, the words that he had sought to say suddenly caught in his throat, causing his words to come to an abrupt halt.

Contrary to expectations, the trio who had still been standing smugly a moment ago were floored with horror reflected in their eyes.

Meanwhile, Fan Xiaoxu was still sitting on the boulder, not seeming to have moved at all. The other party looked at him with an encouraging smile and said, "You should eliminate them yourself."

"Me?" Fan Xiaofeng was taken aback by those words.

Up till this moment, he had been unable to make sense of how the Xiaoxu that he knew was able to defeat those three so easily. His mind was so caught up in that matter that he was unable to process anything else.

"Weren't they trying to eliminate you a moment ago? Since that's the case, it's only right for you to return the favor to them," Zhang Xuan replied.

It was already an act of bullying for him to make a move on those three. He would feel too ashamed of himself if he really eliminated them on top of that.

No matter what, he still wanted to retain as much of his dignity as possible.

"B-but... I am not a match for them!" Fan Xiaofeng cried with a reddened face.

While the three of them had sustained injuries in the earlier clash with Fan Xiaoxu, his injuries were not light either. As much as he wanted to eliminate the three of them, he knew that the current him did not have the ability to do so. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

“Rest assured. These three lads are nothing at all. Follow my instructions, and you will be able to defeat them with ease!” Zhang Xuan replied encouragingly.

“Defeat them with ease? Me?” Fan Xiaofeng was a little hesitant, but it seemed like the idea had struck a chord in his heart. He gritted his teeth and replied, “Alright, I’ll give it a try!”

In any case, Fan Xiaoxu was already there, and based on the current situation, it seemed like he was already in a safe position. Thus, there was nothing for him to worry about even if he did lose the battle.

“You aren’t going to make a move?” the youth leading the team eyed Zhang Xuan warily with fear in his eyes.

The other party had defeated the three of them in a single move. In terms of strength, there was probably no one who could stand against him among the younger generation. Fighting against such an opponent would surely spell their defeat.

However, if their opponent was just the fellow whom they had chased earlier, it should not be too difficult for them to claim victory.

“I won’t make a move, so feel free to use whatever you have at your disposal. If you are able to defeat him, I’ll let the three of you go. Otherwise, I guess the three of you will just have to end your cultivation journey here!” Zhang Xuan replied coolly.

Hearing those words, Fan Xiaofeng nearly keeled over. “Xiaoxu, are you out of your mind?”

# 1875 Yan Yixiao

Fan Xiaofeng had thought that Fan Xiaoxu was trying to train him, and if he reached his limits, the other party would step in and save him. Yet, contrary to his expectations, Fan Xiaoxu was actually saying that he would not interfere in the fight, and he would even let the three of them off if they could defeat him.

How in the world could he possibly defeat the three of them together in a real fight?

It would already be a blessing if he was not beaten to death!

He had thought that Fan Xiaoxu was here to save him, but it felt like the latter had just dug a humongous pit for him to leap into.

With a conflicted look on his face, Fan Xiaofeng looked as if he was on the verge of tears.

Seeing the ‘this is the end’ look on Fan Xiaofeng’s face, Zhang Xuan could not help but chuckle a little. “Cut your hesitation and do as I say. As long as you follow my instructions, you’ll surely be able to win the battle. Otherwise, don’t blame me for not helping you if you get eliminated!”

It would take a miracle for Fan Xiaofeng to lose as long as the other party heeded his guidance!

“Alright then...” Seeing that Fan Xiaoxu was not joking around, Fan Xiaofeng cursed the other party countless times in his heart before taking in a deep breath and rising to his feet somberly.

The worst that could happen was his elimination anyway. He would just have to make sure to recount everything that had happened here to the clan head when he returned.

On the other hand, the group of three had realized the disparity between their strength and Zhang Xuan’s, and they knew that it would be impossible to escape from the other party. Thus,

they exchanged glances before turning to glare at Fan Xiaofeng coldly.

Hu!

The three of them made a move simultaneously, raising powerful gales in the area.

Six arms flashed across the air swiftly in the blink of an eye. Every single one of these arms carried the devastating might of lightning, sealing off every possible path that Feng Xiaoxu could possibly escape to.

“Is this the end?” Fan Xiaofeng felt his blood turning cold.

Previously, he had thought that the worst that could happen was for him to sustain severe injuries, but from the looks of it, even surviving would be a luxury.

Just when he was about to resolve himself to his death, a voice suddenly echoed in his ears.

“Follow my orders. Use the Third Form of the Paced Gait Movement Technique together with the Fifth Move of Enlightenment Palm and the Second Form of Seven Aperture Fist.”

Fan Xiaofeng immediately recognized that voice to be from Fan Xiaoxu. While he had no idea why the other party wanted him to execute those moves, he knew that he had no other choice but to follow the other party’s instructions at this point in time. Thus, he gritted his teeth as he thought, I’ll pit my life against them!

To be able to survive the harsh trials of the Fan Clan and advance so far step by step, the tenacity that drove him was not something that ordinary people could possibly imagine. All it took was the blink of an eye for his heart to settle down. He swiftly went through the three battle techniques through his mind before his body moved fluidly to execute them like flowing water.

Hu!

The Third Form of the Paced Gait Movement Technique brought him into the blind spot of the coordination of the trio,

and executing the Enlightenment Palm with his left palm and the Seven Aperture Fist with his right fist, he struck the chest of two of the youths.

Peng! Peng!

The jade tokens in front of their chests shattered, and with looks of disbelief on the faces of the two youths, they were swallowed by an outburst of light and vanished.

“This...” Fan Xiaofeng was taken aback by what he had just done.

He lowered his gaze to look at his hands in bewilderment, almost as if he was staring at a monster.

Following Fan Xiaoxu’s orders had actually allowed him to overcome the encirclement with a single move, and he had even managed to eliminate two of them so easily...

When in the world had he become so formidable?

“Y-you...”

Seeing how two of his comrades had vanished in an instant, the youth leading the group backed away with a fearful look on his face.

Be it in terms of the sharpness of the movements, the grasp of timing, or his reaction speed, Fan Xiaofeng’s earlier maneuver was so ingenious that it almost felt like an artform. If not, there was no way the other party could have eliminated two of them within such a short period of time. This was a remarkable feat that he knew he would never be able to pull off in his current state!

Just ten breaths ago, Fan Xiaofeng had been in their grasp, but in the blink of an eye, the tables had turned on them. Was this all because he was following that young man’s instructions?

The youth could not help but turn to look at the young man sitting on the boulder not too far away as shock crashed down on his mind like a roaring tsunami.

Even a casual pointer from him was able to induce such a massive improvement in Fan Xiaofeng within a short period of time. Just how freaking powerful must that young man be?

“Eliminate him too,” Zhang Xuan instructed.

“Yes!”

If Fan Xiaofeng had still harbored some doubts before, at that very moment, there was nothing but admiration left at the bottom of his heart. He charged forward in agitation and thrust his palm down on the final remaining youth.

Just like that, the two of them started exchanging blows with one another.

This time, Zhang Xuan did not give direct instructions to Fan Xiaofeng. Instead, what he did was decipher the other party’s move in detail to the latter, granting the latter the freedom to choose what kind of moves he should use to counterattack.

Initially, Fan Xiaofeng’s movements were still a little flustered as his thoughts struggled to keep up with the flow of battle. However, by the twentieth blow, he had already grown accustomed to the tempo, and before long, he was able to fend off the other party’s attacks with minimal effort.

The youth who had cornered him earlier was no longer a match for him.

Peng peng peng!

With a powerful thrust of his finger, Fan Xiaofeng shattered the youth’s jade token.

He saw an indignant look on the youth’s face before the latter’s silhouette was completely enveloped within a brilliant outburst of light and vanished from view. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

“Xiaoxu...”

Fan Xiaofeng could hardly believe that he had actually managed to defeat a Half-Great Sage cultivator with his own strength. He turned to look at Fan Xiaoxu with awe in his eyes.

No wonder Fan Xiaoxu had told them to wait for him to come look for them. Who could have known that he would have grown so powerful over the course of a few days?

Just as Fan Xiaofeng was about to express his gratitude to the young man sitting on the boulder, the other party suddenly turned to look at the mountain stream not too far away and waved his hand leisurely. “Haven’t you watched long enough? Don’t you think it’s about time for you to come out?”

Pah pah pah!

Resounding applause echoed in the area as seven silhouettes emerged from the shadows from the mountain stream.

Upon seeing this sight, Fan Xiaofeng’s heart skipped a beat. He had actually failed to realize that there were so many people hiding in his vicinity!

Furthermore, from the looks of it, they were already allied with one another!

It suddenly dawned on him why Fan Xiaoxu had not made a move all along. It was likely that the other party had noticed that there were others hiding in the area, so he was keeping a close eye on them in case they made a move.

“I have to say, Fan Xiaoxu, you sure have improved quite a lot from back then. You were actually able to allow this ordinary fellow to defeat three men simultaneously with just a couple of pointers. With your current strength, you are qualified to join our team!” the white-robed young man standing at the forefront of the seven youths said.

He was also the one who had applauded earlier.

“He is... a descendant of Ancient Sage Zi Yuan, Yan Yixiao!” Upon taking a closer look at the white-robed young man’s appearance, Fan Xiaofeng suddenly felt as if someone had gripped his heart tightly. “He’s the strongest person in this entire examination. There’s no one on this mountain who is a match for him.”

Most clans would make sure to gather some intelligence about the examinees challenging the Great Phrontistry of Confucianism’s examination each year so that their own people would have a clearer idea who their competitors were.

If there was anyone among the two thousand examinees whom everyone hoped to avoid, it was none other than the white-

robed young man standing before them, Yan Yixiao!

Ancient Sage Zi Yuan was the First Senior of Kong shi's seventy-two Sages, such that even Ancient Sage Ran Qiu, who boasted the greatest fighting prowess of them all, dared not go against his words.

And the person standing before them, Yan Yixiao, was Ancient Sage Zi Yuan's descendant! Due to the incredible capabilities that he wielded, Yan Yixiao's fame had reached even the ears of the older generations.

It was truly the worst of luck for them to encounter him here.

"You want me to join your team?" Zhang Xuan did not appear to be astonished in the least by this turn of events. He simply looked at Yan Yixiao with casual nonchalance in his eyes, seemingly unfazed by Yan Yixiao's appearance and his offer.

"Indeed. Those behind me are those whom I have acknowledged, and you have also caught my eye. Join my team, and let's eliminate the other examinees together." Yan Yixiao placed his hands in the back and spoke with a light chuckle. His voice carried a domineering edge that left no room for negotiation at all.

"Pardon me, but the notion of me catching your eye sends shudders down my spine, and I am not interested in joining your team," Zhang Xuan declined curtly.

He did not expect the other party to be so narcissistic, so he could not be bothered to put up a front to gently reject the other party.

Seeing the airs that Zhang Xuan was putting on, one of the youths standing behind Yan Yixiao could stand it no longer and furiously bellowed, "It's your honor that Brother Yan invited you to join our group, you arrogant prat. Don't think that you are something huge just because you aren't utterly useless. As long as we wish to, we can eliminate you right now and strip you of your opportunity to continue cultivating!"

# 1876 The Enforcement Squad

Qin Xiao was a descendant of Ancient Sage Zi Pi, and he had already reached Saint 9-dan pinnacle a year ago. With his abilities, he was confident that he would be able to clear the examination of the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism with ease, but contrary to his expectations, the format chosen for this year turned out to be a free-for-all elimination round.

If it had been the usual round robin tournament, he was certain that he could have gotten into the top hundred. However, when it came to a free-for-all elimination round, there were simply too many variables involved for him to guarantee his victory.

Nevertheless, he felt that it should not be too difficult to him to get into the final hundred survivors as long as he moved carefully. Unfortunately, it seemed like lady luck was not on his side. Shortly after he entered the examination grounds, he had encountered the strongest competitor in the entire examination, Yan Yixiao. Before he knew it, he had already been eliminated.

At the perimeter of the mountain, one of the middle-aged men who had been standing together with Nangong Yuanfeng earlier walked up to Qin Xiao and said, “Yan Yixiao is the strongest expert in this examination. You need not feel too bad about losing to him!”

He was from the lineage of Ancient Sage Ran Yong, Ran Fei.

All of those who had been eliminated would be teleported right to this location. In order to ensure that everything proceeded smoothly, the Scholastic Masters of the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism were able to peer into whatever was happening within the mountain in real time. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

“I know that losing to him was inevitable, but... I feel so indignant inside!” Qin Xiao clenched his fists tightly in frustration.

He knew that there was no way that he could have triumphed over Yan Yixiao; the disparity in their strength was simply too great. Nevertheless, it was still an awful feeling to be eliminated as soon as he stepped onto the examination grounds.

“Yan Yixiao is Yan Xue’s younger brother, and he has received the latter’s guidance. Of the two thousand examinees gathered here, there are some who have reached Great Sage 1-dan Introspective Convalescence realm, but even they would face difficulty dealing with Yan Yixiao, let alone you!” Scholastic Master Ran Fei consoled with a smile. “If nothing goes wrong, it’s likely that he’ll emerge with the highest results in this examination...”

Ensuring that one was able to squeeze into the ranks of the last hundred survivors was just the prerequisite to entering the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism. As for the ranking of the last hundred survivors, it would be determined by how many people they had eliminated over the course of the examination.

Yan Yixiao’s fighting prowess could be said to be the unrivaled among the two thousand examinees, and to make matters worse, he had teamed up with six other top-notch experts. Anyone who was unlucky enough to encounter his team was bound to be eliminated; there was no other way around it.

“Ancient Sage Zi Yuan’s lineage has always produced generation after generation of experts. I guess this is something that can’t be helped...” As much as Qin Xiao was unwilling to face his defeat, he had no choice but to grudgingly accept it.

All of a sudden, there was radiant burst of light in front of Qin Xiao.

Putong!

A silhouette crashed onto the ground not too far away.

Seeing the fellow who had just been teleported here, Qin Xiao widened his eyes in astonishment.

“Isn’t that the descendant of Ancient Sage Zi Heng, Shi Yuan? He is in Yan Yixiao’s team, right? After all, he was the one who eliminated me earlier...”

As one of the seven people in Yan Yixiao’s team, how in the world did he get eliminated?

Who in the world would dare make a move on Yan Yixiao’s team, or could it be internal conflict?

Putong!

In his moment of shock, a blur flashed across Qin Xiao’s eyes as another silhouette fell to the ground. He was also from Yan Yixiao’s team.

Putong! Putong! Putong! Putong!

Following which, another four people fell to the ground with awkward looks on their faces.

“Aren’t all of them...” Qin Xiao was stunned by what he was seeing.

They were all familiar faces! They had all been with Yan Yixiao when he was eliminated earlier on. How in the world did all of them get eliminated one after another in quick succession?

Did Yan Yixiao make a move on them, or did they encounter some kind of formidable expert?

Unable to curb his intrigue, Qin Xiao rushed forward and asked, “You lot... what...”

But before he could finish his words, another silhouette fell to the ground.

Putong!

When Qin Xiao got a close look at the other party’s appearance, he froze on the spot, petrified. Even Ran Fei staggered weakly and nearly tripped over his own leg.

The person who had just been eliminated was none other than the examinee whom he had just confidently declared would be the champion of this examination... Yan Yixiao!

Yan Yixiao struggled up from the ground as he glared at the mountain peak with inferno burning in his eyes. Unable to suppress the fury burning in his chest, he roared, “Fan Xiaoxu, this isn’t over yet!”

This was the worst humiliation that he had ever suffered!

He was an Introspective Convalescence realm expert, and many viewed him as the strongest contender for the champion seat. He had thought that it was finally time for him to showcase his prowess and dominate the examination, but who could have known that Fan Xiaoxu would grab him by his neck and throw him out, as if dealing with a little chick? To make things worse... he had found himself completely unable to retaliate.

This was a stain that he would never be able to wash away in his life!

He quickly looked around him, and upon seeing Scholastic Master Ran Fei, he walked up to the latter, clasped his fist, and reported, “Ran Fei laoshi, I suspect that Fan Xiaoxu from Ancient Sage Zi Chi’s lineage is cheating. I implore the enforcement squad to head over and investigate him!”

“Cheating?”

“That’s right. I met Fan Xiaoxu half a year ago, and while he wasn’t weak, he was still nowhere close to being a match for me back then. Yet, he actually managed to defeat me with the utmost ease earlier...” Yan Yixiao clenched his jaws and spat.

“I see.” Scholastic Master Ran fei nodded. “I’ll inform the enforcement squad to investigate the matter.”

He had no idea how Fan Xiaoxu could be cheating, but since someone had reported the claim—not to mention that the ‘someone’ was the strongest contender for the champion seat—it was his responsibility to look into the matter.

Thus, he took out his Communication Jade Token and passed down a series of instructions. Following which, he turned his

gaze back to Yan Yixiao and reassured, “Don’t worry. If Fan Xiaoxu is truly cheating, we will surely be able to find something. We have eyes all over the mountain, so there’s nothing he can do that can escape our notice...”

Given the significance of this examination, cheating was strictly prohibited. Of course, if Fan Xiaoxu had truly defeated Yan Yixiao with his own strength, there was nothing that could be done.

“Un!” Yan Yixiao heaved a sigh of relief.

“You mentioned earlier that you were eliminated by Fan Xiaoxu, right? May I ask how many people he has rallied to his side to be able to defeat so many of you at once?”

Scholastic Master Ran Fei asked.

In his view, it was likely that Fan Xiaoxu had managed to gather many experts to his side. After all, such actions were explicitly mentioned to be allowed in the examination.

If that was not the case, it meant that Fan Xiaoxu had singlehandedly overcome the collaboration of all seven of them... which was, of course, a ridiculous notion. Even Great Sage 2-dan experts would be unable to pull something like that off!

“He...” That question jolted Yan Yixiao’s memory of what had happened earlier, and his cheeks began twitching intensely. “He was alone... There was another person that was with him, but that person didn’t make a move at all!”

“Are you telling me that he singlehandedly defeated all of you?” Scholastic Master Ran Fei was dumbstruck. “Was it a one-on-one?”

“No, that’s not it... We attacked him together in order to save time...” Yan Yixiao’s face turned even redder.

It was in view of the prowess that Fan Xiaoxu had displayed that he wanted to invite the other party into his team. Yet, the other party had simply snubbed his invitation, and that had really infuriated him. Thus, he had ordered the entire team to attack Fan Xiaoxu together.

Who would have thought that despite the experts that he had rallied to his side, none of them were able to withstand even a single blow from Fan Xiaoxu?

“So, despite challenging him as a team, you still ended up getting eliminated by him alone?” Scholastic Master Ran Fei widened his eyes, unable to believe what he had just heard.

Yan Yixiao was reluctant to say it out loud, so he nodded discreetly in response.

“This...” Scholastic Master Ran Fei was so shocked that he could not even close his mouth anymore. To be able to defeat so many experts singlehandedly... could it be that Fan Xiaoxu’s cultivation had already reached Great Sage 2-dan Great Philosopher realm?

But it should not be possible for anyone to reach that cultivation realm prior to entering the Great Phrontistry of Confucianism.

Shocked, Scholastic Master Ran Fei was about to probe deeper when there was another burst of light, and another group of fellows rained onto the ground.

Putong! Putong!

“It’s the enforcement squad...”

“Isn’t the enforcement squad supposed to eliminate others? How did they end up... being eliminated themselves?”

Qin Xiao, Yan Yixiao, and the others felt light-headed.

It was just a moment ago that the enforcement squad had been dispatched to investigate Fan Xiaoxu... but who could have predicted that all of them would end up being ejected from the mountain!

“What in the world happened? You don’t have any jade tokens, so it shouldn’t be possible for you to be ‘eliminated’!” Scholastic Master Ran Fei exclaimed.

The head of the enforcement squad struggled to his feet as he explained, “Fan Xiaoxu captured us and set up a Teleportation Formation to send us out...”

“He set up a Teleportation Formation to send you all out?”  
Everyone was stunned.

...

Meanwhile, on the mountain, Zhang Xuan turned around to look at the dazed Fan Xiaofeng and said, “Let’s go and find Fan Xiaoxing!”

# 1877 Even He Has Got I

Fan Xiaofeng felt as if he was dreaming.

Fan Xiaoxu had always been stronger than him, but it was only by a small degree. Yet, within just a few moments, not only did he witness the other party defeating Yan Yixiao and his team with ease, he even saw the other party tossing the enforcement squad members, who had approached them to investigate the matter, out of the mountain one after another. This was way too extreme!

“Snap out of it, Xiaofeng. Someone is blocking our way!” Fan Xiaoxu’s voice suddenly sounded in his ear.

Raising his gaze, he saw two young men standing in their way.

“I won’t be making another move. Try doing what I told you earlier,” Zhang Xuan instructed.

“Yes!” Knowing that this was a good opportunity for him to temper himself, Fan Xiaofeng gritted his teeth and dashed forward.

When he was fighting with the head of the three youths earlier, Fan Xiaoxu had given him quite a few pointers regarding his battle style. Putting them into practice now, he found that his movements felt much more natural than before, and he was in a far better position to deal with whatever was thrown his way.

It did not take long before he eliminated those two youths standing in his path.

“The pointers that you gave me have really enhanced my fighting prowess...” Watching as the two youths were teleported away, Fan Xiaofeng could not stop trembling in agitation.

Had it been in the past, he would have struggled to eliminate even one of them. Yet, he found that he was able to deflect every single one of their blows with ease and launch a decisive counterattack to take down the two of them swiftly.

When he turned to look at Fan Xiaoxu once more, what was in his eyes was no longer awe but reverence.

Seeing that the young man from the Fan Clan had acquired some knowledge from the earlier battle, Zhang Xuan added, “Practical battle is the best way for one to improve. It’s true that the rules of this free-for-all elimination examination are filled with flaws, but it’s able to trigger one’s desperation and stimulate the growth of the examinees, making them more confident than before. When faced with a problem, the first reaction you should have isn’t how you can get away but how you can deal with it!”

There was no denying that luck played a heavy part in such a free-for-all elimination examination. If one encountered the strongest contender at the start of the examination, one could very well be eliminated there and then. Furthermore, the examinees were allowed to form alliances, which meant that the remaining hundred like would not be the strongest of the hundred.

But so what?

Those who persevered through the examination would surely enjoy a huge boost in confidence, and their cultivation should advance faster and faster from then on.

If two individuals were similar in terms of talent, what would make the difference between them were their state of mind and encounters in life.

After defeating quite a few opponents, Fan Xiaofeng had become much more confident from before, too. “Un!”

Just as the other party had said, his first reaction in the face of meeting an opponent was how he could get away and ensure his survival. However, the thought that was dominating his mind at the moment was instead how he could best eliminate his opponent.

This change in attitude would make all the differences in Fan Xiaofeng’s future progress as a cultivator.

Seeing that Fan Xiaofeng received his message, Zhang Xuan nodded with a smile. “Offense is often the best defense!”

As expected of a genius of the Hundred Schools of Philosophers, the other party's intelligence was indeed far above that of the master teachers whom he had taught before.

Of course, the other party was still a long way off from matching his direct disciples.

While making their way over to Fan Xiaoxing, Zhang Xuan continued offering pointers to Fan Xiaofeng. He knew that Fan Xiaoxing was not in any danger from the scan of his Spiritual Perception, so he was in no rush at all.

Along the way, the examinees whom they met would be eliminated without fail, and those battles further tempered Fan Xiaofeng's fighting skills. He became more and more confident.

An hour later, they finally arrived in the forest beside the mountain stream, where Fan Xiaoxing had chosen to hide himself.

The current Fan Xiaoxing seemed to have run out of luck. He had been discovered by a group of examinees.

Individually, those examinees were weaker than him, but with their strength combined, they formed a force exceeding what Fan Xiaoxing could deal with.

Cold sweat dripped down his face as he anxiously assessed the group before him.

Just when he was reaching his limits, he caught sight of Fan Xiaoxu and Fan Xiaofeng in his peripheral vision, and his eyes lit up in relief.

“Hey, over here!”

He had thought that the two of them would rush over to help him deal with the lot surrounding him, but contrary to what he thought, the two of them stopped at the edge of the forest.

He saw Fan Xiaoxu pointing at him and saying, “Did you see that? A single move is all it takes for the tide of battle to turn against one.”

“You're right. Xiaoxing really should have thought it through before making that move earlier!” Fan Xiaofeng nodded in

agreement.

Just a moment ago, he had been equals with Fan Xiaoxing. Who could have known that in a short hour, the other party would end up becoming so weak?

“If you were in his place, what would you have done?” Zhang Xuan asked. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

As much as this was an examination, this was also a trial to test Fan Xiaofeng.

“I would use the Third Move of the Shallow Water Fist accompanied with the Spirit Leaf Movement Technique!” Fan Xiaofeng replied without much hesitation.

“Shallow Water Fist emulates the essence of catching a fish in shallow waters. It requires you to have a deep understanding of your opponent in order to ensure its success... However, just as you are able to see your opponent’s move, your opponent is able to see your move as well. Furthermore, the complex movements of the Spirit Leaf Movement Technique would just make it harder for you to control your Shallow Water Fist!” Zhang Xuan shook his head.

“Ah, you’re right. I was so focused on dealing with the opponent’s attack that I forgot about the flaws of Shallow Water Fist. It would indeed be a poor choice to pair it with the Spirit Leaf Movement Technique. Hmm... Coordinating it with the Emerald Ripple Palm should work out much better. If that’s the case, I should be able to deal with two of them within seven blows, and the remaining two in five more!” Fan Xiaofeng analyzed contemplatively.

“Un.” Zhang Xuan nodded in response.

Through his pointers and a series of practical battles, Fan Xiaofeng had indeed made major improvements in his fighting technique. He was already able to reflect and correct his own mistakes.

While the two of them were engaged in an intense discussion, Fan Xiaoxing was on the verge of wailing.

What Shallow Water Palm and Spirit Leaf Movement Technique... Shallow your head! Can't you two talk later? Don't you see that I'm on the verge of being pummeled to death?

Peng peng!

While moving in a fluster, Fan Xiaoxing sustained two more hits to his eyes, causing them to swell up.

He had thought that this should be enough to convince the two of them to rush right in to help him, but their discussion simply droned on.

“While that strike to the face will induce temporary blindness and vertigo in the opponent, such attacks are rarely able to land squarely, especially given that the head is one of the vitals that a cultivator will protect at all costs. If you were in his place, where would you strike?”

“I think that I would strike the ankles. That fellow harnesses great strength in his body, so if I strike his ankles, I should be able to affect his balance and throw him off guard. Even if my attack failed to land, I would be able to divert his attention away, thus creating an opportunity for me to strike his jade token!

“Indeed. This isn't a life-and-death battle but an elimination round. The jade token should always be the main focus of one's attacks.”

Peng peng!

Fan Xiaoxing sustained two more punches on his face, causing fresh blood to trickle down his lips.

“What about this punch?”

“This punch was executed a little awkwardly, but it struck an ideal position. It successfully induced a momentary daze in the opponent. If I were in his place, I would have struck the mouth and sent out a sweeping kick right after. This way, I would be able to overwhelm my enemy, and the jade token would be exposed for an instant!”

“It’s not a bad idea on your part to perform a sweeping kick, but you neglected the limitations of your own body. Due to the cultivation technique you practice, your zhenqi wouldn’t be able to flow fast enough to your lower body to conduct a powerful lower kick. If you executed a weak or delayed sweeping kick, it would instead leave you open for a moment!”

“Ah... You’re right. What should I do then?”

“Think about it!”

“Should I try to attack the jade token with my left hand instead?”

“Of course not! There’d only be a thirty percent chance of success if you struck the jade token with your left hand, and there’s a good chance that you might even be counterattacked!” Zhang Xuan frowned in displeasure.

It was just a moment that he had thought that the other party was a quick learner, but all of his expectations fell through the next moment.

What the heck is this?

Isn’t the answer very clear?

Having two of the countermeasures that he had proposed refuted, Fan Xiaofeng fell into a state of confusion. “What should I do then?”

“What else can you do?” Zhang Xuan spat lividly. “Of course, it’s to continue hitting his face! Since you have claimed the upper hand, as long as you continue your offense, you’ll be able to dominate the flow of the battle, thus putting your enemy in a passive position!”

Peng peng peng!

As soon as those words were spoken, Fan Xiaoxing sustained several more punches to his face.

“Look! Even he’s got it!” Zhang Xuan exclaimed in exasperation.

“...” Fan Xiaoxing cried.

# 1878 Creating Opportunities

“I see!”

Seeing how Fan Xiaoxing was struck to the point where he was completely astonished, possibly forgetting even his own name, Fan Xiaofeng’s eyes lit up as he nodded in agitation.

Xiaoxu was indeed an amazing person! He had seen through the crux in an instant.

If it had been him, not only would his attack have failed, the other party might even have been able to turn the tables on him. However, with just a couple more punches, the other party would be completely incapacitated, thus sealing the outcome of the battle.

While it required more moves, there was no denying that this was a much safer option. Perhaps, it might even be the most efficient way to end the battle!

“Do you think that it’s impossible to counterattack just because he has been struck in his face several times consecutively?” Fan Xiaoxu suddenly asked.

“Ah? Is it still possible to make a comeback after that? I’m afraid that I don’t really know how to cope with such a situation,” Fan Xiaofeng replied in embarrassment.

Had he been in Fan Xiaoxing’s place, those few punches would have surely destroyed him. He would have lost his cool and possibly lost the battle too. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

Hit a person but not their face; this was a common saying among the populace. It was considered a huge humiliation to have one’s face struck.

“Situations where you don’t know how to retaliate often contain the greatest opportunity to turn the tables. Since the enemy has been focusing their attack on his face, they’re

bound to be open elsewhere, like the chest or the crotch,” Zhang Xuan said.

“This...” Fan Xiaofeng widened his eyes in realization.

“Indeed! In a battle, the head is the most protected area. In order to land consecutive hits on the head, it’s inevitable that one will have to get into extremely close quarters with the other party. At a moment like this, striking elsewhere can achieve unexpected results!”

Peng peng!

While they were speaking, Fan Xiaoxing was still getting struck in his head. He could almost see stars spinning around him.

“I can’t count on those two b\*stards to save me...” Seeing how those two were engrossed in their discussion, showing not a sliver of desire to save him, Fan Xiaoxing wiped the tears from his eyes.

He had thought that he would be saved by the arrival of his comrades, but it felt like things had only gotten worse with their arrival.

That being said, there was some logic to what they were saying. Those fellows were too engrossed in hitting his face, so they had unintentionally dropped their defenses around other places.

“I have no choice but to give it a try!” Suffering another punch, Fan Xiaoxing gritted his teeth and kicked his foot upward.

Peng!

He happened to strike one of the assailants’ in the crotch, and the latter immediately fell to the ground like a shrimp.

“I succeeded?” Seeing how he had managed to defeat one of them so easily, Fan Xiaoxing immediately felt a surge of confidence. His heart could not help but beat in exhilaration.

It was true that those two were unreliable as allies, but their analysis of the battle was indeed spot-on.

While barely defending against the onslaught of the remaining three cultivators using his zhenqi, he pricked up his ears and listened intently.

At this point, the other two were still in the midst of their discussion.

“The four of them are coordinating tightly with one another, and the cultivator whom Xiaoxing has just kicked happened to be their leader. His abrupt incapacitation has introduced a moment of fluster among the rest as they struggle to readjust their collaboration formation. If I were in his position, I would use the Qingping Fist together with our clan’s Flowing Water Conception to suppress the rest of them!”

“Using the Qingping Fist together with the Flowing Water Conception is indeed a good idea. However, the key right now should be to take down the gray-robed man, who has taken over the role of maintaining the collaboration formation. As long as he is around, the formation will remain a threat. No matter how agile and flexible your movements are, it’ll be hard for you to overwhelm the remaining three of them when they are covering one another tightly.”

“Ah, you’re right! But how should we deal with that gray-robed man?”

“It’s pretty simple. You can use the Sunflower Steps to back away before jabbing your finger forth three inches to the left. The gray-robed man will then charge forward in response, and that will present an opportunity to take him down!”

...

“I should give it a try!”

Fan Xiaoxing was not too inclined to believe that such a move would really lure the gray-robed man into dashing forward, but he did not have many options. Thus, clenching his teeth tightly, he activated the Sunflower Steps and retreated two meters back. After which, using his finger as a sword, he jabbed forth with imposing momentum.

Due to the nature of the collaboration formation, Fan Xiaoxing’s retreat caused the trio sustaining the formation to

be drawn in his direction. The gray-robed man maintaining the formation ended up being pulled over as well, causing him to come into the line of attack of the jab that Fan Xiaoxing had launched.

A burst of sword qi struck the gray-robed man's jade token squarely.

Kacha!

With a look of disbelief on his face, the gray-robed man was embraced by a brilliant burst of light as he vanished.

"It worked?" Fan Xiaoxing was stunned.

He had thought that those two were just prattling on about nonsensical theories, but who could have known that their suggestions would turn out to work in practice? Having gotten rid of two of his opponents so easily, his heart pounded wildly in excitement.

Also, it was only around this moment that he realized that the discussions, which had been spoken openly a moment ago, had switched to zhenqi telepathy, which meant that his opponents were unable to hear those words.

It seemed like it was not that the two of them did not want to save him but that they hoped for him to win this battle with his own strength.

Just that, there was still one last doubt. The two of them should not have been too much stronger than him, so how were they able to come up with such ingenious attacks one after another?

Even casual pointers from them actually allowed him to achieve victory so easily.

Was it about how spectators had a clearer view of what was happening compared to those directly involved in a situation?

Knowing that this was no time for him to be deep in thought, he continued pricking his ears up to pay careful attention to what was being said.

The other party's voices continued.

“Since their collaboration formation has been undone, should we focus the attack on one of them first to take him down quickly before going for the other?”

“Of course not! While the threat of the collaboration formation has been resolved, the fact that they are no longer in a decisive advantage anymore means that the last two remaining opponents will be far more wary of you. If you assault one of them, the other will make use of whatever opening you show to take you down. What you should do at this moment is stand your ground and focus on defense!”

“Focus on defense?”

It was because he thought that the words of those two made perfect sense that he had moved according to their instructions earlier. However, at that very moment, Fan Xiaoxing could not help but frown doubtfully.

Even without the collaboration formation, he would still be unable to cope with the assault of two equally powerful opponents simultaneously. It had not been easy for him to take down the other two opponents, so he should make use of this momentum to take down the remaining two! If he became defensive at such a moment, it would only be a matter of time before his stamina was whittled down!

“I don’t necessarily have to do as they say. Those two fellows can’t always be right anyway...” Recalling how those two refused to charge in to help him, choosing to stand by the side to watch the commotion instead, Fan Xiaoxing gritted his teeth in anger.

With a cold harrumph, he raised his palm and charged toward one of the opponents.

Pah pah pah!

Focusing all of his zhenqi into his palm strike, just as Fan Xiaoxing felt like he was going to finally overpower the opponent before him, his heart jolted fearfully as his eyes narrowed in shock.

Unknowingly, a foot had appeared right in front of him.

Pah!

He was struck in his vitals, causing him to fly all the way back. The excruciating pain from the kick nearly caused him to blank out.

“You were right, Xiaoxu! He focused his offense on one person, and that allowed the other party to grasp hold of his weakness!” Fan Xiaofeng exclaimed in excitement upon seeing that the theory was indeed true.

“Indeed. If he had chosen to go on the defensive, those two would have swiftly fallen into a state of fluster. After all, they have just witnessed two of their comrades being wiped out in a moment of inattention, and they have lost the safety of the collaboration formation. At such a time, they would surely be more anxious than ever to defeat him. If only he had waited three move moves, the panic that they are feeling would have been magnified manyfold, causing them to make much riskier movements in hopes of ending the battle quick. That would have created an ideal opportunity to strike... It’s truly a huge pity,” Fan Xiaoxu said.

“A battle is all about grasping timing and seeking opportunities. If there are no opportunities in sight, you just have to create one!”

“Yes, you’re right!” Fan Xiaofeng nodded vehemently in agreement.

“Grasping timing and seeking opportunities...” Suppressing the excruciating pain that he was suffering from, Fan Xiaoxing forced himself to his feet and raised his guard once more.

Seeing that Fan Xiaoxing had stood up once more, the two opponents flinched slightly in astonishment. Anxiety and fear could be seen reflected on their faces.

With a ferocious roar, one of the opponents charged forward.

His charge might have seemed reckless, but in truth, he was trying to create an opportunity for his comrade.

Understanding this logic, Fan Xiaoxing knew better than to move recklessly this time around. He immediately scrunched his body together and charged toward the second opponent.

Meanwhile, the second opponent noticed the openings that the first opponent had exposed to Fan Xiaoxing, and he was intending to move in coordination to cover the first opponent. However, not expecting Fan Xiaoxing to not fall for the bait at all and go for him instead, the second opponent was rammed down in an instant, causing a stream of blood to gush down his nose.

“It worked!” Seeing how everything had worked out well, tears of joy began streaming down Fan Xiaoxing’s eyes.

Those two unreliable b\*stards... they had not forsaken him yet!

# 1879 Small Fries Should Scram to the Side

“Un!” Seeing that Fan Xiaoxing had understood the intentions behind their conversation, Zhang Xuan nodded his head in approval.

Since he had borrowed Fan Xiaoxu’s identity, he had to give something back to those in Ancient Sage Zi Chi’s lineage in compensation... Through the general pointers he offered them and inculcating in them a habit of reflection, they would be able to continue improving themselves even after he left.

Peng peng peng!

After taking down two of the opponents and eliminating one of them, there was only one last person remaining. It didn’t take long for Fan Xiaoxing to subdue him too.

After crushing their jade tokens, he stomped up to Fan Xiaoxu and Fan Xiaofeng, wanting to berate them for simply watching the commotion by the side. But after a moment of hesitation, he chose instead to clasp his fist and bow slightly, “Thank you for your pointers earlier!”

Zhang Xuan waved his hand calmly in response.

It didn’t matter to him whether the other party as grateful to his help or not. He was just doing what he thought was right to him. This was the man he was all along—principled, humble, and low profile.

“Everything happened so quickly earlier... How did you all see through their flaws and come up with a countermeasure with just a look?” Fan Xiaoxing asked doubtfully.

His cultivation was around the same level as the other two of them, but why was he unable to see through anything at all whereas the pointers given out by those words ended up becoming words of gold?

It was as if they could peer right into the hearts of others!

“Xiaoxu was the one who taught me this!” Fan Xiaofeng replied excitedly. “In a battle, one has to observe one’s opponent carefully and determine his intentions in order to predict his movements...”

After which, he moved on to throw out several other ways.

Hearing those words, Fan Xiaoxing was rendered completely mystified.

He had never heard of those at all, and it was definitely not part of the lineage within their clan either... How did Fan Xiaoxu know about all this?

“Cultivation is not about blind diligence; it requires one to ruminate and evaluate...” Seeing the doubt in Fan Xiaoxing’s eyes, Zhang Xuan explained calmly.

However, before he could finish his words, he suddenly turned his head to the side.

Huala!

There was a gust of wind, and following which, three groups of people arrived from all around the forest.

Each of the groups consisted of four people, and altogether, there were twelve people in total. Coming from three different directions, they sealed off all routes of escape for Zhang Xuan and the other two.

They are the ones... They have eliminated quite a few people along the way. If we don’t partner together to get rid of them, it’s only a matter of time before they destroy us too!” one of the team leaders harrumphed coldly.

This team leader was a tall and bulky individual. His voice was loud and deep, a little reminiscent of metal clanging against one another.

“Heh, I guess we have to thank them for eliminating so many people for us then!” another team leader spoke up with a smile. He turned to Zhang Xuan and said, “You should have curbed yourselves a little. I don’t deny that you are strong, but in battles like this, knowing when to lie low is also of utmost importance!”

“Are you challenging us?”

Before Fan Xiaoxing could make sense of the situation, Fan Xiaofeng had already stepped forward with a confident smile on his face. “Let’s not waste any time then. All of you should come at us together!”

Along the way, they had already eliminated at least seventy examinees by now. Most likely, their results had already sprinted all the way to the top. It was inevitable that they would catch the attention of other teams.

After all, it was a common strategy for weaklings to band up together to get rid of the greatest threat in a competition.

Given their spectacular accomplishments, it was just a matter of time before teams began to partner with one another in an attempt to eliminate them.

If they were to succeed, their results would be moved over to them, allowing them to leap to the first place in a single shot.

“Xiaofeng...” Not expecting the other party to be so reckless as to provoke the other three teams, Fan Xiaoxing’s face turned green from fright.

That was twelve people before them! Against such a huge force, they would surely be crushed without the slightest sliver of doubt! To provoke them further at a timing like this was no different from courting death!

Come at us together? Come your head!

I have just finished my battle a while ago, and I can hardly open my eyes at all. I’ll really die if I were to fight those twelve of them right now!

“You want to fight us together? Lad, you sure are arrogant, aren’t you?” the bulky young man sneered coldly. “Since you are asking for it, don’t blame us for not showing mercy then! Attack!”

It was apparent that they had already negotiated with one another before coming over to confront them. As the bulky young man spoke, the twelve of them slowly advanced forward, making sure to leave no gap for them to escape at all.

“Xiaoxu...”

Despite facing a numerical disadvantage, Fan Xiaofeng didn't seem nervous in the least. Instead, his eyes were gleaming brighter and brighter in excitement. He turned to look at Fan Xiaoxu, only to see the latter nodding his head in affirmation.

Thus, with a joyful war cry, Fan Xiaofeng dashed right into the crowd of enemies.

“Xiaofeng, don't be reckless!” Fan Xiaoxing felt as if his body had turned completely cold.

That was twelve people in total, and none of their cultivation was any lower than theirs! To dash right in at this moment was as good as seeking death! Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

“Xiaoxu, we need to devise a plan to save Xiaofeng and escape!” Panicked, Fan Xiaoxing turned to Zhang Xuan and urged anxiously.

“Escape? There's no need for that. Calm down and see what Xiaofeng is capable of,” Zhang Xuan replied with a shake of his head.

It was just a moment ago that he had corrected Fan Xiaofeng's state of mind. If he were to encourage the latter to flee at this moment, wouldn't all of the confidence he had built up be shattered in an instant?

As a teacher, there was no way he would allow such a thing to occur!

“But we'll die at this rate!”

Fan Xiaoxing didn't think that Fan Xiaoxu would be as extreme as Fan Xiaofeng. Just as he was conflicted as to what he should do, he suddenly saw the bulky young man charging right across Fan Xiaofeng.

Hula!

With his fingers spread wide like a fan, he thrust his palm right toward Fan Xiaoxu's head, seemingly wanting to end his life.

Just based on his aura, the bulky young man felt no different from an ordinary Saint 9-dan. However, when he drove his strength to its limits, it turned out that he was actually a Half-Introspective Convalescence realm expert!

“It’s over...” Fan Xiaoxing’s face paled in fright.

The reason why he was able to defeat the four of them earlier was because their cultivation was beneath his. Even so, he was still badly pummeled in the end.

However, with the frightening might of this bulky young man and many other experts watching menacingly from the surroundings, it seemed like they were really doomed this time around...

With a wail of desolation, he began thinking about where he should have a drink to drown his sorrows after he was eliminated. On the other hand, a slight frown crept onto Fan Xiaoxu’s forehead, and instead of dodging, he raised his hand.

Pah!

Before the palm thrust of the bulky young man could land, Fan Xiaoxu’s slap had already struck the other party’s face squarely.

The slap seemed to be packed with plenty of power as the bulky young man spun two rounds before crashing into the ground.

“You...”

The bulky young man stunned for a moment before his daze warped in rage, and he charged at Zhang Xuan once more.

Pah!

Another slap struck the other side of his face, and he spun two rounds before crashing into the ground once more.

“Small fries like you should scam to the side! Don’t come here and cause trouble!” Zhang Xuan harrumphed coldly.

“I...”

The bulky young man wanted to say something to at least salvage some of his reputation, but when he thought about the

two slaps he had just suffered, his face immediately reddened, and his words choked up in his throat.

Was he really a small fry unworthy of the other party making a move?

He turned to look at Fan Xiaofeng and saw that there were already four men collapsed on the ground. Even though Fan Xiaofeng's cultivation was beneath his, for some reason, his movements were exceptionally difficult to deal with. It was as if he was a wolf who had leaped into a pack of sheep; there was no one here who could withstand more than three blows from him!

“A-alright, I'll go fight with him...”

Without much hesitation, the bulky young man turned around and charged at Fan Xiaofeng instead.

“...” Fan Xiaoxing was so shocked that his eyes nearly plopped to the ground.

Can anyone tell me what is happening here?

Why did Xiaoxu and Xiaofeng become so weird in the hour we have parted from one another? Am I dreaming or something?

Fan Xiaoxing was dazed.

# 1880 What a Coincidence!

On the square located along the perimeter of the mountain...

Shang Wu suddenly materialized in midair before falling heavily to the ground. He had just been teleported out of the mountain under the effects of a Teleportation Formation. He looked at the sky with a dazed look in his eyes, almost as if he was doubting his own existence.

He was a descendant of Ancient Sage Zi Xiu's lineage, a genius blessed with great talents. He had to step over thousands of his peers in order to come to where he currently was, but after coming this far... even though he had collaborated with several others to gang up on someone weaker than him, he still ended up being eliminated so easily...

The thought of others mocking him for this failure was more than enough to make his entire body cringe in sheer embarrassment.

Struggling to his feet, he was just about to hide his face and leave silently when he heard a shocked voice exclaiming in the air, "Shang Wu, you have been eliminated too? I didn't think that I would see you here..."

Following which, a figure walked over.

After catching a closer sight of the other party, Shang Wu was stunned for a moment before exclaiming as well, "Xi Yuan, what are you doing here?"

Xi Yuan was a descendant of Ancient Sage Zi Xi, as well as a good friend of Shang Wu's. In terms of fighting prowess, they were a close match with one another, so they would frequently spar with one another.

It was already incredibly humiliating for him to be eliminated so swiftly into the examination, but who could have thought that his good friend would end up being eliminated even quicker than he did!

“Hai, let’s not talk about such depressing matters! I attacked someone weaker than me in hopes of raising his ranking, but who could have thought that the other party would end up sending me here...” Xi Yuan shook his head bitterly. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

“You were also eliminated by someone weaker than you?” Shang Wu was stunned as a thought surfaced in his head. “May I know who that person is?”

“It’s embarrassing even just to talk about it. The other party is only at Saint 9-dan pinnacle, a huge gap away from matching you and me...” Xi Yuan’s face reddened in shame.

“He’s also a Saint 9-dan pinnacle cultivator too? Who is it?” Shang Wu asked anxiously.

“He’s... a descendant of Ancient Sage Zi Chi, Fan Xiaofeng!” Xi Yuan replied awkwardly.

“It really is him! I was eliminated by that fellow as well!” Shang Wu widened his eyes in disbelief.

“Wait a moment... You were eliminated by Fan Xiaofeng too?” Xi Yuan was stunned.

“Indeed! He fought against all twelve of us alone and ended up eliminating all of us...” Shang Wu explained agitatedly.

However, before he could finish his piece, another shocked exclamation sounded in the air.

“You were eliminated by Fan Xiaofeng too? What a coincidence! We were eliminated by him as well! He single-handedly sent the three of us out of the examination...”

Following which, four young ladies walked over.

“It really is a huge coincidence. It was the exact same for us too!”

Two young men and a young lady walked over.

“Oh? All of you were eliminated by Fan Xiaofeng? The same happened to us too. We were eliminated so tragically...”

Yet another five more youths walked over.

“Hey, you aren’t the most tragic ones, alright? Do you see Yan Yixiao and his group over there? It seems like he was eliminated by the descendants of Ancient Sage Zi Yuan too...”

A few more people walked over and joined in the conversation.

Watching as a huge crowd of similar ill-fated individuals gathered around him, Shang Wu’s lips twitched wildly.

It was just an instant, but the name ‘Fan Xiaofeng’ had already rallied more than forty people over. Shockingly, they were all eliminated by Fan Xiaofeng single-handedly!

Was there some kind of mistake here?

How could that fellow possibly not sustain any injuries or run out of zhenqi when he had fought with so many opponents already?

“There’s no need to feel down. Come, follow me!” a young man walked up to Shang Wu and consoled.

“Un!”

Recognizing the person standing before him to be Bo Xu from the lineage of Ancient Sage Zi Xu, Shang Wu nodded slightly before following behind the young man.

Bo Xu brought Shang Wu out of the crowd to another group of eliminated young men and said, “It’s a pleasure to meet all of you. We were eliminated by the descendants of Ancient Sage Zi Chi. May I know if...”

“Ah, what a coincidence! We were eliminated by the descendants of Ancient Sage Zi Chi too!”

“Me too!”

“Wow, we are comrades of the same plight... We really should get along well!”

A commotion flared up, and it took only an instant for the group to expand to dozens of people.

After which, Bo Xu brought Shang Wu away to approach yet another group, but before they could begin speaking, the other

party had already begun speaking, “You are eliminated by Fan Xiaofeng too, right? It’s the same for us too!”

“...” Shang Wu.

At this moment, he really had no idea what to make of this peculiar situation.

“Everything, hear us! We wish to establish a ‘Fellowship of Examinees Eliminated by the Descendants of Ancient Sage Zi Chi’. Is there anyone who wishes to join us?” a voice echoed across the crowd.

“I wish to register!”

“Me too, me too!”

...

The invitation was met with popular response and voices of approval rippled across the crowd.

“...”

It was in this instant that Shang Wu suddenly felt that it wasn’t a humiliation that he was eliminated by the weaker Fan Xiaofeng. Instead, it felt like a symbol of honor, a mark that solidarity amongst him and the others!

...

“That’s all?”

Fan Xiaoxing stared at the impassive Fan Xiaofeng as he felt as if his notion of what ‘being powerful’ meant had just been refreshed.

If he had been the one who had fought against these twelve opponents, it was likely that he wouldn’t have even gotten a chance to flee. Yet, Fan Xiaofeng, who was at the same cultivation realm as him, actually defeated all of them with ease...

Just what in the world had the other party been through over the past hour for such a massive change to happen to him?

On the other hand, paying no heed to Fan Xiaoxing’s incredulity, Fan Xiaofeng walked up to Zhang Xuan and

asked, “So... how did I do this time around?”

His eyes reflected deep nervousness reminiscent of a student facing his teacher after forgetting to complete his holiday assignment.

“How did you do?” Zhang Xuan’s eyes were filled with boredom as he waved his hands perfunctorily, “It’s so-so!”

He couldn’t even bother to comment on Fan Xiaofeng’s performance anymore.

After all of the pointers he had given and the battles that the other party had been through, this was all the other party could do? It was fortunate that he was adopting a persona at the moment or else he would have really died from embarrassment!

All of the disciples whom he, Zhang Xuan, had taught eventually became powerhouses who possessed extraordinary battle sense. However, the one standing before him was truly...

It was just a moment ago that he thought that the descendants of the Hundred Schools of Philosophers possessed superior intelligence, capable of comprehending and assimilating new knowledge swiftly... Yet, it was as if Fan Xiaofeng’s intelligence had turned against him! He was focusing too much of the trivialities that he was losing sight of what was important, causing his movements to lack spirit!

“I... I was wrong! I know that I didn’t do well for the earlier battle...” Sensing Zhang Xuan disappointment, Fan Xiaofeng hurriedly lowered his head and apologized with a trembling voice.

His accomplishments were all built upon the other party’s pointers. If the other party was no longer willing to teach him anymore, how was he going to climb to greater heights?

At the same time, Fan Xiaoxing clutched his hair as this seemingly ridiculous scene unfolded before his eyes. He found himself unable to catch up with the thought process of the other two at all!

“Can this even be called ‘didn’t do well’?” Zhang Xuan snapped. “Fine, I guess I’ll give you some leeway for your self-awareness! Earlier, for the third move that you executed after charging into the crowd, you could have used the Coupled Arm Fist to eliminate that red-robed young man with the least amount of effort. Why did you switch to the Startling Fronthand to attack that blue-robed young lady at the right instead? Do you know that you have wasted three whole moves due to the choice you have made? Think of the time you have wasted with that! If they had recovered during that period of time, you would have been dead before you even knew it! Also, for the kick earlier, you could have dodged it in advance too. Why did you catch it instead? Are you trying to show off that you are capable of defending yourself, or are you trying to flaunt the resilience of your scrawny body...”

As Zhang Xuan spoke, his fury seemed to build up even more and more, such that he ended up pointing out eight flaws in a single breath. Furthermore, every single one of these flaws pointed out were spot-on in the analysis.

“I...” Fan Xiaofeng was rendered speechless by the questions.

Everything had happened so quickly earlier, such that Fan Xiaofeng didn’t think that Fan Xiaoxu would have been able to remember every move and every flaw so clearly.

He was initially proud that he had managed to eliminate twelve people at once, but those words jolted him back to reality. He knew that he still had a long way to go before reaching the top. There was no pride in just being able to defeat weaklings!

Humility and low profile; that was the way to go!

“Xiaofeng was already so formidable in the battle, but Xiaoxu was still able to point out so many flaws in his movements. That eye of discernment is truly...” Fan Xiaoxing gulped down a mouthful of saliva.

It was at this instant that he felt that he had gotten a glimpse into the reason why Fan Xiaofeng was able to make such a huge progress within a short hour...

It turned out that everything was Fan Xiaoxu's credit!

“Xiaoxu, can you teach me as well? I wish to become as powerful as Xiaofeng too...” Unable to stand it any longer, Fan Xiaoxing walked up to Zhang Xuan and clasped his fist earnestly, putting down the pride that he had shown previously.

# 1881 The Descendant of Ancient Sage Zi Lu

Zhong Qing was a descendant of Ancient Sage Zi Lu. He was the person-in-charge for conducting this year's entrance examination for the Great Phrontistry of Confucianism. He was also the middle-aged man who had read the rules in the sky earlier prior to the commencement of the examination.

Unlike the other teachers, he returned back to his room after activating the formation surrounding the mountain. He didn't wait at the elimination region for the revelation of the results.

It was just a freshman selection examination; it would do for him to just know the final results. Such a trivial event was not worth his constant attention.

He stood before a table, dabbed a brush with ink, and began writing on a sheet of paper. The scent of ink swiftly suffused the room.

His handwriting was neat, and the characters he wrote carried deep conceptions behind them. With just a glance, one could feel the serene state he was in.

Hu!

A figure suddenly appeared in the room. Seeing that the middle-aged man was leisurely writing calligraphy, the figure's eyebrows shot up as he exclaimed, "Brother Zhong, what are you doing here? You need to head over to the examination venue to take a look. There's something weird going on with the examination..."

If Zhang Xuan was here, he would surely be able to recognize the figure who had just appeared in the room... Nangong Yuanfeng!

"Yuanfeng, you are panicking once again. I have always told you that you need to calm your mind, but you just wouldn't listen. It's just an examination amongst the younglings, what's

there to panic about? If you don't try to correct that problem of yours, you'll never be able to advance your cultivation any further than it is!"

Even without raising his head, Zhong Qing seemed to still be able to recognize the identity of the person standing before him. As his brush continued moving on the paper elegantly, he replied with a calm voice.

"Brother Zhong, I appreciate your kind advice, but... this isn't the moment to be calm at all! The elimination examination has already descended into a huge mess!" Nangong Yuanfeng exclaimed anxiously.

"A huge mess? What kind of mess is it?" Zhong Qing asked calmly as he continued writing his calligraphy with cadence.

"The examinees are being eliminated too quickly in large numbers! I fear that the examination might end before the six hours are up... Furthermore, a lot of the examinees whom we have thought well of have all been eliminated! It's unlikely that those who remain at the end of the examination would be really the strongest hundred of the examinees..."

Nangong Yuanfeng explained worriedly.

He was on the scene earlier, so he saw everything clearly.

Even a top-notch genius like Yan Yixiao ended up being eliminated too. The other experts whom they had been keeping a special eye on also ended up failing terribly too...

And the reason was solely because they had encountered the descendants of Ancient Sage Zi Chi!

By this point, it had almost become an unspoken rule of the examination that anyone who encountered Ancient Sage Zi Chi's descendants would be eliminated! At this rate, the examination would no longer be a test of strength but a complete test of luck—it would bank solely on whether one was lucky enough to avoid Ancient Sage Zi Chi's descendants throughout the entire examination!

For a solemn examination to be reduced to such a farce, how could he possibly not panic?

“Oh? Isn’t this for the better?” Zhong Qing didn’t appear to be surprised to hear the news at all. He dabbed his brush in ink once more and began writing another character before continuing on with a light chuckle, “The talents of the descendants of the Hundred Schools of Philosophers don’t vary too much from one another. All we want is to narrow down the numbers to a hundred of them. As for who they are, that’s of secondary concern. No matter how powerful they are at the moment, they are bound to achieve great things after undergoing the tutelage of the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism!”

“Well, I guess that your words make sense too...” Seeing how calm Zhong Qing was, Nangong Yuanfeng’s worries seemed to slowly dispel as well.

It was true that they were interested in just narrowing down the numbers to a hundred examinees... As for who the examinees were, that was not of too much importance.

The elimination examination was not completely fair, but ultimately, everything could be traced back to the limitations of their strength. If one had neither the strength nor the means to survive until the end, they only had themselves to blame for.

“While what you say do make sense, the issue is that most of the examinees have been eliminated by the same person, and their numbers are still growing. Furthermore, it seems like they have formed some kind of weird fellowship...” Nangong Yuanfeng said.

“They were eliminated by the same person? Who is it? Yan Yixiao? Or is it Duan Muxiao?” Zhong Qing asked.

“That’s not it. They are all eliminated by a descendant of Ancient Sage Zi Chi,” Nangong Yuanfeng replied.

“A descendant of Ancient Sage Zi Chi?” Not expecting to hear such an answer, Zhong Qing was visibly stunned for a moment. “You are referring to Fan Xiaoxu, Fan Xiaofeng, and Fan Xiaoxing, right?”

He had browsed through the name list submitted by the various clans, and he remembered the names of every single

participating examinee.

“That’s right,” Nangong Yuanfeng replied affirmatively.

“The descendants of Ancient Sage Zi Chi have never performed spectacularly well in examinations before. The fact that they are able to rise to the top in the examination shows that they must have put in a lot of hard work. It’s fine, leave them to do whatever they want. Everyone has their own limits, and just because they are leading at the moment doesn’t mean that they will be able to remain at the top until the end. As invigilators, our role is to observe and assess. There’s no need for us to get involved!” Zhong Qing replied calmly as he continued writing on the paper.

At this rate, it seemed like he would finish his calligraphy piece soon enough.

“Since you have said so, I guess there’s nothing else I can say...” Seeing how calm Zhong Qing was, Nangong Yuanfeng shrugged nonchalantly. He was just about to turn around and leave when he suddenly recalled a matter, “Oh, I forgot to tell you. The chief of the Fellowship of Examinees Eliminated by the Descendants of Ancient Sage Zi Chi seems to your grandson, Zhong Zixun!”

Hula!

The brush gorged out a pitch-black stroke on the white paper as Zhong Qing raised his head in astonishment.

He knew that his grandson had participated in the examination too, and he thought that his grandson would survive till the very end. Yet... he became the chief of some kind of eliminated examinees’ fellowship? What the heck did that mean?

“Hold on for a moment. You are telling me that Zixun has been eliminated?” Even though Zhong Qing dared not to believe what he was hearing, he still forcefully maintained his patient and calm attitude.

“Indeed. He was extremely proud that he has been eliminated early, and the fact that he serves as one of the chiefs of the

organization means that everyone heeds his words!” Nangong Yuanfeng said.

“That bastard!” Zhong Qing clenched his fists tightly.

How in the world did that wastrel even appear in their lineage?

Not only was he not embarrassed of being eliminated, he even viewed it as an honor...

He really had to teach that fellow a good lesson!

“Forget it, just leave him be!” Taking a deep breath, Zhong Qing calmed down from his rage before shaking his head. “In any case, I have eight of my descendants participating in the examination. It’s only because I have spoiled Zhong Zixun ever since he was young that he acted so inappropriately. Such a thing wouldn’t happen with the others...”

“The others?” Nangong Yuanfeng fell silent. There was a brief moment of silence before he asked, “Are you referring to Zhong Zifeng, Zhong Ziyu, Zhong Zixuan, and the others?”

Zhong Qing nodded, “They should be far more reliable than Zhong Zixun that wastrel...”

“Ah, they have also been eliminated as well. They are the first group to join the fellowship. If not for their vote, how could Zhong Zixun possibly have become the chief?”

Speaking up to this point, Nangong Yuanfeng couldn’t help but remark, “I must say that those from your lineage are truly united as one. While others are still grieving over their defeat, those from your lineage are already trying to form a fellowship. I must say that I’m truly awed by how calmly they are taking their defeat...”

Kacha!

There was a crisp echo as the brush in Zhong Qing’s hand was snapped into two. With a face as green as a lush grassfield, Zhong Qing spat, “Those bunch of bastards. I’ll massacre them right now!”

Hu!

Zhong Qing’s silhouette vanished from the room in an instant.

“Ah...” Seeing how the cool and collected man from a moment ago had erupted in rage, Nangong Yuanfeng scratched his head speechlessly.

In the end, everything that Zhong Qing said about remaining calm was just because the issue didn't concern him. As soon as his clan members were involved, he still ended up erupting as if there was no tomorrow...

But that being said, he had to admit that Fan Xiaoxu, Fan Xiaofeng, and Fan Xiaoxing were three really incredible people. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

To actually eliminate the eight examinees from Ancient Sage Zi Lu's lineage all at once, they sure were merciless!

And that wasn't just all. It seemed like they didn't care whoever was backing the examinees as all. Anyone who encountered them would be eliminated in an instant—it was as if the word mercy had never crossed their minds at all!

Given how many people they had offended within this short period of time, weren't they afraid that others would make things difficult for them once they enter the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism?

One must know that while the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism was built with the combined efforts of the 72 Sages, and the descendants of the 72 Sages all had a hand in running the organization, it didn't mean that there was an equal distribution of power amongst all of the clans.

Putting everything aside, the lineage of Ancient Sage Zi Lu, which Zhong Qing was a part of, had a lot of say in the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism due to the huge number of experts under their command.

To let everything loose without caring about the consequences... It might be exhilarating at that moment, but all of the complications would swiftly come in afterward.

But again, those three didn't seem like they would simply allow themselves to be wronged. Well, it seemed like the Great

Phrontistery of Confucianism would become very lively in the near future!

# 1882 Clearing the Examination

Peng peng peng peng!

After knocking down and eliminating more than a dozen examinees at once, Fan Xiaoxing's eyes reddened in excitement.

It had been less than two hours since he started learning from Xiaoxu, but he had already single-handedly eliminated at least three hundred examinees!

Such a rate of improvement was something that he would never have dared imagine possible! For the longest time, he had thought of cultivation to be an extremely slow process where one gradually accrued power, but such a conception had been completely shattered in his mind!

Yet, despite his massive improvement, he was still a long way from matching Fan Xiaofeng. The latter had eliminated at least seven hundred people thus far!

As for Xiaoxu, he had been walking along with them, but he did not make a move at all. However, as soon as the two of them made the slightest mistake, they would be treated to a combo of dagger-like glares from behind and frighteningly cold criticisms. It was due to this that they were able to improve so swiftly within such a short period of time.

“That’s more like it. Temper yourselves a little more and stabilize your cultivation. You should be able to achieve a breakthrough soon enough...”

After those two defeated the final wave of enemies, Zhang Xuan finally nodded with a slight hint of approval.

While those two were a little dimwitted, through his unyielding perseverance, he still managed to induce a significant rise in their abilities.

Even after this examination, the two of them would still benefit from the elevation in their state of mind and advancement in their fighting prowess. Of course, as for how far they would go in the future, that would not be any of his business.

“There are only a hundred people left on the mountain. I hereby announce that the examination has prematurely ended!”

Along with that resounding voice, the crowd felt a surge of energy wrapping around them, and the next moment, they were teleported to a square in front of the mountain.

Zhang Xuan looked around him and noticed that there was exactly one hundred people in the square. However, other than the three of them, everyone seemed to have been inflicted with some kind of energy and looked rather unkempt.

Even though most of those people looked ordinary, the fact that they could survive to the end among two thousand other competitors meant that they likely possessed extraordinary means. Of course, more importantly, they had also had the fortune of not encountering the three of them!

“First and foremost, I would like to extend my congratulations to all of you for officially being recruited into the Great Phrontistry of Confucianism as this year’s batch of students!” Zhong Qing announced grandly.

As he spoke, his eyes inconspicuously fell on Zhang Xuan and the others, and his cheeks twitched a little. He felt an urge to rush forward to pummel them, but he eventually held himself back.

The fact that his descendants had been eliminated by them only meant that they were still lacking. He would not abandon his honor just to make things difficult for them.

Taking a deep breath, Zhong Qing continued on, “After this, you will each exchange your jade token for a storage ring. Within the storage is the route and method to get to the Great Phrontistry of Confucianism, an Introspective Convalescence realm cultivation technique, and cultivation resources. You

have three days to enter the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism with your own abilities. Only if you succeed will you become full-fledged students of the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism.

“I know that this test won’t be too difficult for you, but allow me to give you some words of advice in advance. The earlier you get to the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism, the higher your chances of picking out a good teacher. Naturally, it goes without saying that it will pave the way for your future cultivation!”

Similar to other academies, mentorship in the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism was a mutual relationship. While the students were allowed to choose their teachers, the teachers were allowed to choose their students.

The number of students that each teacher could take on was limited, so those who entered earlier would have a better chance of catching the eye of the teachers they wanted. At the same time, the resources that they were entitled to would be different as well.

“Alright! Submit your jade tokens now!”

Shortly after those words were spoken, the jade token pinned on everyone’s chest rose into the air, and a hundred storage rings flew into everyone’s hands simultaneously.

Zhang Xuan placed his finger lightly on the ring, and the items that were inside swiftly appeared in his mind.

Just as he had been told, there was an Introspective Convalescence realm cultivation technique manual inside. Similar to how there was no common cultivation technique that all cultivators could practice for this realm, the cultivation technique manual that was in the storage ring only pointed out a general direction. Nevertheless, with such a manual in hand, pushing for a breakthrough would be much easier.

Other than the cultivation technique manual, there was a grade-9 Strength Shaping Pill.

It had the effects of refining one’s body and zhenqi once more, and the process simulated the effects of a breakthrough to the

Introspective Convalescence realm. As such, it could boost one's chances of achieving a breakthrough by around ten percent.

Last but not least, there was a jade token inside.

Zhang Xuan took out the jade token and touched it lightly, but he did not feel anything at all.

Seeing Zhang Xuan's actions, Fan Xiaofeng quickly explained, "There's a formation on the jade token. If we wish to see what is inside, we'll have to first decipher the formation. This is one of the examinations of the Great Phrontistry of Confucianism!"

"It's also an examination? What about those who don't specialize in formations?" Zhang Xuan asked.

There could be those who were not too familiar with formations among the crowd, and imposing such an examination on them seemed rather unfair. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

"The formation on the jade token isn't too complicated, so familiarity with formations won't help too much. The difficulty lies mainly in how intricate it is. It requires one to have precise control of one's zhenqi to decipher it carefully. While it's an examination, it's also a warning to us as well that we mustn't just focus on building up our zhenqi, and that the precision of control is extremely important as well!" Fan Xiaofeng said.

Hearing those words, Zhang Xuan nodded slightly.

Fan Xiaofeng and Fan Xiaoxing's cultivation had yet to advance ever since they entered the mountain, but their fighting prowess had increased significantly, allowing them to easily defeat opponents after opponents. The main reason for that was that they had learned how to control and maneuver their strength efficiently and effectively.

By not making the slightest useless movement and striking accurately at any openings, it was inevitable that their fighting prowess would advance so much.

Swiftly scanning through the jade token, Zhang Xuan saw numerous inscriptions carved densely on it. It seemed like he would have to control his zhenqi to an extremely fine degree in order to decipher the inscription.

While such a feat might pose a challenge to other examinees, it was a walk in the park for him. He lightly waved his hand over the jade token.

Hula!

The seal immediately opened, and the content within flowed into his mind.

It was the exact location of the Great Phrontistry of Confucianism and the method to entering it.

Just as he had expected, the Great Phrontistry of Confucianism was not located in the vicinity but amid a desert roughly ten thousand li away. In order to reach the destination, he would have to follow a specific path marked out on the jade token.

“Alright, you may start deciphering the formation on the jade token now!”

Seeing that everyone had begun taking out the jade tokens in the storage ring, Zhong Qing shot a sweeping glance across the surroundings before saying, “In the history of the Great Phrontistry of Confucianism, the fastest record for deciphering the seal is six hours. In the past hundred years, the only one who has come close to this record is the descendant of Kong shi, Kong Shiyao, with a record of seven hours. After that would be the descendant of Ancient Sage Zi Yuan, Yan Xue, with a record of eight hours. For the rest of you, it would be a formidable feat as long as you are able to decipher the seal within a single day!”

While the formation on the jade token seemed simple, it was far more troublesome than it looked. Without a calm mind and sharp control of zhenqi, it would be nigh impossible to pull it off.

Even the top genius of the Great Phrontistry of Confucianism had taken a total of seven hours to decipher it!

“Also, allow me to give you some words of advice! Hastiness and impatience will get you nowhere. If you can’t complete this task within three days, even if you have cleared the elimination examination, you won’t be recognized as an official student of the Great Phrontistry of Confucianism!” Zhong Qing warned before waving his hand lightly.

Hula!

A mirror-like barrier appeared in front before everyone’s eyes.

“This is a unique Teleportation Formation. As long as you have deciphered the seal on the jade token, you will be drawn into it. Following which, you just have to follow the pathway recorded on the jade token to get into the Great Phrontistry of Confucianism. Alright, you all should get to deciphering the seal now! I would like to see what the fastest record for your batch is...” Zhong Qing said.

But halfway through his words, he saw a ripple appearing on the mirror-like barrier.

A figure slowly rose into the air before diving right into the barrier.

“What? Has he... deciphered the formation already?”

For a long moment, the surroundings were overwhelmed by silence.

# 1883 Zhong Qing's Suspicious

“This...” Zhang Xuan scratched his head in embarrassment.

It was true that he had deciphered the jade token, but given his low-profile character, he would have waited patiently for Fan Xiaoxing and Fan Xiaofeng to complete the test before heading over to the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism. Unfortunately, he could not have expected the other party to actually whip out a barrier that would suck in anyone who had deciphered the formation!

In a moment of carelessness, he actually ended up being sucked in!

Turning around to look at the countless berserk faces behind him, Zhang Xuan shook his head helplessly and said in encouragement, “Well... Everyone, try your best! I'll be going on ahead to see what's on the other side!”

“Going on ahead? More like he has already crossed the finish line before we have even gotten ready at the starting point!”

“Kong Shiyao took a total of seven hours, but he... That probably wasn't even a single breath, right?”

“Is it possible that his jade token is spoiled?”

“You are thinking too much. How could the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism possibly make such a mediocre mistake? That being said, it's really ridiculous for anyone to clear a seal within just a single breath... Is he still human?”

...

A huge uproar erupted in the area.

It was just a moment earlier that Scholastic Master Zhong Qing had said that even the fastest record was six hours, but he had actually finished it in a single breath. If so, did that not mean that even the most talented genius in the entire history of

the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism could not even match up to a twenty thousandth of that young man?

It was not just the examinees who were causing a huge ruckus. Zhong Qing, Nangong Yuanfeng, and the other invigilators were in a completely flustered state as well.

They had thought that it would already be a huge blessing if any one of the examinees was able to make it to the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism within a single day. But who could have known that they would encounter this monster?

“Were Zhong Zixun and the others eliminated by that young man?” Zhong Qing asked.

“Hmm, that isn’t entirely it,” Nangong Yuanfeng said with a frown. “The ones who eliminated Zhong Zixun and the others were Fan Xiaofeng and Fan Xiaoxing, but he was guiding them by the side too...”

“His guidance actually allowed those two to eliminate all eight examinees from my lineage...” Zhong Qing felt a tightness in his throat as he struggled to come to terms with what he had just seen.

While others might have been oblivious to the prowess of those eight juniors of his, he knew that they were a force that could not be underestimated in the examination. If they had not been eliminated by Fan Xiaoxing and Fan Xiaofeng, there was a good chance that they would have become the dark horse of the examination.

Those eight had specially undergone a rigorous training regimen in order to clear the examination, and even if they had encountered Yan Yixiao, there was a good chance that they would have been able to get away safely. Yet, all of them had ended up being eliminated just like that.

Furthermore, it was one thing if that young man had made a move himself—there was no shortage of monstrously overpowered individuals in the history of the Hundred Schools of Philosophers—but he had actually empowered others to do so through his guidance. Not even Zhong Qing himself would be capable of pulling off something like that!

A middle-aged man walked over and asked, "Shall we apprehend him temporarily to check his jade token?"

"There's no need for that. The fact that he's been absorbed by the barrier means that he truly wields the ability to decipher the formation. Besides, the other teachers are waiting beyond the barrier, and they should have already noticed the pulsations in the barrier. It's too late to stop him now..." Zhong Qing shook his head before turning his gaze to Fan Xiaoxing and Fan Xiaofeng.

It was a gaze filled with intrigue.

Ancient Sage Zi Chi's lineage had always been lagging behind the others... How did they suddenly become so formidable?

Harboring such doubts, Zhong Qing leaped forth and appeared right before Fan Xiaoxing and Fan Xiaofeng. With a wave of his hand, he said, "In total, the two of you have eliminated more than half of the examinees. I would like to see if you really wield the extraordinary capabilities that you have displayed through your results in the examination."

Fan Xiaofeng and Fan Xiaoxing clasped their fists and replied, "How do you wish to test our strength?"

If they had not gone through Zhang Xuan's rigorous training, they would have already been in utter panic. It was apparent that Zhong Qing was suspicious of them cheating, and the implications could be severe if they were found guilty of it.

However, the elimination examination had caused a huge change in their state of mind. They were much more confident than before, such that they did not feel apprehensive even when standing before Scholastic Masters.

"I have a really simple suggestion. I'll suppress my cultivation down to your level, and the two of you can come at me together. If you are able to defeat me, it'll prove that you do possess capabilities far beyond those of your peers," Zhong Qing explained calmly.

As a Sempiternal realm consummation expert, even if he did suppress his cultivation, his eye of discernment and battle experience far surpassed those of the two youths standing

before him. No matter how powerful those two youths were, they would stand no chance against him if they did not possess any extraordinary capabilities.

Hearing those words, Fan Xiaoxing and Fan Xiaofeng looked at one another and nodded resolutely before replying in unison, “Very well, we accept your challenge!”

They swiftly cleared the surroundings before Zhong Qing began suppressing his aura down to Saint 9-dan. Despite his lowered cultivation, he still emanated an unfathomable aura that made others dare not challenge his authority.

“I’ll allow the two of you to make the first move!” Zhong Qing beckoned with a single hand, and he stood calmly on the spot.

No matter what, he was still a Great Sage expert who had lived for several centuries. Even though he had challenged Fan Xiaoxing and Fan Xiaofeng to a battle in hopes of clearing up his doubts, he had no intention of taking advantage of them.

“Since you have said so, we won’t stand on ceremony!”

Fan Xiaofeng and Fan Xiaoxing drove their zhenqi to the peak and roared.

Of the thousand examinees that they had eliminated, there were some who had been an entire realm stronger than them. Challenging such powerful enemies had refined their sense of danger and grasp over the flow of battle. They could tell that even with his suppressed cultivation, the middle-aged man standing before them would not be an easy opponent.

Thus, they chose to go all out right from the start.

Hula!

So, the two of them bolted forward one after another, and one of them aimed for the chest whereas the other aimed for the back.

Noting the exceptional speed of the two and the decisiveness of their moves, Zhong Qing nodded in approval. “Not too shabby!”

It was no wonder they had been able to eliminate so many people in the examination, such that even his juniors had ended up falling victim to them. Their fighting prowess was indeed not to be underestimated.

Putting everything aside, just the fact that they were able to empty their movements of hesitation was already an incredibly remarkable feat. It was a subconscious reflex to falter before powerful enemies and doubt one's decisions, and this was a problem that even top cultivators faced.

Such hesitation might not appear to be much at first glance, but in an intense battle, granting the opponent an additional split second to react could easily spell the difference between life and death.

However... if that was all they had, they would never be able to defeat him!

This was because their intentions and maneuvers were utterly lacking in complexity. It was as if they were standing naked before him!

He could even foresee what they would do several steps ahead! To defeat such opponents, all it would take him was one good move!

With a deep sigh, he raised his two palms and thrust them downward, intending to knock the two of them back simultaneously so as to let them know the gap between them.

However, before his palms could even strike, the duo bolting in his direction suddenly swerved and flanked his sides. Using the incredible momentum of their movements, they sent out a left punch and a right punch simultaneously to the both sides of his face.

“What?” Zhong Qing narrowed his eyes in astonishment.

In a usual battle, should they not have started with minor movements to test out their opponent before leaping in for a decisive attack to overwhelm him in an instant?

They had already been in an advantageous position earlier, so why would they change their moves all of a sudden?

Furthermore, was it really fine to aim the attacks at the face of an elder like that?

“Humph!” With a cold snort, Zhong Qing swiftly redirected his palms to block the trajectory of the punches from the duo. After which, he was just about to move in to teach those two a good lesson on respecting their elders when he suddenly felt a sharp pain assaulting his chest and crotch.

Lowering his head, he found that Fan Xiaoxing’s leg had struck his chest whereas Fan Xiaofeng’s foot had shot up his crotch.

“Ahhh!” With a piercing cry of agony, Zhong Qing flew over and collapsed onto the ground. His body scrunched up like a cooked prawn.

Even though he was a Sempiternal realm consummation cultivator, it did not mean that he had cultivated his body equally throughout. As such, he still shared the common weakness that all men faced. To be struck with such a decisive kick, it was a huge blessing that they had not cracked on the spot!

However, as if out of fear that their attack would not work, those two had actually put everything they had into the previous attack, such that the excruciating pain that assaulted him left even someone of Zhong Qing’s caliber sweating profusely.

Kacha! Kacha!

He had to swiftly release the seal on his zhenqi and recover to his Sempiternal realm consummation before he was able to alleviate the injuries. Just as he was about to talk, he heard the hushed whisperings of those two not too far away.

“Is it just me, or does he seem really weak?”

“Could he just be going easy on us? That can’t be the true strength of a Scholastic Master, right?”

Those words were the earnest thoughts of the confused Fan Xiaoxing and Fan Xiaofeng.

All along, the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism had been the ultimate goal that they had envisioned in their minds, so they could have never imagined that they would actually be able to incapacitate one of the almighty Scholastic Masters with just a simple kick.

It was as if the heroes whom they had worshipped since they were young had turned out to be all talk!

“Weak? Going easy?” Zhong Qing felt a surge of blood gargling within his mouth, and he completely lost his cool.

# 1884 The Copper Gong

Zhong Qing had always valued the cultivation of character and state of mind. Calligraphy was the art of sharpening one's concentration and self-control, so he would often spend his free time with a brush in hand. Due to his devotion to the art, the calligraphy works that he produced were of exceptional quality, such that many experts would specially pay him a visit to request his pieces so as to find inner peace within them.

Given his character and state of mind, an ordinary examination among the younger generation should not have fazed him in the least. But... contrary to his expectations, all eight examinees in his lineage, including his own grandson, had actually been eliminated in the examination! This had shaken him a little, so he wanted to challenge the two youths responsible for it to test their abilities.

However, who could have known that a reputed Scholastic Master like him would end up being looked upon in disdain? Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

Weak?

Weak your head!

How in the world am I weak?

Zhong Qing was overflowing with rage, but when he thought about the earlier battle, he found himself unable to find the words to refute their claims.

While those two young men did not use a collaborative formation, their coordination was impeccable. Despite being a Sempiternal realm consummation expert, he had been too complacent and ended up falling for their feint, which had eventually led to his downfall.

Zhong Qing swallowed the blood swirling in his mouth and took in a deep breath before turning to the two young men. "Is this what Fan Xiaoxu has taught you?"

He had never seen these two young men in person before, but he had read their records. Given their track record, they should not have been so formidable in battle.

“That’s right!” Fan Xiaofeng and Fan Xiaoxing nodded in response.

In truth, they were also a little surprised by the outcome of the battle. They had thought that a Scholastic Master would be an extremely difficult foe to deal with even if his cultivation was suppressed, but as soon as they used Fan Xiaoxu’s battle insights, everything ended so quickly that even they were caught off guard.

It was as if the other party was nothing more than a weak little chicklet!

Did that not mean that as long as they continued working hard on their fighting skills, they would really be able to become invincible among their peers?

“Then, do you know who imparted these moves to him?” Zhong Qing asked.

“He comprehended them himself!” Fan Xiaofeng replied.

He had asked Fan Xiaoxu that question during the examination, and the other party had replied that these techniques had come out from sudden bouts of inspiration.

“He comprehended them himself? If that’s really the case, his talent is really...” Zhong Qing remarked as his breathing hastened slightly. “Yuanfeng, I need you to help deal with the issues here for the time being. I’ll be making a trip back to the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism to see who Fan Xiaoxu chooses to be his teacher!”

Unable to endure his curiosity, Zhong Qing quickly turned around and left.

No matter who Fan Xiaoxu chose to be his teacher, he would have to make sure to keep on good terms with that person. As long as Fan Xiaoxu did not die a premature death, it was only a matter of time before he rose to the top echelon of the Hundred Schools of Philosophers!

...

Oblivious to the fact that Zhong Qing had been pummeled by Fan Xiaofeng and Fan Xiaoxing, Zhang Xuan was currently navigating his way through a desert according to the directions given on the jade token.

To be honest, he wanted to maintain a low profile. However, it was as if the entire world was denying him of his efforts!

As the first one to reach the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism in record time, there was no way he would be able to blend in with the crowd anymore.

However, this should not pose too much of a problem. As long as his identity as an outsider was not revealed, he would be able to leave as soon as he obtained what he wanted without stirring up too huge a commotion.

Hu!

After flying for some time, a glimmering ray of light suddenly appeared in the distance. Advancing toward the light, Zhang Xuan soon noticed the presence of a humongous folded space.

Shockingly, this folded space was even more stable than the Kunxu Domain itself, such that it almost felt as if he was returning to the Master Teacher Continent. The concentration of spiritual energy was also extremely high, comparable to that of a typical grade-9 Spirit Gathering Formation.

As soon as he stepped into the folded space, his acupoints swiftly opened and began greedily absorbing the spiritual energy.

There were innumerable majestic buildings towering all around. They were designed in a traditional architectural style, as if they had been built tens of thousands of years ago.

“So, this is my destination...”

Knowing that he had arrived at the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism, Zhang Xuan lowered himself to the ground. However, before he could land, he suddenly saw a streak of light hurtling in his direction.

However, this streak of light did not harness any aggressive intent. It stopped right before Zhang Xuan, revealing its true form to be a gigantic copper gong. It took its position beneath Zhang Xuan's feet before exerting a powerful force against him, seemingly trying to prevent him from landing on the ground.

"Is this a trial as well?" Zhang Xuan frowned.

The Great Phrontistery of Confucianism was right beneath him, but a copper gong was trying to push him away. It was apparent that this was something like a trial he had to undergo in order to officially be inaugurated as a student of the academy.

However, after all that he had been through thus far, what would a mere copper gong count as?

Shaking the excessive thoughts out of his mind, Zhang Xuan stomped his feet on the ground and exerted his might through the soles of his feet.

Hu!

Overpowered by Zhang Xuan's stomp, the copper gong was sent flying back to the ground.

With a satisfied smile, Zhang Xuan swiftly descended to the ground.

...

A group of middle-aged folks were standing in a row next to the entrance of the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism. They were mixed in gender, but their clothes resembled those worn by Nangong Yuanfeng.

It was clear with a glance that they were the Scholastic Masters of the academy.

"It'll take at least one day for the examinees to reach here after the examination. Don't you think you are being a little too anxious by coming over right now?" a middle-aged lady asked with an unreadable smile.

Another middle-aged man glanced at her and replied, "I do admit that we are a little anxious, but aren't you the same? If

you aren't anxious, why have you come so early on?"

"Well, I'm just here to see if there are any exceptional geniuses in this batch..." The middle-aged lady harrumphed slightly before turning her head away. "Mi Xuan, why did you bring the copper gong here?"

The crowd turned around and saw a middle-aged man walking over with a massive copper gong above his head. It was twirling continuously, sheltering the middle-aged man from the sun rays.

The copper gong was likely the artifact that Mi Xuan had just forged. However, instead of staying at home to carefully study its purposes, why in the world was he bringing trouble to them instead?

"Haha, you should also know that my talent lies in strength. I brought this copper gong here to test the new students!" Mi Xuan laughed heartily.

"Test the new students?" The middle-aged woman frowned. "That gong of yours is ridiculously heavy. You aren't thinking of using it to smash our freshmen to death, are you?"

"Of course not!" Mi Xuan refuted as a mysterious smile crept onto his face. "However, I can use the copper gong to push the examinees back. As long as an examinee is able to persevere for ten seconds against my copper gong, they'll be qualified to become my student and inherit my skills..."

"Ten seconds? Have you not awoken from your dreams yet?"

Hearing those words, the crowd took in a sharp intake of breath.

With Mi Xuan's monstrous strength and the copper gong's heavy weight, even they would have trouble coping with the two simultaneously, let alone the Saint 9-dan to Great Sage 1-dan examinees!

Weng!

Before they could finish their words, there was a slight buzz in the air as a glimmer of light flared in the sky.

“An examinee has already arrived at the seal? But... didn't the examination start not too long ago?”

The crowd was stunned.

They had expected to wait up to a day at least, but the wait turned out to be shorter than expected.

“To be able to decipher the formation so quickly, that person must be pretty strong. He will be a good sample for me test the prowess of my copper gong on!” Mi Xuan chuckled softly as he leaped into the sky.

The gigantic copper gong swiftly flew toward the glimmer of light in the sky, blocking off the entire sun in the blink of an eye.

Hong long!

But before it could reach its target, a resounding reverberation echoed in the air, and the copper gong suddenly flew back to the ground.

Not expecting the copper gong to fly back all of a sudden, Mi Xuan narrowed his eyes in alarm. He quickly leaped into the sky to support the copper gong with his strength, but to his horror, it felt as if the weight of the world was pushing the copper gong down to the ground. It was a force far exceeding what he could withstand!

“Quick, help me!” Mi Xuan bellowed anxiously as his body was swiftly pushed back to the ground.

Realizing the severity of the matter, the other Scholastic Masters quickly rushed into the air to support the copper gong.

Pu! Pu! Pu!

However, as soon as they came into contact with the copper gong, the crushing might pushing them down immediately jolted their bodies, causing fresh blood to spurt from their mouths.

Putong! Putong!

Just like that, the entire group of Scholastic Masters was forcefully pushed to the ground like a bunch of dumplings.

Boom!

The copper gong finally landed on the ground with a reverberating metallic gong, and the Scholastic Masters were pinned underneath, completely disappearing from view.

Hu!

Barely after all of this happened, a figure descended from the sky and scanned his surroundings with a frown on his face.

“Didn’t they tell me that there would be a lot of Scholastic Masters waiting for me here? Why can’t I see anyone?”  
Shaking his head helplessly, Zhang Xuan proceeded deeper into the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism.

# 1885 The Ferocious Fan

## Xiaoxu 1

It seemed like the rules written on the jade token were not to be taken exactly.

It was detailed on the jade token that one would be welcomed by the teachers upon arriving at the Great Phrontistry of Confucianism, at which point, one would have a chance to choose among them. However, all that was there to welcome him upon his arrival was a mere copper gong and nothing else.

“Did I come so quickly that no one was able to react in time?” Zhang Xuan muttered under his breath.

In any case, he had no intention of waiting there for them, so he proceeded ahead without any hesitation.

This was his first time entering the Great Phrontistry of Confucianism, and he was so overwhelmed by the changes in the spatial laws and the concentration in the spiritual energy that he failed to notice the crowd crushed beneath the copper gong. Besides, he had not exerted too much strength in the earlier stomp, so he did not expect that anyone would end up injured as a result of that.

Thus, he had completely failed to notice the bunch of Scholastic Masters.

It was just like how an elephant would not feel an ant struggling beneath it when stepping on it!

Sou!

Shortly after Zhang Xuan disappeared, Zhong Qing appeared before the copper gong. He scanned the surroundings with a confused look in his eyes for a moment before his eyebrows shot up in horror.

He quickly grabbed the copper gong and tugged, and it took him a while before he was finally able to lug it away.

A bunch of Scholastic Masters were imprinted messily in the ground. Their faces were ghastly pale, and fresh blood was oozing out from the corners of their mouths.

Seeing that everyone was almost on their last breath, Zhong Qing exclaimed, “Mi Xuan, what in the world happened here?”

Those Scholastic Masters were the strongest experts of the Great Phrontistry of Confucianism. They should have been the ones demonstrating their abilities to attract new students to come under their wing, but why would they end up lying beneath the copper gong like a bunch of dead fish?

“Did someone just decipher the seal and enter the premises?” Mi Xuan asked with a tearful look on his face.

“Yes, Fan Xiaoxu from Ancient Sage Zi Chi’s lineage!” Zhong Qing replied before realization struck him, and he widened his eyes in shock. “Are you saying that... he was the one who caused this? Wait a moment... Tell me what happened here!”

With an awkward look on his face, Mi Xuan began explaining. “I took out my copper gong, hoping to find someone who can survive ten breaths against it and bring him under my wing. So, when I saw that someone was entering the Great Phrontistry of Confucianism, I swiftly brought it out to block his way. However, I didn’t think that the other party would stomp down on it so forcefully. In order to prevent it from damaging the buildings around, everyone offered their strength to stop it, but... well, you can see the results for yourself!”

“He sent the copper gong flying... Even with so many of you around, none of you were able to stop him?” Zhong Qing shook his head in incredulity. “But how could that be? Fan Xiaoxu is a Saint 9-dan pinnacle cultivator!”

Putting aside the fact that the copper gong was a Great Sage artifact, it appeared that a stomp from Fan Xiaoxu was already more powerful than a dozen Scholastic Masters. A Saint 9-dan pinnacle cultivator being stronger than so many Great Sage experts? How could that be possible?

“There’s no way Saint 9-dan cultivators could wield such strength,” Mi Xuan remarked deeply. “In fact, not even Great Sages would be able to pull something like this off. Such strength can only be wielded by an Ancient Sage...”

Ancient Sages were extremely dense in weight, such that their body seemed to harness a world in itself. With how swiftly Fan Xiaoxu had been moving earlier, if his body carried the weight of an Ancient Sage, he would have been able to pull something like that off with a simple stomp. Perhaps, he might not even have been aware of how powerful his stomp was.

In any case, one thing was for sure—there was no way a Saint 9-dan cultivator could draw forth such strength.

Hearing those words, Zhong Qing frowned. “But I checked Fan Xiaoxu earlier, and he is indeed a member from Ancient Sage Zi Chi’s lineage. Fan Xiaofeng and the others can testify for him too, so it seems unlikely that he would be an impersonator. Furthermore, if an Ancient Sage barged into the Great Phrontistry of Confucianism, the great formation would surely activate, and the hibernating Ancient Sages would swiftly regain consciousness. However, nothing is happening at all...”

Similar to the Ancient Sages of the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters, the Ancient Sages of the Great Phrontistry of Confucianism spent most of their time hibernating. It was only in the presence of those who wielded strength equal to them would they be forcefully woken up from their long sleep.

The fact that the surroundings were completely silent was more than enough to prove that there were no Ancient Sages who had breached the barrier and barged into the area.

But... if that was not the case, how were they to make sense about what had happened?

“No matter who Fan Xiaoxu truly is, let’s find him before deciding our next move!” Knowing that they would only be able to resolve the problem with the person in question present, Mi Xuan quickly stowed his copper gong before flying over to the cluster of buildings.

Zhong Qing and the others followed tightly behind.

It did not take long before they saw a silhouette standing in the square, scratching his head in confusion.

It was none other than Fan Xiaoxu.

Huala!

Everyone swiftly descended to the ground and surrounded Fan Xiaoxu tightly.

“You are...” Fan Xiaoxu had a confused look on his face that seemed to say, ‘What am I doing here?’

“You are currently at the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism. You cleared the examination with ease, deciphered the formation within a breath, and overpowered all of us simultaneously shortly after entering the premises...” A Scholastic Master among the crowd could not take it anymore. “Tell me, just who in the world are you?”

“I am at the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism? Cleared the examination... I have already cleared the examination?” Fan Xiaoxu was taken aback as the information plunged him deeper into confusion. “Furthermore, I overpowered all of you? What does that mean?”

Seeing how Fan Xiaoxu was acting as if he had lost his memory, another Scholastic Master sneered coldly. “Don’t bother playing the fool. We’ll know your true strength with a simple look!”

With a tap of his finger, a book materialized in the air. It swiftly flipped open before a ray of light descended from it.

It was one of the treasures of the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism, the Book of Veracity.

It was able to gauge a person’s true cultivation and bloodline, and there was no way to possibly deceive it. It had been created through the principles of Ancient Sage Bo Shang’s Eye of Insight, and the book possessed the ability to dispel all falsehood.

Weng!

Shrouded with a ray of light, the flow of Fan Xiaoxu's zhenqi, the strength of his meridians, and everything else about him was clearly displayed. Even the color of his bloodline and his cultivation was visible to the eye.

“He's indeed from the lineage of Ancient Sage Zi Chi, and there's no doubt that he's a Saint 9-dan pinnacle cultivator!”

Hearing those words, the crowd grew even more confused.

Under the inspection of the Book of Veracity, it turned out that there was no mistake about the identity of the young man before them. He was Fan Xiaoxu through and through!

But... could a Saint 9-dan pinnacle cultivator really overpower all of them so thoroughly that they were unable to retaliate? Could a Saint 9-dan cultivator decipher the formation and get in there within a single breath? Could a Saint 9-dan cultivator teach his peers and grant them the power to eliminate over a thousand examinees in an intense examination?

“Allow me to test your strength!”

While everyone was still trying to figure out what was going on, Zhong Qing took a step forward. This time, he suppressed his cultivation down to Great Sage 1-dan Introspective Convalescence realm instead of Saint 9-dan.

Even Fan Xiaofeng and Fan Xiaoxing had been able to defeat him earlier. Considering that Fan Xiaoxu was their mentor, raising his cultivation higher than a realm would instead allow him to better control his strength and thus prevent anyone from getting hurt.

Hong long!

Not giving Fan Xiaoxu any time to react, Zhong Qing smacked his palm down with the might of a falling comet and the raging tides of a river. Even though he had suppressed his cultivation to the Introspective Convalescence realm, the power that he displayed still made everyone's breathing hastened in alarm as they subconsciously backed away.

Fan Xiaoxu's face paled in fright before this tremendous might, such that his body trembled uncontrollably.

His memory only went to the point where he was still at the foot of the mountain, waiting for the examination to begin. Then... when he suddenly came to again, he was already standing in this square. To make matters worse, a Scholastic Master even made a move against him without any hesitation. What the heck was going on?

Knowing that there was no time to think in this situation, he hurriedly backed away.

He could tell in an instant that the strength wielded by the other party was not something that he could possibly stand up against. If he did not dodge, there was a good chance that he would be smashed into a meat biscuit.

Sou!

However, before he could even process what was going on, his body had already flown back. It was just an instant, but his body had already flown back eight hundred meters, almost as if he had teleported away.

Boom!

Zhong Qing's attack landed on the ground, creating a depression in the middle of the square.

Not expecting that he would be able to move with such swiftness, Fan Xiaoxu was stunned. "W-what is going on?"

He staggered weakly on the spot, and a moment of imbalance caused him to fall on his bottom onto the ground.

He had been thinking of simply retreating a single step, and under normal circumstances, it would already have been a formidable feat if he was able to retreat ten meters away. Yet, he had actually covered eight hundred meters in a single step... How in the world did he do it?

Where am I? Who am I?

Fan Xiaoxu fell into confusion once more.

# 1886 The Ferocious Fan Xiaoxu 2

“This movement technique...”

Mi Xuan and the others narrowed their eyes in shock.

They could tell that the person standing before them had only used the strength of an ordinary Saint 9-dan, but a slight maneuver from him was already more than enough to outrun a Great Sage 1-dan cultivator. The speed that he was able to travel at was terrifying!

On the other hand, Zhong Qing was not too surprised to see that his attack had failed to land.

He had been unable to defeat Fan Xiaofeng and Fan Xiaoxing when his cultivation was suppressed to the same level as them, so there was nothing surprising about the person who had groomed them being able to dodge his attack easily.

Zhong Qing exhaled deeply before kicking off the ground once more. His movements were flurried and random, like a raging blizzard. No matter how Fan Xiaoxu moved around, he found that he was unable to shake Zhong Qing off his trail, leaving him feeling completely bewildered.

“This is the unique technique of Scholastic Master Zhong Qing, World of Blizzard,” Mi Xuan remarked grimly. “Putting aside opponents of the same tier, with his current fighting prowess, he would be able to overpower even Great Sage 2-dan experts with ease!”

Mi Xuan was one of the few cultivators whose abilities were heavily skewed toward his immense might. Playing on his core strength, he capitalized on his superior might to overwhelm everything that stood in his way, so the battle techniques that he practiced tended to be simple in nature.

Forming a stark contrast to him was Zhong Qing, whose expertise lay in pulling off delicate movements to pressure his

opponent. The World of Blizzard, which he was executing at the moment, was incredibly confusing, such that it left one's eyes blurring in confusion. Had Mi Xuan been in Fan Xiaoxu's position, he knew that the only possible move that he could have made at that moment was to run away.

The others nodded in agreement upon hearing those words. With deep frowns on their foreheads, they seemed to be deep in thought to figure out a way to overcome the powerful World of Blizzard, but it did not take them long to shake their heads helplessly.

They all came to the same conclusion in the end.

Unless their cultivation was decisively above Zhong Qing's, there was nothing they could do!

With such a thought in mind, they quickly turned their gazes toward the Saint 9-dan young man and saw the bewildered look on his face. It seemed as if the young man was at a complete loss as to what he could do as well.

However, his body suddenly jolted as a thought surfaced in his mind, and with a nimble forward step, he entered into the midst of the other party's area of attack.

Surprisingly, even though he had walked into Zhong Qing's field, none of the attacks seemed to land on him. With a simple wave of his hand, the snow seemed to be pulled along with him, swiftly congregating to form a massive snowball.

Peng!

Zhong Qing was knocked into the distance as crimson blood spurted furiously from his lips.

He actually lost in a single move!

“This...”

The Scholastic Masters in the area widened their eyes in shock. They were all taken aback by what they had just seen.

As experts of the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism, they were more than capable of defeating multiple students simultaneously even with their cultivation suppressed. But that

young man had actually managed to defeat Zhong Qing that easily.

They had witnessed the duel from the start to the end, and the moves that Fan Xiaoxu had executed looked ordinary on the surface. Yet, for some reason, as if they embodied a deeper ingenuity, those moves somehow managed to easily breach Zhong Qing defenses, rendering him completely powerless.

Even if they were in Zhong Qing's place, they did not think that they would have fared any better than him.

To think that it was possible for one's combat techniques to reach such a level. Just who in the world was Fan Xiaoxu's teacher?

While the Scholastic Masters were taken aback by what they had witnessed, Fan Xiaoxu was also staring at his palms with incredulous eyes.

All he remembered was someone calling him away while he was waiting at the foot of the mountain for the examination to start, then everything had gone blank afterward. By the time he came to once more, he was already in the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism.

He felt that it was unreasonable for Zhong Qing to abruptly have made a move on an ordinary student just like that, and he had already been prepared to be completely destroyed. Yet, a memory had suddenly surfaced in his mind in this moment of distress.

This memory contained some insights regarding combat techniques.

He had simply moved in accordance to the principles stated by those combat techniques, and before he knew it, he had already defeated the seemingly unreachable Zhong Qing.

Just as Fan Xiaoxu was trying to make sense of the ridiculous situation that was happening to him, a voice suddenly sounded in his mind.

"I am Zhang Xuan. I borrowed your body for a moment to resolve some urgent matters. I have given you a memory fragment containing insights to combat techniques as

compensation for my offense, and I hope that you will keep my identity a secret in return!”

He recognized the voice to be from the person who had knocked him out back then.

Zhang Xuan? If his memory could allow me to defeat even a Scholastic Master with ease, does this mean that... he's an Ancient Sage? Fan Xiaoxu's heart jolted in alarm.

To be able to leave a sliver of his memory in his heart without inflicting the slightest harm to him... this was something that only veteran Ancient Sages could pull off!

Even the Ancient Sage of their lineage was unable to pull it off. He could hardly begin to imagine just how powerful this person known as 'Zhang Xuan' was.

If that 'Zhang Xuan' person willed it, he would be able to destroy him with just a mere thought, but he had chosen not to do so. Not only so, the other party had even compensated him. From this, it could be deduced that this 'Zhang Xuan' person was not an evil person at heart. Since that was the case, regardless of why the other party wanted to come to the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism, it should be fine for him to keep it a secret.

Besides, matters concerning Ancient Sages could only be resolved by Ancient Sages themselves. As a Saint 9-dan cultivator, no one would believe him even if he really spoke about it.

Thus, he quickly assimilated the piece of memory that the other party had left in his mind before turning to the Scholastic Masters before him with an excited grin on his face. “Do any of you still want to test my cultivation? Make your move! If you feel insecure, I don't mind facing all of you at once!”

He had just tried out the battle technique earlier, and it had been proven to work. This would be a good opportunity for him to test the extent of his improvement.

Seeing how arrogant a mere freshman was, Mi Xuan and the others looked at one another for a moment before taking a step forward.

Thirty breaths later, they were all floored.

Fan Xiaoxu stared at his trembling hands with reddened eyes, unable to believe the miracle that had just befallen him.

His talent and strength could only have been said to be average among the youths of the Hundred Schools of Philosophers. Under normal circumstances, it would have been difficult for him to clear the examination. Who could have known that he would catch the eye of an Ancient Sage and be imparted top-notch combat techniques that allowed him to overpower even the Scholastic Masters?

This was an accomplishment that he would not have dared dream of in the past!

If even a sliver of that Ancient Sage's combat techniques could raise his fighting prowess by such a degree, he shuddered to imagine just how powerful the Ancient Sage himself was.

I wonder who this Ancient Sage Zhang Xuan is... Fan Xiaoxu looked into the distant sky as a towering, heroic figure took form in his mind.

There was no 'Zhang' among the Hundred Schools of Philosophers, so the other party was likely an outsider. Then again, there was no way that he could verify his identity, so there was no use thinking too deeply into it. All in all, the only thing that was important to him was that he had learned the combat techniques from Ancient Sage Zhang Xuan and was now indebted to him.

You shall be the one and only teacher I truly acknowledge from this day onward, and nothing will change that determination of mine... Fan Xiaoxu swore deep in his heart.

...

Hu!

A figure was slowly walking leisurely through the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism. There was a huge crowd around him, but not a single person seemed to notice his presence. The surrounding space had been distorted in a manner that prevented the slightest hint of light from falling upon him.

This figure was none other than Zhang Xuan.

His goal was to enter the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism without causing too huge a ruckus, and since he had achieved his goal, there was no longer any need for him to disguise himself.

Thus, he had released Fan Xiaoxu not too long after arriving at the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism. Of course, he did not forget to compensate Fan Xiaoxu fairly for the matter.

Having inherited the full heritage of the soul oracles, he was able to pull off a task as difficult as transplanting a sliver of his memories without harming the other party with ease.

As for how much Fan Xiaoxu would benefit from receiving a sliver of his memories, that would not be his problem to worry about anymore. He had already given the other party the opportunity, and whether Fan Xiaoxu himself was able to grasp it or not was up to him.

That being said, while transplanting a sliver of his memories seemed to be the more efficient way to gain power, his foundation would not be as stable as Fan Xiaofeng and Fan Xiaoxing's, who had gained their insights through practical experience and self-discovery.

In other words, even though Fan Xiaoxu's fighting prowess would likely be greater than Fan Xiaofeng and Fan Xiaoxing for the time being, as time passed, it was likely that Fan Xiaofeng and Fan Xiaoxing would eventually surpass him.

Of course, he would have likely left the Kunxu Domain by then after uncovering Kong Shi's secrets.

Putting aside the miscellaneous thoughts in his mind, Zhang Xuan continued ahead. He strolled around the city-like Great Phrontistery of Confucianism for a moment before finally setting his gaze upon a stately room.

Sage Ancestral Hall... If Kong Shi has hidden any secrets in the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism, they will likely be here, Zhang Xuan thought.

What was standing before him was a unique building that was absent in the Master Teacher Pavilions of the Master Teacher

Continent, the Sage Ancestral Hall.

Placed within the Sage Ancestral Hall were a sculpture of Kong shi himself and his individual possessions. It was a room used specifically for paying respects to him.

Of the entire Great Phrontistery of Confucianism, this was the place that had the greatest relevance to Kong shi.

Thus, Zhang Xuan took a deep breath before making his way over to the Sage Ancestral Hall.

Weng!

However, before he could reach his destination, a ray of light suddenly descended from the sky. It seemed like a formation had seen through the distortions of space that he had created around himself and discovered his presence.

Hong long!

Following which, a massive palm tore through space to slam down upon him. The surrounding space swiftly collapsed under the tremendous might, and it felt as if the entire Kunxu Domain would burst as a result of the force.

# 1887 Sage Ancestral Hall

Zhang Xuan did not think that he would be discovered even though he had hidden fairly well. He took a step back before pushing back against the palm with a powerful punch of his own.

Even though he had not achieved a breakthrough to Ancient Sage, his fighting prowess was already on par with Blood Reincarnation realm experts. As zhenqi surged through his meridians, a devastating force was swiftly gathering at the tips of his knuckles.

Hong!

As the fist and palm collided with one another, Zhang Xuan's body jolted a little.

To his surprise, that palm strike was not any weaker than his fist. It also harnessed the might of a Blood Reincarnation realm expert.

I mustn't drag things out...

Zhang Xuan's motive for going to the Kunxu Domain was to uncover Kong shi's trail after capturing a deity from the Azure. His goal had never been to cause trouble, and in order to avoid unnecessary complications, it would be best for him to end this battle as quickly as possible.

Otherwise, once the Ancient Sages of the Hundred Schools of Philosophers noticed his presence, things could really get troublesome.

With a flick of his wrist, the Dragonbone Divine Spear materialized in Zhang Xuan's grasp. Gathering the full might of his body, he drove it right toward the palm in the sky.

Despite the incredible momentum of the spear, it left nothing more than a slight indentation in the surrounding space, almost reminiscent of a needle piercing into one's skin. The spear had retained all of the energy within it, to the extent that even the crowd not too far away would not imagine that two Ancient

Sages were colliding with one another just ten meters away from them.

Peng!

With the powerful drive behind it, the Dragonbone Divine Spear overpowered the palm and pushed it back. As if recognizing that it was not a match for Zhang Xuan, the palm also retreated back into the formation.

Having overcome this obstacle, Zhang Xuan swiftly made his way into the Sage Ancestral Hall.

The first thing that came into his mind upon entering the stately room was the humongous Kong shi sculpture located at the center of the room. Standing in front of him was a warrior dressed in gold from top to bottom. This warrior was glaring at him with killing intent rippling in his eyes.

There was a cut at the center of its palm, which indicated that it was the opponent who had made a move on Zhang Xuan just a moment earlier.

“This is... a Golden Warrior of Mentor’s Calligraphy?” Zhang Xuan frowned in bewilderment.

He had thought that the person who had attacked him earlier would be an expert from the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism protecting the Sage Ancestral Hall... but it was only a warrior transformed from calligraphy!

This was not the first time that he had encountered a Golden Warrior of Mentor’s Calligraphy. He had come by them previously at Ancient Sage Ran Qiu’s ancient domain.

“To think that it’s possible for calligraphy to harness the might of an Ancient Sage 3-dan cultivator... Was this Golden Warrior of Mentor’s Calligraphy left behind by Kong shi himself?” Zhang Xuan wondered.

There was no doubt that Kong shi was the strongest person who had ever walked on the Master Teacher Continent, but he had not thought that the other party had actually been that powerful!

Even a single calligraphed character from him wielded strength that was comparable to the current him. If Kong shi wrote down a bunch of words, there would practically be nothing in this world that could stop him anymore!

But an instant after this thought formulated in Zhang Xuan's mind, he swiftly shook his head and denied that notion.

It was easier said than done to produce a Golden Warrior of Mentor's Calligraphy. Not only was it extremely testing on the skills and state of mind of the painter, it was also highly demanding on one's zhenqi and blood essence for nourishment. Given Zhang Xuan's current capabilities, he would only be able to create Golden Warriors of Mentor's Calligraphy at the level of Sempiternal realm cultivators, and his limit was three of them.

Anything more than that would be pushing it too far.

"But no matter how powerful it is, it is nothing more than a character," Zhang Xuan muttered beneath his breath.

He released his Spiritual Perception to swiftly scan the surroundings, and he heaved a sigh of relief after seeing that the earlier battle had not caught anyone's attention. Turning his gaze back to the Golden Warrior of Mentor's Calligraphy, he pushed his right leg against the ground and dashed forward, piercing his spear in the direction of the Golden Warrior.

Through concentrating his zhenqi at the tip of the spear, a swiftly revolving sphere of energy swiftly formed in front of him.

His spearmanship was in harmony with the world. Simple was its form, but versatility was its core. The unpredictable trajectory of his spear made it extremely difficult to defend against it.

In order to end this battle as quickly as possible, Zhang Xuan chose not to hold back at all. Gathering all of the strength at his disposal, he exerted a might that was almost comparable to a Dimension Shatterer realm cultivator. In less than two breaths, the Golden Warrior of Mentor's Calligraphy was

shattered, reduced to an ink character on the wall behind the sculpture.

Confucianism (儒).

Seeing that the character had not made any move after the earlier offense, Zhang Xuan walked up to the sculpture of Kong shi and bowed deeply as a show of respect before looking around the area.

It was likely that the Golden Warrior of Mentor's Calligraphy from earlier was a trial that those who wanted to enter the Sage Ancestral Hall would have to go through, similar to what had happened in Ancient Sage Ran Qiu's ancient domain. Only those who had defeated it would be qualified to explore the premises.

The room was mainly empty except for the sculpture at the center.

Thus, Zhang Xuan walked up to the side door and saw a corridor beyond it. The corridor was wide and spacious, and there were numerous tablets floating alongside it.

"This is... Kong shi's entire life story?" Zhang Xuan's eyes lit up in excitement.

The floating tablets were inscribed with the records of Kong shi's life, detailing everything that had happened since his birth.

Laying his eyes on one of the floating tablets, Zhang Xuan felt as if his soul had traveled through space-time to witness the grand life that Kong shi had lived.

...

Unlike the usual depictions of his life, Kong shi was not a Connate Saint. No matter how one looked at it, he was an ordinary individual. The only thing that was noteworthy was his deep interest in books and sharp wits.

But a day suddenly came when he deviated from his ordinary life. It was as if an epiphany had suddenly struck him, causing his cultivation to surge. Within the short span of a year, he

achieved a breakthrough beyond Fighter 9-dan, Transcendent Mortal 9-dan, and even Saint 9-dan!

In terms of progress, Kong shi was no slower than him!

It was still the era where the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe ruled over the Master Teacher Continent back then, and the humans lived under oppression. Along his growth, Kong shi's footsteps never halted. He fought country after country, salvaging mankind from the claws of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe. At the same time, he spread his teachings and ideals while taking in students.

Before long, the Master Teacher Pavilion that they knew today was established.

Feeling threatened by Kong shi's presence, the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe launched an ambush on Kong shi and his disciples, trapping them in Chen-Cai for many months. Many thought that Kong shi was done for, but in that crucial period, he created the Great Codex of Spring and Autumn and successfully achieved a breakthrough to Ancient Sage. That freed him from the danger that he was in, and he even successfully assassinated Vicious.

Soon enough, the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe was driven back and sealed within the otherworldly battlefield, thus liberating mankind once and for all.

“From the looks of it, it seems like Kong shi's breakthrough to Ancient Sage wasn't just an ordinary comprehension of temporal laws...” Zhang Xuan pondered as he followed Kong shi's journey through his life.

The Great Codex of Spring and Autumn contained the secrets of time. Zhang Xuan himself had been to the Temple of Confucius, and the flow of time in that folded space was indeed different from that of the world outside.

Ancient Sage Ran Qiu's breakthrough was built upon his spearmanship, and Ancient Sage Qiu Wu's breakthrough came from his deep comprehension of spatial laws... All along, he had thought that what Kong shi had grasped in his

breakthrough to Ancient Sage were the temporal laws, but it seemed like there was more to it.

The founder of the Zhang Clan was a person who had comprehended the Time Quintessence and successfully achieved a breakthrough to Ancient Sage based on it. There was no doubt that he was a powerful individual, but he still came nowhere close in comparison to the World's Teacher.

Harboring doubts in his heart, Zhang Xuan moved on to the other stone tablets.

After being driven away to the otherworldly battlefield, the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe was indignant and craved vengeance. Thus, they summoned a deity in hopes of turning the tables, but the deity was instead captured by Kong shi.

Watching up to this point, Zhang Xuan's breathing hastened a little.

His goal here was to uncover the encounter that Kong shi had with the captured deity, and the answer was right before him!

Kong shi took the deity away from the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters, the safest place on the Master Teacher Continent, and brought him to a rather remote location.

This remote location was a barren land, and the spiritual energy was thin. There were no decent buildings or cities to be seen.

There was a sudden jump in the story. It was hard to tell whether the deity had been killed or something, but he vanished without a trace. At the same time, Kong shi seemed to have sustained some injuries, so he chose to stop by the area temporarily to recuperate.

On the very last tablet, it was detailed that Kong shi entered a mini world. If his deduction was correct, this mini world referred to the Kunxu Domain where the Hundred Schools of Philosophers resided.

“Kunxu Domain... Could it be that...”

Zhang Xuan took a closer look at the remote location where Kong shi had taken the deity to, and his eyebrows suddenly

started twitching.

He actually recognized this remote location...

It was none other than the current Tianxuan Kingdom!

# 1888 Meeting Ancient Sage Yan Qing Once More

“Could it be that the Kunxu Domain wasn’t created by Kong shi?” Zhang Xuan pondered.

He had known prior to coming here that the Hundred Schools of Philosophers had departed from the Master Teacher Continent to reside in a mini world that Kong shi had created. This was also why he had not been surprised when he saw the Kunxu Domain after breaking the seal. However, the stone tablet right before him was telling him that this was not the case.

This mini world seemed to have existed since time immemorial. It was not one of Kong shi’s creations.

The records of Kong shi also stopped here. Could it be that the Kunxu Domain had some links with the Azure?

With a deep frown, Zhang Xuan proceeded ahead.

Beyond the corridor of floating stone tablets was a majestic hall with walls filled with murals. Those murals depicted the contributions made by the generations of experts from the Hundred Schools of Philosophers after entering this mini world.

Just as he had guessed, the Greensprout Wheat had indeed been nurtured by an Ancient Sage, but it was not by Ancient Sage Zi Chi as he had previously guessed. Instead, it had been completed by one of his descendants. It had taken tens of thousands of years of careful modifications before it was refined into a miraculous crop, allowing even non-cultivators to reach the level of Zongshi realm upon maturity.

Of course, its effects did not stop just there. Through the enhancements of their constitution, it also allowed cultivators to advance through the ranks faster than usual.

Browsing through the murals, Zhang Xuan felt even more confused.

There were no more records regarding Kong shi from that point onward. It was as if Kong shi had completely disappeared from the world, such that there was no more news regarding him.

He walked to the very end and circled the area once more, but there was nothing to be seen. He could not help but sigh helplessly.

It seemed like he had reached a bottleneck in his investigations.

Shaking his head, he was just about to leave the Sage Ancestral Hall to investigate the other locations of the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism when he suddenly noticed something and flitted to a corner of the room. At the same time, he swiftly set up over a dozen seals on him, causing all traces of his presence to fade into obscurity.

Huala!

Barely a second after he had hidden himself, the sound of footsteps echoed in the air. Several people were making their way into the Sage Ancestral Hall.

Zhang Xuan secretly peered over from his hiding spot.

The person standing at the forefront of the group was surprisingly a familiar face... Ancient Sage Yan Qing!

The group that was following behind him also struck a chord in his memories. They had participated in the encirclement of Sovereign Chen Yong back at the Temple of Confucius.

With his current strength and grasp of spatial laws, as long as he did not intentionally release his aura or communicate with anyone, he was able to completely conceal his presence even from Ancient Sages.

They don't seem to be doing too well...

When Zhang Xuan first met them back at the Temple of Confucius, they had emanated the inviolable airs of an Ancient Sage, commanding an aura that forced others to bow to their

authority. However, at this very moment, they felt like a great tree that was swiftly withering away. Be it their appearance or the aura that they were emanating, it felt as if strength and vitality were swiftly seeping away from them.

This was something that he had felt from Zhang Hongtian back then when his lifespan reached its limits.

I wonder what's wrong... Zhang Xuan looked on contemplatively.

It was true that the battle against Sovereign Chen Yong was intense, and many of them had sustained significant injuries throughout the course of the battle. However, their conditions were nowhere as severe as Zhang Hongtian's, and they should have been able to recover to their peak with sufficient time.

Given so, how did they land themselves in their current state within a short few months?

This was especially so for Ancient Sage Yan Qing. His face reflected infirmity, the vigorous spirit in his eyes had dimmed out, and his movements were slightly stiff. It was almost as if he was about to meet his end.

“Cough cough!”

Just as Zhang Xuan was trying to figure out what was going on, coughs echoed in the air, and fresh blood seeped from the corners of Ancient Sage Yan Qing's lips.

“Yan Qing...” An Ancient Sage behind him looked over worriedly.

“I can still hold on...” Ancient Sage Yan Qing raised his hand and replied feebly. Gathering the last bit of his strength left, he turned around and said, “Let's begin after paying our respects.”

“Are you certain that you want to do this?”

“There's no other choice. This is the mission entrusted to the Hundred Schools of Philosophers. We can't shirk from our responsibility,” Ancient Sage Yan Qing replied with an unreadable look on his face.

Shaking his head, he walked up to Kong shi's sculpture and knelt down. The other Ancient Sages quickly followed suit.

“To the venerated World's Teacher, I am the 73rd generation of offspring of Ancient Sage Zi Yuan, Yan Qing. I have heeded your teachings and held steadfast in my duties over the years. There has not been a day since when I have slacked. With the appearance of the Temple of Confucius, I know that we are reaching the breaking point that our predecessors warned us about, and it's time for us to do our part for the world. We are willing to offer our lives to the world, so if you are able to hear our prayers from above, I implore you to look after our clans after we are gone!”

The words spoken by Ancient Sage Yan Qing was solemn, as if he was prepared to meet his end.

Kong shi's sculpture simply stood silently on the spot, leaving a deafening silence in the air.

After praying, the group got to their feet. Somehow, Ancient Sage Yan Qing looked a little feebler than before as he said, “Let's go.”

“Un.”

Helplessness was reflected in the eyes of those high and mighty Ancient Sages, but they chose not to say a word at all as they followed quietly behind Ancient Sage Yan Qing.

Breaking point? Offer their lives?

Shortly after the Ancient Sages of the Hundred Schools of Philosophers took their leave, Zhang Xuan removed the seals around him as he lowered his head contemplatively.

Under normal circumstances, those Ancient Sages should have returned to hibernation, so why did they suddenly pay a visit to this Sage Ancestral Hall and speak such words?

Furthermore, what was with the injuries inflicted on their bodies?

The last thing he heard about them was that they were busy repairing the Temple of Confucius. Were there some dangers involved in the repairs of the Temple of Confucius?

Harboring deep bewilderment in his heart, Zhang Xuan quickly followed them out.

“Dragonbone Divine Spear, I need you to conceal my aura for me.”

The Dragonbone Divine Spear swiftly warped into a belt, which wrapped itself around Zhang Xuan’s body. In the blink of an eye, it looked as if Zhang Xuan had contracted a fair bit. Not even the slightest hint of aura could be felt from him, such that even Blood Reincarnation realm experts would be unable to sense his presence.

Even though Zhang Xuan’s current fighting prowess was comparable to Blood Reincarnation realm experts, he still had not taken the last step to achieving a breakthrough to Ancient Sage. As such, his control over his powers was a little lacking. Without layers and layers of barriers, he was not confident in keeping his aura sufficiently under wraps to track the most powerful experts on the Master Teacher Continent without alarming them.

On the other hand, the Dragonbone Divine Spear had devoured the dragon blood and was only a step away from achieving a full breakthrough to the Dimension Shatterer realm. In terms of prowess, it was even stronger than Ancient Sage Yan Qing. With its help, it was unlikely that those Ancient Sages would be able to notice him.

After leaving the Sage Ancestral Hall, Zhang Xuan saw Ancient Sage Yan Qing leaping into the sky and tearing open space to travel somewhere else. Zhang Xuan quickly followed behind them.

Some time later, they arrived at an elevated platform amid a remote mountain range.

The sky above was completely empty. There were no clouds nor even any hint of blueness to be seen. It was an empty void.

The flow of space in here is extremely fast! Zhang Xuan noted.

To the untrained eye, this place seemed to be extremely peaceful. However, as someone who had grasped the Spatial

Quintessence, he could sense that this space was flowing extremely quickly, resulting in massive changes every passing second. It felt as if the entire area would collapse soon under the strain.

That was not all.

Beyond the void, there was a blood-curdling sensation that seemed to faze one's soul directly.

“Let's begin!” Ancient Sage Yan Qing urged after getting into position.

Nodding in agreement, the group of Ancient Sages began to drive their zhenqi. However, they were disrupted by a sudden gale. Two silhouettes were swiftly making their way over.

Noting the presence of the two uninvited guests, the Ancient Sages quickly halted their actions and turned to look.

Naturally, Zhang Xuan did the same.

Hu!

The two guests landed on the ground.

The first person was a young lady that appeared to be in her early twenties. She had a slender figure and pitch-black hair that extended down to her waist, and she gave out a delicate impression. Her eyes carried deep anxiety that reflected her trepidation toward what was about to come.

There was a green-robed young man in his early twenties as well standing behind her. Zhang Xuan happened to know him. He was one of the offspring of the Hundred Schools of Philosophers who had fought with him over the Prime Amulet back in Ancient Sage Ran Qiu's ancient domain, Yan Xue!

“What are you two doing here?” Ancient Sage Yang Qing asked with a livid look on his face upon seeing the two of them.

The young lady took a step forward and said with conviction, “As a descendant of Kong shi, how can I possibly remain uninvolved when such a matter has happened?”

A descendant of Kong shi? Zhang Xuan widened his eyes. Is she Kong Shiyao?

# 1889 Yan Hui's Corpse

He had heard far too many people raising the name 'Kong Shiyao' before him. She was rumored to be the strongest expert of the Hundred Schools of Philosophers, possessing superior talents in cultivation. It was said that she did not pale in comparison to him.

There was a time when he had thought that Luo Ruoxin's true identity was Kong Shiyao, but his deductions had fallen through.

Seeing the person whom he had heard so much about in the flesh, he could not help but take a closer look to assess her closely.

It had to be said that the rumors were not completely unfounded. Not only was she blessed with impeccable looks, she also emanated an ethereal aura reminiscent of a deity. It was hard to pull one's gaze away from her.

Luo Ruoxin carried a lofty aura that pushed others away from her, making her hard to approach. On the other hand, Kong Shiyao carried an aura that induced others to trust and submit to her, the aura of a natural leader. Many would willingly lay down their lives for her under her command.

Formidable master teachers are able to draw the gazes of others with just their presence. This is the first time I have seen someone who is able to bring this quality out to such an extent. It seems like Kong Shiyao has truly inherited Kong shi's bloodline, Zhang Xuan thought.

Kong shi's lineage was truly extraordinary.

In terms of cultivation, Kong Shiyao was at Sempiternal realm consummation as well, the same as him. She had not achieved a breakthrough to Ancient Sage yet, but the aura in her body felt condensed and heavy. Most likely, her fighting prowess exceeded that of ordinary Ancient Sages.

This was really the first time that Zhang Xuan had seen someone whose talents were at a level similar to his.

“Since you are aware that you are a descendant of Kong shi, you should also know of the responsibilities that you have to shoulder. We can afford to lose our lives, but you have to remain alive regardless of what it takes!”

“The descendants of Kong shi don’t fear death!” Kong Shiyao replied in determination. “I carry the purest bloodline of Kong shi within me, so I’m the best candidate to stabilize the space here. There’s no point arguing about this matter!”

Seeing that Kong Shiyao’s mind was set, Ancient Sage Yan Qing was silent for a moment before sighing deeply. “Shiyao, you are still young, and there’s a long way ahead of you. I am just a pile of old bones who is going to reach the limits of his lifespan soon. There’s no need for you to give up your life for this. This matter isn’t open for negotiation...”

As he spoke, he suddenly waved his hand.

A sudden outburst of energy shrouded Kong Shiyao and sealed her on the spot, rendering her unable to move.

“Ancient Sage Yan Qing!”

Not expecting Ancient Sage Yan Qing to make such a move, Kong Shiyao exclaimed in a fluster. A mixture of panic and anxiety welling up in her caused tears to brim in her eyes.

But unmoved by Kong Shiyao’s expression, Ancient Sage Yan Qing turned to Yan Xue and sternly commanded, “Take care of her well. Even at the expense of your life, you can’t allow any harm to fall upon her!”

“Yes!” Yan Xue replied resolutely.

Ancient Sage Yan Qing closed his eyes for a short moment before looking at the other Ancient Sages and nodding. “Let’s begin.”

As he spoke, a decisive and powerful aura gushed forth from his body. With the other Ancient Sages around cooperating with him, they swiftly formed a massive pillar of light that surged right into the void.

The rumbling of thunder echoed from the void in space, and innumerable powerful surges of energy clawed at the rift, seemingly intending to climb their way out to unleash their horrors upon this world.

Is this... the Zhenqi of Slaughter of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe?

Feeling this aura, Zhang Xuan was taken aback for a little. He pondered deeply for a moment before shaking his head.

No, that's not it. It feels even heavier than the Zhenqi of Slaughter, almost like mercury. My meridians wouldn't be able to take the burden if I absorbed it...

Zhang Xuan's face turned even more grim at the realization.

The energy beyond the rift was similar to the Zhenqi of Slaughter, but it took on an even more bizarre form. Even with his current strength, he dared not to absorb it into his body recklessly.

Normal spiritual energy was lighter than water, so the meridians were still able to withstand its flow without falling apart. However, the same could not be said about the mercury-like energy above him. While it was also fluid, the chances were that its weight would crush his meridians and destroy his body from within if he dared absorb it.

This very energy was raging behind the rift, threatening to pour forth upon the world at any moment.

If it poured out of the rift, all of the cultivators of the Hundred Schools of Philosophers could very well explode on the spot once they came into contact with the energy.

What's going on here? Zhang Xuan was horrified.

It was as if he was being exposed to a completely different side of the world that he had never seen before! If the seal failed to ward off the energy, it could possibly spell the end of the Kunxu Domain!

“Stand your ground and fend it off!”

While Zhang Xuan was still trying to make sense of what was going on, Ancient Sage Yan Qing slowly rose into the air. His

hair flew around messily under the furious tug of the air currents.

He was serving as the very center of the formation created by the group of Ancient Sages, and he was responsible for channeling their energy toward the void.

Thunder growled forbiddingly in the air as the pressure from the void grew heavier and heavier. It was almost as if the sky was going to fall upon them.

At the same time, the faces of the Ancient Sages turned more and more severe as their black hair swiftly turned white.

They are putting their life force on the line to seal the rift.

It was no wonder they had aged so much within less than three months. It turned out that they had been expending their life force in order to maintain the seal before them.

The lightning in the air grew more and more concentrated, as if signifying the rage of the heavens.

Ancient Sage Yan Qing bit his finger and flicked his fresh blood toward the depths of the void. Following which, a humongous coffin vaguely emerged from the void.

The appearance of the coffin caused the rift to shrink a little, and the mercury-like power that was going to descend upon the world also cowered fearfully in its face. At the same time, the pressure crushing down on the crowd lessened significantly.

That coffin... Zhang Xuan thought with a frown.

It was already bewildering for there to be a coffin hidden in the midst of the void, but what was even more shocking to Zhang Xuan was the design of the coffin. To his astonishment, it was identical to the one that he had encountered prior to entering the Kunxu Domain, the one that Ancient Sage Ran Qiu's corpse was stored in!

That coffin seems to be serving as the crux of the seal, Zhang Xuan swiftly analyzed.

This coffin was not made for the sole purpose of containing a corpse; rather, it seemed to be a powerful artifact that was used

to sustain the formation sealing away the rifts in the air. It was due to the power of the coffin that the mercury-like power was unable to descend from the heavens and wreak havoc.

Most likely, there's an Ancient Sage whose strength is on par with Ancient Sage Ran Qiu within the coffin, Zhang Xuan deduced.

The fact that the formation was able to prevent the mercury-like energy from descending evidenced its incredible prowess. Serving as the crux of the formation, there was no way the person within the coffin could be ordinary.

The seal at the entrance of Kunxu Domain used Ancient Sage Ran Qiu's body as its crux, and even the Dimension Shatterer realm Vicious had been unable to break it open. Considering how this formation was even more powerful, it was hard to imagine how powerful the person had been back in his prime.

Jiya!

The coffin in the sky jolted intensely, and several slight cracks appeared by its sides.

“Open!”

Along with the appearance of the cracks, veins popped out on Ancient Sage Yan Qing's temples. He swiftly sent a fresh stream of his blood toward the cracks of the coffin in order to further drive its opening.

However, due to the severe loss of blood, his face was turning as pale as a sheet of paper. His body trembled uncontrollably from his overexertion, and his skin quickly lost its suppleness, turning loose and wrinkly. It was only an instant, but he looked as if he had aged another ten years.

Boom!

The cracks on the coffin grew larger and larger under the influx of Ancient Sage Yan Qing's blood, and soon enough, there was a massive explosion. Amid floating dust, a towering silhouette emerged from the coffin.

Just as Zhang Xuan had guessed, there was indeed an Ancient Sage corpse placed inside the coffin. This silhouette was

dressed in a flowing long robe, and he had smooth facial features that created a calming appearance. Even though he had been stored in the coffin for tens of thousands of years, his body looked no different from the time of his death. There was no hint of decomposition at all.

Could this person possibly be...

Looking at the corpse and Ancient Sage Yan Qing, a person's name surfaced in Zhang Xuan's mind, and his body stiffened.

Ancient Sage Zi Yuan... Yan Hui?

# 1890 Kong Shiyao's Capabilities

He had never seen Ancient Sage Zi Yuan's sculpture before, but that did not mean that he knew nothing about this renowned Ancient Sage at all.

Ancient Sage Zi Yuan was renowned for being Kong shi's first direct disciple. While his fighting prowess was beneath that of Ancient Sage Ran Qiu, his reputation and prestige far exceeded that of the rest of the seventy-two Sages. Putting aside his honorable character and exceptional proficiency in many different fields, he was also the person who had helped Kong shi compile the heritages of numerous occupations and standardized the ranking system.

In contrast to the sharp aura that Ancient Sage Ran Qiu commanded, the corpse before him seemed to emanate an aura more like the all-encompassing ocean that accepted the currents from hundreds of tributaries and assimilated them. It was through tapping into this superior strength that the mercury-like energy had not been able to breach the formation to seep into the Master Teacher Continent thus far.

Most likely, Ancient Sage Zi Yuan was the only one among the seventy-two Sages who was capable of this feat.

Besides, the fact that Ancient Sage Yan Qing's blood was required to activate the coffin and nourish the corpse made it very apparent who was within it.

First Ancient Sage Ran Qiu's corpse, and now Ancient Sage Zi Yuan's corpse, Zhang Xuan thought as he trembled a little.

These two Ancient Sages were figures whose names still resounded across the Master Teacher Continent even after so many years. He had thought that they would have left the Master Teacher Continent together with Kong shi, but who could have known that he would find their corpses there?

“Tribute!” Ancient Sage Yan Qing bellowed deafeningly as his body began to break apart like a smashed ceramic vase. Blood spurting out from his veins and arteries before surging toward the corpse in a steady current.

Taking in the blood, the stiffness in the corpse seemed to lessen, making it seem as though it would come to life at any moment. At the same time, the formation also strengthened significantly. The rifts that had been on the verge of bursting open earlier swiftly stabilized and mended themselves.

Ancient Sage Yan Qing originates from Ancient Sage Zi Yuan’s lineage, so the latter’s blood flows through his veins. He’s trying to use his blood to augment and sustain Ancient Sage Zi Yuan’s strength so as to strengthen the formation sealing away the rifts. Zhang Xuan finally understood what was going on.

It was no wonder Ancient Sage Yan Qing had spoken of sacrificing himself earlier.

The formation had come from his predecessor, and the blood of those from his lineage would be more effective in stabilizing the formation once more.

Of course, considering that Kong Shiyao possessed Kong Shi’s bloodline, her blood would likely have an exceptional effect on Ancient Sage Zi Yuan’s corpse, perhaps even exceeding that of Ancient Sage Yan Qing. However, considering how valued Kong Shiyao was among the Hundred Schools of Philosophers, there was no way Ancient Sage Yan Qing would allow her to sacrifice herself.

“It seems like everything is settling down...”

Under the influx of blood, the seal swiftly stabilized, and the pressure from the void gradually vanished. Ancient Sage Yan Qing heaved a sigh of relief.

The current him had expended most of his blood; he had already struck his limit. It was only a matter of time before the last bit of vitality in his body dried up, and he would come crashing back down to the ground as a lifeless corpse.

Realizing this reality, Kong Shiyao pounded desperately on the seal that had trapped her with tears in her eyes. However, with her strength, she was completely powerless to change anything.

At the same time, Yan Xue turned his head away and averted his gaze, not wanting to see the downfall of the man whom he had respected his entire life.

Hong long long!

It was at this moment that things started going awry.

As the formation grew stronger and stronger under the influx of Ancient Sage Yan Qing's blood, it looked as if the sealing would be completed very soon. However, at that crucial moment, a massive hand suddenly pushed its way through the mending rift.

This sight was similar to the descent of the deity, which he had witnessed previously during the fight against Sovereign Chen Ling.

Hu!

The hand flicked its wrist lightly, and Ancient Sage Yan Qing was suddenly slammed into the ground, halting the transfusion of blood.

Pu! Pu! Pu!

At the same time, the Ancient Sages who were supplying Ancient Sage Yan Qing with their strength spurted blood under the backlash and collapsed to the ground as well.

A Dimension Shatterer realm expert... Zhang Xuan's face darkened.

The owner of this hand was clearly stronger than the deity whom he had killed with his golden page back then.

Even without an altar on their side to establish a connection, he was able to breach the dimension barrier and tear open a passageway with brute force.

Could it be that the void was the passageway to the Azure that he had been looking for all along?

With such doubts in his mind, the hand in the sky began thrashing around, causing the reinforced formation to weaken, such that it was beginning to falter.

“We need to stop him!”

Caught off guard by the abrupt turn of events, Ancient Sage Yan Qing roared anxiously as he swiftly kicked off into the air. With a flick of his wrist, he pulled a saber in his hand down upon the thrashing hand.

He knew that if he wanted to sustain the formation, it would be of paramount importance to sever the hand, or else anything they did would be swiftly unraveled by it.

“Humph!”

Sensing Ancient Sage Yan Qing’s aggression, the owner of the hand opened up his palm and pinched his fingers together lightly.

The saber from Ancient Sage Yan Qing was caught precisely in between his fingers. As if a pair of unyielding pincers, no matter how Ancient Sage Yan Qing tugged, he was unable to retrieve his saber.

“We need to move together!”

Knowing the severity of the matter, the other Ancient Sages quickly flitted forth.

With their combined might, many rifts swiftly formed around the already unstable space in the area. Several bundles of black flames descended from the void, raising an inferno around the area.

“Yan Xue, release me! Otherwise, all of us will die here!” Kong Shiyao yelled out desperately at the young man beside her.

“I...” Yan Xue’s face warped in hesitation as he struggled with the conflict in his mind.

“What are you hesitating over? Hesitate any longer and our tens of thousands of years of heritage will be destroyed!” Kong Shiyao roared wrathfully upon seeing that Yan Xue was still hesitating.

“Alright!” Knowing how dangerous the situation was, Yan Xue quickly tapped his finger on the seal trapping Kong Shiyao and released it.

While Yan Xue’s cultivation was only at Sempiternal realm consummation, he shared the same power origin as Ancient Sage Yan Qing, so it was much easier to unravel it.

It did not take long for the seal around Kong Shiyao to dissipate entirely.

“Humph!”

With a ferocious cry, Kong Shiyao’s eyebrows shot up as incredible energy swiftly built up within her.

With a leap, she rose into the sky and whipped out a sword. Pointing the sword toward the hand, she brandished it with lightning speed.

“Remarkable!” Zhang Xuan nodded as he took this scene into sight.

Just as he had thought, Kong Shiyao’s fighting prowess was formidable despite her young age. Just like him, her strength had also reached the Blood Reincarnation realm.

The sword that she wielded in her hand was extremely powerful, too. It was stronger than the Dragonbone Divine Spear, and in Kong Shiyao’s grasp, it brought forth a might comparable to Blood Reincarnation realm consummation cultivators.

Ding ding ding!

Despite that, her sword qi only caused numerous sparks to rub off the hand.

Nevertheless, she still continued to slash her sword relentlessly at the hand.

“Persistent cockroach!”

Seeing that a small fry from a lower dimension actually dared make a move against him, the owner of the hand bellowed angrily as he flicked his finger.

Peng!

Kong Shiyao was knocked back by an incredible force, causing her back to crash heavily against the ground. Blood seeped down from the corners of her lips.

There was simply too huge a gap between the Blood Reincarnation realm and the Dimension Shatterer realm. Back then, even when Zhang Xuan coordinated with multiple Blood Reincarnation realm Ancient Sages, he had been no match for the deity summoned by Sovereign Chen Ling.

Si la!

After flicking Kong Shiyao back, the hand proceeded to flick its finger, creating a shockwave that kept Ancient Sage Yan Qing and the others at bay. With a piercing cry, the rift in the unstable space widened as yet another hand passed through it. Following which, a head came through as well.

Just like the deity from before, this person was planning to make a forceful descent onto the Master Teacher Continent!

# 1891 Word of Law

Boom!

Along with the emergence of the head, the mercury-like power began to seep through the rift and diffuse into the surroundings. In response, Zhang Xuan hurriedly sealed his acupoints, not daring to absorb any of it at all.

Similar to the Zhenqi of Slaughter, this mercury-like energy was a special type of energy that could potentially crush one's meridians, causing one's cultivation to fall sharply or even put one in severe danger.

“We need to kill him right now!”

Seeing that the deity had managed to push his head through the rift, the complexions of Ancient Sage Yan Qing and the others darkened. With a furious roar, they swiftly charged toward the figure climbing out from the void.

All kinds of energy sweeping around the area caused the formation to shake nonstop. Piece after piece of space crumbled to the ground.

With just a flick of his finger, the deity fended off everyone's attack. At the same time, he used his other hand to push himself out from the rift, and it did not take long for his entire shoulder to come into appearance.

It was as if he was dealing with mere ants. Despite having to fend off the simultaneous assault of numerous Ancient Sages, he had strength spare to push himself through the dimension barrier.

From that alone, it was certain that the deity was much stronger than fellow whom he had killed with the golden page.

“We won't be able to stop him at this rate!” Kong Shiyao spat through gritted teeth.

She had already launched several hundred slashes, such that her zhenqi was on the verge of drying up, but she was unable

to inflict any damage at all. Grinding her teeth, she turned to Ancient Sage Yan Qing and said in a resounding voice, “Don’t waste your strength on attacking anymore. Use your strength to pull Ancient Sage Zi Yuan’s body here instead!”

“This...” As if having figured out what Kong Shiyao was going to do, Ancient Sage Yan Qing shook his head instinctively.

“Ancient Sage Yan Qing, there’s no other way around it. If we waste any more time, we’ll all lose our lives here!” Kong Shiyao berated.

If that fellow climbed through the dimension barrier and descended to their world, they would all be slaughtered. At the same time, the Hundred Schools of Philosophers would face a calamity of unprecedented proportions... and it would not be long before the devastation spread to the Master Teacher Continent!

If they wished to overcome the current crisis, they needed the resolve to put their lives on the line!

“But... you are the only one among Kong shi’s offspring to have a bloodline purity of over ‘8’. You are the future of our Hundred Schools of Philosophers,” Ancient Sage Yan Qing said anxiously.

If Kong Shiyao did what she was thinking of, there was a good chance that she would lose her life!

He was already old, so his death was inconsequential to the Hundred Schools of Philosophers. However, the young lady was the descendant who had inherited the purest bloodline of Kong shi in the past millennium. Furthermore, she had overcome three Ancient Sage Ordeals to date.

As long as she was given sufficient time, there was a good chance that she would become the first cultivator to reach the Dimension Shatterer realm since Kong shi’s era. If he allowed her to die, he would not be able to face his predecessors even after his death!

“If that fellow succeeds, all of us will lose our lives here! What use will the purity of my bloodline be after all of us are

dead?” Kong Shiyao exclaimed.

She took a deep breath before spurting out a mouthful of blood.

Boom!

As soon as she spat out the mouthful of blood, it immediately burst into flames in the air. In an instant, it seemed as if the surrounding time had been halted. Even the deity who was climbing out from the rift came to a halt.

It was as if someone had struck the ‘stop’ button.

After spurting out the mouthful of blood, Kong Shiyao’s face grew significantly paler. Beads of sweat formed on her forehead as she looked at the coffin floating not too far away and commanded, “Come here.”

Weng!

Hearing the order, the coffin slowly made its way over to Kong Shiyao amid a light rumbling sound.

“This is... Impartation of Heaven’s Will?” Zhang Xuan was surprised.

This was the ability that Kong Shiyao had activated through her bloodline. All along, he had been wondering what the bloodline ability of those of Kong shi’s lineage was, but who would have thought that it was Impartation of Heaven’s Will?

Was this not a little too simple?

Compared to the Zhang Clan’s time acceleration and the Luo Clan’s spatial seal, was Impartation of Heaven’s Will not a little too lackluster in comparison? This did not seem to match up to Kong shi’s incredible strength.

“This isn’t right...” Zhang Xuan frowned as he activated his Eye of Insight to take a closer look.

What he saw made his heart jolt in astonishment.

“This isn’t Impartation of Heaven’s Will but...”

Impartation of Heaven’s Will required one to impart knowledge that was acknowledged by the heavens in order to

induce cultivators to heed their commands. While the Heart of Teacher comprehended by Zhang Xuan allowed him to command plants and artifacts too, these beings needed to possess spirit or be enchanted with one.

To put it in other words, Impartation of Heaven's Will only worked on those who possessed spirit and were able to cultivate, and it required one to lecture on a cultivation technique that was suited for that individual's cultivation. It was easier said than done.

For example, if Zhang Xuan wanted to influence someone through Impartation of Heaven's Will, his Soul Depth would have to exceed the other party's, and the content of his lecture needed to spark inspiration in the other party.

As formidable as Kong Shiyao seemed, her true cultivation was only at Sempiternal realm consummation. Even if her Soul Depth had reached the level of an Ancient Sage, it still should not have been possible for her to make a lifeless coffin and corpse to heed her orders.

“This is... Word of Law!” Zhang Xuan widened his eyes in astonishment.

Word of Law was an ability that turned one's diction into laws of the world, compelling the elements of the world to obey one's command. On the surface, it might seem similar to Impartation of Heaven's Will, but it was much more terrifying than that.

Before the Word of Law, all temporal laws and spatial laws meant nothing at all.

Even if he activated the Zhang Clan's bloodline, all the young lady had to do was to utter the word “Stop”, and his movements would come to a complete halt.

This was not a manipulation of time or space but the very elements of the world! The act of stopping would become a new law of the world, forcing one to abide by it.

This was how terrifying the ability was!

To think that this was the ability that Kong shi had comprehended during his breakthrough to Ancient Sage. It

was no wonder he had boasted such incredible strength!

Hong long!

Meanwhile, Kong Shiyao flew over to the coffin and opened it. Ancient Sage Zi Yuan's corpse swiftly flew out and floated in the air.

Even though his eyes were tightly shut, the pulsations of energy that were coming from him made it seem as though he was alive.

Pu!

After doing all of this, Kong Shiyao spurted another mouthful of blood as her face turned even paler. Her body shuddered a little as it seemed to reach its limits.

As powerful as the Word of Law was, her cultivation was still too low. Forcefully activating Ancient Sage Zi Yuan's body had caused too heavy a toll on her, damaging her foundations.

Sighing deeply, Ancient Sage Yan Qing commanded, "Allow me!"

Boom!

An incredible amount of blood gushed out from his body to surge into Ancient Sage Zi Yuan's corpse. This caused the aura that Ancient Sage Zi Yuan's corpse was emanating to swiftly grow stronger.

"Do you think that you can defeat me with a mere corpse? I really should snap you out of your daydreams!" the deity sneered coldly as he thrust his palm downward.

At that moment, his chest had also been pushed out through the dimension barrier as well. It seemed like it would not be long before he completely descended upon this world.

The palm strike caused the surrounding space to swiftly compress together, forming something reminiscent of a black hole.

"Get him!"

With a ferocious cry, the remaining Ancient Sages rushed forward to meet the deity's palm.

Hula!

The incredible pressure sent shockwaves rippling into the surroundings. Before the Ancient Sages could react, their flesh had already been vaporized clean, leaving behind mere skeletons.

Even so, they did not back down. They stood firmly in the air to stop the palm from landing on Ancient Sage Yan Qing and the others.

# 1892 He's Here!

Peng peng peng!

The Ancient Sages plopped heavily onto the ground, forming numerous craters on the elevated platform.

Given their current cultivation, they would not die instantly even after they were reduced to bones. However, they had hibernated for far too long, and they had not fully recovered from the wounds that they had sustained during the encirclement of Sovereign Chen Yong. If they did not receive sufficient Aeon of Ancient Sage to replenish their vitality, their lifespan would swiftly dwindle, and they would die without doubt.

In other words, they were really putting their lives on the line to stand against the deity!

I can't allow those from the Hundred Schools of Philosophers to die here...

Zhang Xuan had not made a move thus far because his multiple unpleasant encounters with the Hundred Schools of Philosophers in the past, and he had thought that they would be able to handle the situation by themselves. He had worried that his sudden intervention would only worsen the situation as the other Ancient Sages were bound to be wary of him.

However, things were swiftly moving in the worst direction possible. He could not simply watch and leave those Ancient Sages of the Hundred Schools of Philosophers to die.

While he found their actions questionable, there was no doubt that they were protecting mankind in their own way, and they had made huge sacrifices for it.

He could not simply watch as they lost their lives.

Driving his energy, as he was just about to charge forth silently to inflict a fatal blow on the deity, Kong Shiyao suddenly spurted another mouthful of blood before commanding, "Stabilize and push him back!"

Weng!

Following her words, the rifts in the sky began to heal simultaneously as the space swiftly stabilized.

At the same time, the deity whose waist was already out of the dimension barrier suddenly retreated hurriedly under the command, moving back to his shoulder.

It was only unfortunate that her cultivation was simply too low compared to the deity's. Even after using her bloodline ability, she was still unable to push the deity back to the Azure once and for all.

“It's indeed his bloodline! Wonderful... This is truly superb! With this, the clan head will surely accept me as his direct disciple and grant me endless resources!”

Even though he was nearly expelled from the world, the deity did not show the slightest hint of fear toward Kong Shiyao's technique. Instead, his eyes glowed with frenzied excitement.

At that moment, the corpse of Ancient Sage Zi Yuan also seemed to have absorbed sufficient blood and slowly rose out of the coffin. With clenched fists, he sent a punch right toward the deity climbing out from the rift.

Boom!

This fist was completely devoid of any elegance or flamboyance, but the might it carried was astonishing, reaching the level of a Dimension Shatterer realm cultivator.

“Heh!”

In face of this devastating might, the deity did not show any trepidation. Instead, with a cold sneer, he placed his hands together.

Si la!

The formation sustained by Ancient Sage Zi Yuan's corpse was forcefully ripped apart, causing the mercury-like energy to surge into the world.

Under the sheer weight of the energy, Ancient Sage Yan Qing was crushed into the ground. As if there was a mountain

weighing down on him, he was unable to move at all.

The others were not faring too well either. As Kong Shiyao had activated her bloodline ability, she was still able to somewhat hold her ground. On the other hand, Yan Xue's face paled as his skin swiftly ripped apart under the pressure, revealing his crimson flesh underneath.

Zhang Xuan was also affected by the mercury-like energy too, but it was not too severe for him. He was the strongest among the Ancient Sages present, and he had sealed his acupoints beforehand to prevent any of that energy from getting into his body, so the damage that he sustained ended up being the least of all.

Kacha! Kacha! Kacha!

The deity fought with Ancient Sage Zi Yuan's corpse, but with each blow executed, the strength that the corpse commanded dwindled. On the other hand, with the mercury-like energy suffusing the area, the deity seemed to be growing stronger by the moment.

By the eighth blow, there was a resounding explosion as the corpse was sent flying back into the coffin.

“Bloodline Ignition!”

With crimson eyes, Kong Shiyao roared wrathfully as she began igniting her bloodline once more. But this time around, before she could finish her move, the deity sneered coldly, “Save your effort on this futile struggle. Just because I need you alive doesn't mean that I'll overlook your insolence!”

Following which, another palm strike descended from the rift.

Pu!

Kong Shiyao's body immediately plummeted from the sky from the impact.

Bearing the risk of his meridians ripping apart, Yan Xue forcefully drove his zhenqi to catch her.

“Hahaha!”

After knocking back Ancient Sage Zi Yuan's corpse and striking down Kong Shiyao, the deity laughed heartily as he finally pushed himself out of the rift and floated in the air with his hands crossed triumphantly before his chest.

The reason he had been troubled climbing out of the dimension barrier earlier was due to the formation obstructing his path. However, with the formation swiftly crumbling under the influx of the mercury-like energy, there was no longer anything that could stop him.

"I was curious as to what kind of environment could give birth to such an overpowered individual, but I must say that I'm very disappointed by what I'm seeing here!" the deity sneered coldly as he reached out to grab Kong Shiyao.

Alarmed, Yan Xue rushed forward to pull Kong Shiyao back, but he was sent flying with a simple flick of a finger. He crashed onto the ground, and the bones in his body shattered from the impact.

"You're coming with me!" the deity commanded.

Hula!

He wrapped Kong Shiyao with a membrane of energy, trapping her.

"No!"

Seeing how the only descendant of Kong shi to possess a bloodline purity of '8' over the past thousand years getting captured, everyone's eyes widened in horror.

But with the huge disparity of power between them and the enemy, there was nothing they could do. They had already tried everything that was at their disposal, but it was futile.

"Is the Kunxu Domain that Kong shi created going to be destroyed in my generation? How could I allow this to happen?" Ancient Sage Yan Qing trembled intensely as he shook his head in disbelief, unwilling to accept reality.

Back then, even though Kong shi had spared the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe out of magnanimity, he had been convinced that mankind would only grow stronger with time and that

they would be able to overcome any threats that came their way.

However, not even the great Kong shi had expected the Aeon of Ancient Sage to suddenly vanish from the world. This phenomenon had turned the tables around, and all of a sudden, mankind had been put in a precarious position once more.

Even though they had successfully curbed the threat of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe, mankind was still unable to return to its golden era.

Had it been before the emergence of the Temple of Confucius, there would have been no way anyone would have been able to bypass the dimension barrier. However, with the destruction of the Temple of Confucius, the formation sealing the dimension barrier was growing weaker with each passing moment.

Even if they expended all of their lifespans right now to augment the barrier, it would bring them nothing more than temporary relief.

Would things have been any different if that man was there?

At this moment, Ancient Sage Yan Qing could not help but think of the Celestial Master Teacher known as Zhang Xuan.

That fellow might have been young, but he had produced miracles time and time again.

Based on what he knew, that fellow had managed to kill a deity that Sovereign Chen Ling had summoned a deity through a ritual...

If that fellow was with them, would he have been able to kill the deity before them? Would he have been able to save the Hundred Schools of Philosophers from the impending crisis that was lying just ahead of them?

“These are all futile thoughts. He isn’t here, and our relationship with him is poor...” Ancient Sage Yan Qing shook his head helplessly.

Putting aside that there was no way outsiders would be able to get in there, even if that man was there, it was likely that he

would be reluctant to help them.

While they shared the common goal of freeing mankind from the threat of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe, their difference in values had caused several clashes between one another, resulting in the deterioration of their relations.

“Even if I lose my life today, I have to save Kong Shiyao at any cost. She’s the hope of the Hundred Schools of Philosophers, so nothing bad can come to her!”

Knowing that it was meaningless to think about all that, Ancient Sage Yan Qing gathered the final dregs of his strength, hoping to launch a decisive attack that would at least buy Kong Shiyao some time to make her escape. But at this moment, a cold glint suddenly flashed through the air.

As swift as lightning, it darted right toward the deity’s throat.

“This...”

Taken aback by the sudden emergence of such an expert, Ancient Sage Yan Qing was taken aback. He hurriedly took a closer look, and a lofty figure appeared in his sight. It was a sight that he would never be able to erase from his mind.

“It’s Zhang Xuan!”

“He’s here!”

# 1893 Borrowing a Sword

Ancient Sage Yan Qing had thought that they were goners, but against all odds, the person whom they had a complicated relationship with, Zhang Xuan, suddenly appeared at this moment and charged toward the deity without any hesitation.

Looking at the splendid spearmanship that he might never be able to reach in his lifetime, Ancient Sage Yan Qing sighed deeply in embarrassment. “I guess he’s a greater master teacher than I’ll ever be. For mankind, personal grudges are nothing to him at all. I wronged him.”

For mankind, the other party was willing to bear the criticism of the world and fake his own death so as to sneak into the midst of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe and quell the threat. This spoke volumes of his character.

How could such a noble person possibly leave them in the lurch when crisis truly hit?

While Ancient Sage Yan Qing was lamenting over his own misjudgment, Kong Shiyao and the others were awestruck by Zhang Xuan’s attack. They were unable to find the words to describe how powerful that spear thrust was. It was perfectly aligned with nature, making the movements feel extremely smooth. In that instant, their pain and frailty seemed to have disappeared from their minds. The only thing that their attention was on was the beauty of the spear.

The deity floating in the air was stunned as well. He did not think that there would be such a powerful adversary in this lower dimension. In his moment of hesitation, the spear had already arrived before his throat.

Puhe!

Fresh blood splattered as the spear pierced through his skin. However, barely after entering an inch, it was as if he had struck a metal plate. No matter how hard Zhang Xuan pushed, he was unable to thrust his spear any deeper.

“I never would have thought that this scarce environment could give birth to an expert of your caliber. Not bad. Not bad at all. I’ll take you along with me too...” With a cold sneer, the deity grabbed the spear that was in his throat.

In response, Zhang Xuan swiftly flicked the spear, and it warped into a massive black dragon that wrapped itself tightly around the deity’s body.

Taken aback by this move, the deity was stunned for an instant before fury filled his mind.

How could he, an expert from the Azure, possibly be trapped by a mere being from a lower dimension? This was an insult to him!

“You’re asking for it!”

His muscles bulged out as he exerted his might in both of his arms. He was intending to crush the black dragon when a massive brick suddenly fell down from the sky and smacked him right in the face.

Peng!

Previously, Zhang Xuan had forged the Golden Origin Cauldron into a Sempiternal realm consummation artifact. Over the past month in the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe, he had allowed it to absorb the Aeon of Ancient Sage inside the painting, and it did not take long before it managed to achieve a breakthrough to Ancient Sage realm. While it was still miles away from reaching the Dimension Shatterer realm, with its astounding weight and remarkably resilient material, it was still able to inflict some damage to the deity through a direct hit on his head.

The direct hit rendered the deity momentarily dazed as a ringing sound persisted in his ear.

Just as the deity was going to blow his top, the brick suddenly spoke up. “Let me just clarify this in advance. I am not a brick but a cauldron. What struck your face was my bottom!”

Following which, the Golden Origin Cauldron did not forget to wiggle its bottom on the other party’s face to emphasize its point.

Kong Shiyao and the others were stunned by what they had just seen.

Why would such a powerful expert have such an underhanded and seemingly lewd artifact?

Furthermore, that fellow actually said that it was a cauldron...

The heck, do you even know what a cauldron is? You are obviously a brick!

There's not a single part to you that looks like a cauldron at all!

Or are we getting behind times?

"AHHH!" Feeling the cauldron rubbing its bottom on his face, the deity went berserk. "Scram!"

Boom!

A powerful shockwave burst forth from the deity, causing the Golden Origin Cauldron and the Dragonbone Divine Spear to be sent flying. The latter swiftly warped back into a spear before returning to Zhang Xuan's grasp.

Dong!

The furious deity landed a fist on the Golden Origin Cauldron's body.

"My bottom!" the Golden Origin Cauldron yelped as it spun anxiously on the ground, as if trying to reshape its dented bottom.

"You b\*stard. I've changed my mind; I'm going to slaughter you!"

The face of the deity twitched a little as he glared at Zhang Xuan. Without any hesitation, he lifted his palm and thrust it down upon the latter.

On the other hand, Zhang Xuan quickly activated the Zhang Clan's bloodline and flitted several hundred meters away in an instant. Then, he brandished his spear and charged toward the deity once more.

"Time Quintessence?"

Seeing how the young man seemingly teleported away to dodge his attack, the deity harrumphed disdainfully. He raised his hand with the intention to wrap the young man in his energy so as to seal his movements, but clanging sounds suddenly echoed in the air above at that moment. Raising his head, he could not help but narrow his eyes in alarm.

At some point, countless weapons had filled the sky, be it swords, sabers, hammers, spears... All in all, there were several hundred of them.

Huala!

Those weapons immediately descended to launch a flurry of attacks on the deity.

“Do you think that these trash weapons can hurt me?” the deity scoffed in disdain.

With a mere glance, he was able to tell that those weapons were all Great Sage artifacts. Not a single one of them had reached Ancient Sage. Putting aside defeating him, none of these weapons would even be able to pierce his skin!

“Well, I’m not banking on them hurting you either,” Zhang Xuan replied nonchalantly.

He had gathered those weapons from the Otherworldly Demons that he had killed back at the Temple of Confucius. Placed on the market, they were artifacts that were highly sought after by other cultivators, but they were insufficient to harm ordinary Ancient Sages, let alone those who were at the Dimension Shatterer realm.

“You aren’t banking on them?” The deity was slightly taken aback.

He was unable to figure out what Zhang Xuan’s intentions were.

At this moment, the deity suddenly felt a coldness beneath him once more. Lowering his head, he saw the spear from earlier warping into a black dragon once more to trap him tightly, sealing his movements for a moment.

“You...” the deity bellowed with gritted teeth.

In the end, the attack from all of those weapons was just a distraction for the spear to trap him once more!

But so what? Even if they had him trapped temporarily, there was nothing that they could do to him.

As long as he exerted his full strength, he would be able to swiftly break free from his restraints. It would be interesting to see how many times this black dragon could do this before it was broken into pieces.

While the spear had been tempered many times, its cultivation was still far beneath his. Each time it was jolted away, it would sustain significant damage. With his eye of discernment, he could tell that the spear could only do this for another five times at the very most!

Just as he was about to knock the spear away once more, the young man suddenly lowered his head and said, “You are Kong Shiyao, right? Lend me your sword.”

“My sword?” Kong Shiyao was stunned.

Nevertheless, knowing how urgent the situation was, she did not hesitate to pass her sword over.

Knowing that the young man was intending to use her sword in the battle, Kong Shiyao hurriedly said, “My sword is a treasure passed down within our Kong Clan. Those who don’t possess our bloodline won’t be able to assimilate it. If you wish to use it, I can lend you a droplet of my blood...”

This sword had been forged by one of the best blacksmiths in the Hundred Schools of Philosophers. The sword had already reached Blood Reincarnation realm consummation, a mere step away from reaching the Dimension Shatterer realm. Those who did not possess a sufficiently pure bloodline would not even be able to move the sword.

It had taken her nearly three years before she was able to assimilate the sword and use a portion of its prowess.

If the young man before her wished to use it, he would need to use her blood as a medium to temporarily tame the sword.

“We don’t have time for that now!” Zhang Xuan replied as he flicked his wrist powerfully.

Weng!

A crisp sound echoed by the sword, and the next moment, it bowed down before Zhang Xuan, almost like a loyal, domesticated dog.

“Y-you’ve already tamed it?” Kong Shiyao’s mouth widened in disbelief.

# 1894 He's Zhang Xuan

With Zhang Xuan's capabilities, taming a Blood Reincarnation realm consummation sword was a piece of cake. After assimilating the sword, he raised it high in the air and hacked it down upon the trapped deity.

Dang!

There was a resounding clang as sparks rubbed off the top of the deity's head. A layer of skin fell to the ground.

“AHHH!”

The eyes of the deity turned scarlet with rage.

On the other hand, Kong Shiyao widened her eyes as she muttered incredulously, “That's not how you are supposed to use a sword...”

The greatest strength of a sword lay in its swiftness, but that fellow actually used it as a hacking tool instead! Even the best of weapon would eventually spoil under such misuse!

Dang dang dang!

In a single breath, Zhang Xuan executed over a hundred hacks all on the same spot, causing a laceration to appear on the deity's skull. It was so deep that one could almost see his brain.

Boom!

Overflowing with the rage from being humiliated, the deity released a massive outburst of power once more and sent the Dragonbone Divine Spear flying. He turned to Zhang Xuan, intending to slaughter that arrogant young man who dared lay his hands on him, when a brick suddenly fell on his face once more.

This time, the brick descended upon the laceration on his head, causing blood to spurt out like a fountain.

“The heck!”

The deity nearly lost his mind.

That fellow's fighting style was really the epitome of underhandedness and despicableness.

We are all top-notch experts. Shouldn't you show some honor in your fighting style?

We should be crossing swords valiantly with one another instead of throwing out everything at our disposal as though we are mere ruffians... Your image is crumbling, you know!

Infuriated, the deity shook off the brick and turned his gaze once more toward Zhang Xuan, only to see that the latter had fled far away using his bloodline ability.

Trembling with rage, the deity turned his sights to Ancient Sage Yan Qing and the others and bellowed, "Since you wish to play games with me, I'll start by slaughtering the lot of them!"

He needed Kong Shiyao alive for his own purposes, but as for the other Ancient Sages, their lives meant nothing to him at all.

Thus, the deity thrust his palm downward, but once again, before his palm could connect, a spear suddenly stood in its path and halted its movements. Zhang Xuan stood right before the deity and wagged his finger provocatively. "Preying on the weak, what a formidable person you are. But I guess there's no other choice, considering that there's nothing you can do about me!"

Huala!

With a wave of his hand, Zhang Xuan sent another barrage of weapons flying toward the deity.

"What cheap taunts! But very well, I shall start with you then!" With a cold glint in his eyes, the deity began dashing forth.

His movements were not too fast, but every step that he took caused a tremendous pulsation of energy that collapsed the space in the surroundings, rendering it impossible for others to traverse across wherever he had been through.

He had to admit that his speed was lacking in comparison to Zhang Xuan, but as long as he shattered the space in the surroundings, the latter would have nowhere to escape to!

“What a distasteful move!” Zhang Xuan’s lips twitched. He turned to Ancient Sage Yan Qing and the others and said, “You lot should make use of this opportunity to recuperate and heal up. I’ll handle him for the time being!”

Following which, he began flitting away into the distance once more.

On the other hand, seeing that Zhang Xuan was fleeing into the distance once again, the deity glanced at Kong Shiyao, intending on making use of this opportunity to capture her once more.

However, as if having read his mind, Zhang Xuan suddenly turned around and launched a counterattack. The brick, sword, and spear all flew right toward him, prepared to slip in through the cracks of his defense at any moment to harass him. At the same time, several corpses flew over and exploded right in his face.

Finally, the deity reached the limits of his patience and began chasing Zhang Xuan like a crazed dog.

As long as that fellow remained alive, it would only be a matter of time before he was driven insane by the other party. It seemed like he would really have to get rid of that fellow first!

Boom boom boom!

Just like that, the two of them began on a seemingly endless chase. From time to time, the one fleeing would turn around and launch a couple of attacks before fleeing once more, leaving the one chasing more enraged than ever.

The battle between the two of them caused the whole of the Kunxu Domain to rattle ceaselessly.

...

Peng!

Yet another Scholastic Master was sent flying. Standing on the spot, Fan Xiaoxu scanned his surroundings with a forlorn look on his face, reminiscent of an expert lamenting the lack of a rival in the world. “Is there anyone else who wants to test my strength?”

Mi Xuan and the others were the first few who had rushed over to welcome the freshmen, so there were still a couple of Scholastic Masters who were not there yet. Upon hearing that a powerful freshman had arrived at the academy, they swiftly made their way over, suppressed their cultivation, and challenged the other party to a battle. To their dismay, they found that none of them were able to survive a single blow from the other party!

More importantly, Fan Xiaoxu seemed to be further refining his skills over the course of the battle, causing his fighting prowess to swiftly grow. By now, there was no one who could match him in his cultivation realm.

In fact... even those a realm stronger than him were no match for him.

“There’s no need for that. It’ll be meaningless to continue the battles at this point...” Zhong Qing shook his head and sighed deeply.

The result could not have been any clearer. None of them was a match for Fan Xiaoxu.

Fan Xiaoxu scanned the crowd around him and asked, “Then... who should I choose as my teacher?”

While he had defeated all of these Scholastic Masters, it still did not change the fact that he was only a Saint 9-dan freshman and needed a teacher to guide him around.

“I’m unqualified for the role!”

“I don’t think that I have the ability to become your teacher...”

The defeated crowd lowered their faces in embarrassment.

They would have loved more than anything to accept a powerful student as their direct disciple, but considering how

they could not even defeat the young man, what right did they have to teach him?

Anyone whom Fan Xiaoxu laid his eyes on would swiftly avert their gaze awkwardly. Some time passed, but not a single person spoke up. The surroundings were as silent as a graveyard.

Expecting such an outcome to his words, Fan Xiaoxu finally spoke up with a smile on his face. “Actually, I already have a teacher in mind, but I’m not sure if I will be able to come under his tutelage!”

Seeing a ray of hope to free themselves from this awkward situation, the Scholastic Masters in the area quickly asked, “May I know who it is?”

At this point in time, they would do anything to get out of this terribly uncomfortable situation!

“He goes by the name of Zhang Xuan. However, I’m not too sure whether that is his real name or not!” Fan Xiaoxu replied.

“Zhang Xuan? Is there anyone in the Great Phrontistry of Confucianism who goes by the surname of Zhang?” Zhong Qing was startled.

Those in the Great Phrontistry of Confucianism all came from the lineage of the Hundred Schools of Philosophers, so how could there be a ‘Zhang’ around?

Nangong Yuanfeng suddenly stepped forward and said, “That name sounds rather familiar. I do know of a Zhang Xuan in this world, but I’m not sure if we are referring to the same person.”

While not many in the Kunxu Domain would have heard of Zhang Xuan, that name was practically a household name on the Master Teacher Continent.

“Hmm?” Zhong Qing and Fan Xiaoxu quickly turned their curious gazes over.

“This man isn’t from the Hundred Schools of Philosophers. Instead, he’s a powerful master teacher from the Master Teacher Continent, as well as the head of the Zhang Clan. The

reason we failed to acquire the Celestial Amulets of Legacy back then as per the requirements of our mission was due to his interference!” Nangong Yuanfeng said.

“Ah, that Zhang Xuan?” Zhong Qing widened his eyes in realization.

The top echelons of the Hundred Schools of Philosophers had already heard about the happenings in the Temple of Confucius. Based on the information that they had received, almost everything that they had sought to obtain, be it the Canvas of Four Seasons or the Bodhi Fruit, had ended up getting stolen by him.

“How did you hear of his name?” Zhong Qing stared at the young man before him intently.

It was deeply suspicious how Fan Xiaoxu knew of Zhang Xuan’s name even though he had spent his entire life in the Kunxu Domain. There was likely something deeper to this.

“I...” Fan Xiaoxu’s body suddenly stiffened as he realized that he had just let something important slip.

All along, he had thought that Zhang Xuan was an Ancient Sage of the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism or at least someone who was close to the academy. But contrary to his expectations, it turned out that the other party was not even from the Hundred Schools of Philosophers!

That would explain why the other party had borrowed his identity in order to get in! He had really messed up.

“You’ve never left the Kunxu Domain before, so you shouldn’t have known of that name. Does this mean that... Zhang Xuan is currently in the Kunxu Domain?” Zhong Qing’s eyebrows shot up as a bad premonition struck his mind.

Considering how Fan Xiaoxu and the others had suddenly grown so much stronger, as well as the fact that they actually knew of Zhang Xuan’s name, the most logical deduction that he could think of was that the renowned master teacher of the Master Teacher Continent had somehow managed to find his way into the Kunxu Domain!

“That...”

Fan Xiaoxu was in a quandary. He had no idea how he should respond in such a situation, but it turned out that he did not have to.

A split moment later, a deafening rumbling echoed in the air, and the clear sky began to collapse into a void.

Everyone hurriedly raised their heads in alarm, only to see two figures fighting one another in the air. Each time they clashed with one another, a gorge formed in the sky that extended over several li. Lightning rained down so furiously that it seemed as if the world would soon collapse under the devastation.

“Who the hell are you?” a person with blood dripping down his head bellowed with gritted teeth.

“Your grandfather, Zhang Xuan!” the other person replied gleefully.

“He’s Zhang Xuan?”

Everyone was stunned.

# 1895 I Have a Younger Brother

Words could not begin to describe how agitated Fan Xiaoxu felt at that very moment.

He had guessed that Zhang Xuan was an Ancient Sage, but he did not think that the other party would be that powerful among the Ancient Sages. After all, if the other party was truly that powerful, there should not have been any need for the other party to borrow his identity in order to get into the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism.

But at that very moment, the sheer might he produced seemed to be too great for even the heavens to contain. It was as if he was a being that had risen above the rules of the world!

Peng peng peng!

As the two of them crossed blows with one another, lacerations emerged one after another in the sky. The folded space containing the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism was placed under huge strain, and it seemed as if the entire folded space would collapse at any moment.

“H-he’s Zhang Xuan? You actually competed with him back then?” Zhong Qing gulped down a mouthful of saliva as he turned to look at Nangong Yuanfeng.

“Back then, he passed himself off as a member of the Luo Clan, assuming the name of Luo Tianya. However, based on what I heard afterward, he’s indeed Zhang Xuan...” Nangong Yuanfeng nodded as he could not help but tremble in the face of Zhang Xuan’s incredible might.

It had at most been just a few months since he had last seen the young man, right?

When in the world did he become so powerful?

Not even the great Ancient Sage Yan Qing possessed such tremendous strength! If this was the power that the young man

had wielded back then, he could have been killed with just a simple flick of the young man's finger. It seemed like the young man had truly been merciful to him!

Si la!

In his moment of shock, the fighting duo had already torn through the space of the Great Phrontistery of Confucianism and vanished from sight.

The next moment, the two of them were standing above a vast mountain range.

Over there, the examinees who had just cleared the test were trying their best to decipher the formation on the jade tokens that they had been given when a loud rumble suddenly echoed in the sky. They raised their heads, and they were welcomed with a sight that they would never forget in their entire life.

Two experts bathed in lightning were clashing intensely with one another. Every strike from them made the entire world tremble. It was almost as if the end of the world had arrived!

One of them had a head completely bathed in crimson blood, and he had a frenzied expression on his face that looked as if he would blow up from all of the rage that he had accumulated within. On the other hand, the other young man had a composed smile on his lips, and he brandished the sword in his grasp with grace.

“Are the two of them Ancient Sages?”

“There's probably no one in the world who commands such tremendous strength other than the Ancient Sages!”

“But why would the two Ancient Sages be fighting with one another? It looks as if they are fighting one another to the death!”

“I don't know either. They might have some grudge with one another...”

A huge commotion broke out beneath.

With fists clenched tightly by their sides, the examinees stared at the majestic battle unfolding before them with envy in their eyes.

This was what they had been cultivating all their lives for!

From the moment they took the first whiff of spiritual energy into their body and converted it into zhenqi, it had already become their lifelong pursuit to acquire greater strength.

The tremendous strength that was right before their eyes could be said to be their terminal goal. It represented the top of the world to them.

“Don’t you dare hurt our teacher!”

At this moment, two voices reverberated in the air before two youths younger than them rushed into the air.

The lightning in the air immediately became even more intense.

Astonishingly, the person with his head bathed in blood was able to stand his ground even when faced with three opponents simultaneously. After crossing several blows, the two youths who had just joined the fray were sent crashing to the ground.

“You aren’t a match for him, so don’t come over anymore. Don’t worry; leave him to me!” Zhang Xuan said.

At the same time, he flicked his wrist and leaped into a dimension rift, disappearing from sight.

“Where do you think you’re going?” The deity immediately chased after Zhang Xuan, determined not to allow the latter get away.

Just like that, the two of them vanished from sight.

If not for the countless lacerations in space left in the sky as a result of their fight, they would have thought that everything that they had seen a moment ago was just a dream.

...

“You said that they are very likely powerful experts?”

The head of the Stone Village looked at the village belle, Xiu Ru, and he shook his head. “How could that be possible? If they are really as powerful as you’ve made them out to be, do you think that it’s possible for them to maintain such

politeness with us and even offer to compensate us for the losses in our fields?”

It was as if the village belle’s mind had not been working right ever since she returned from the short journey with those three guests. As soon as she returned, she had gone around telling everyone that the three guests that had been there not too long ago were actually Saint realm experts.

Of course, there was no one in the Stone Village who would believe such ludicrous news.

There was no way that a Saint realm expert would be so courteous to them, going to the extent of offering to compensate for their losses. Besides, if they were really Saint realm experts, they could have just flown all the way to Fan City! Why would they waste their time riding on Xiu Ru’s tamed aerial spirit beast?

In their view, Saint realm experts were domineering and authoritative. They were beings so far above them that even crossing them would have warranted the death penalty. They simply could not imagine an amiable Saint realm cultivator!

“It’s true. Why won’t any of you believe me? I saw them flying in the sky without any external support with my own eyes, and they flew at an incredible speed!” Xiu Ru exclaimed in exasperation.

It was so frustrating to see everyone acting as if she was blabbering gibberish.

She was certain that she had seen the three of them vanishing right before her eyes! While she had found it unbelievable at first, she was convinced that they were definitely Saint realm experts!

Had she known that they were Saint realm experts right from the start, she would not have acted so haughtily. Instead, she would have humbly asked for their guidance in her cultivation.

“I know that you have great ambitions in mind, but Saint realm experts only exist within major clans. People like us will never get a chance to see them at all...” The village head sighed deeply as he tried to console Xiu Ru.

But at that very moment, the deafening rumbling of thunder filled the air.

Everyone quickly raised their heads, and what came into their sights were two figures shrouded in lightning.

They were crossing blows intensely with one another, and every strike they dashed out tore the fabric of space apart, causing dark rifts to appear all around the surroundings.

“Isn’t that young man...”

Recognizing one of the two figures in the sky, the villagers widened their eyes in shock.

It was certain that the young man equipped with a spear fighting in the air was the person whom they had welcomed into their village not too long ago!

The village belle had just said that they could very well be Saint realm experts, and they had thought that it was ridiculous. But what they were witnessing had already far exceeded what Saints or even Great Sages could achieve!

“H-he... He is actually an Ancient Sage!” The village head felt his throat turning dry as he spoke.

Even though they were only ordinary villagers who were unqualified to cultivate, they did hear a fair bit about the various cultivation realms and the strength that they commanded.

Not even the esteemed Great Sages in the top echelon of the Hundred Schools of Philosophers could summon such tremendous might. The young man in the sky was definitely an Ancient Sage, and a very powerful one at that!

“I actually journeyed together with an Ancient Sage... But not only did I neglect to learn from him, I even... scorned him?” The village belle, Xiu Ru, nearly burst into tears at the realization.

For the longest time, she had desired to acquire higher cultivation techniques to advance her cultivation, but when the opportunity presented itself, she had actually allowed it to slip through her fingers due to her arrogance.

Even though she was highly-regarded in the village, she knew that someone of her caliber would never be able to catch the sight of an Ancient Sage.

In an instant, her guts turned green from regret.

...

On that very day, almost everyone in the Hundred Schools of Philosophers witnessed the intense fight in the sky between those two top experts, and their silhouettes were imprinted deep in their minds.

Even tens of thousands of years later, the incident would remain an undying legend.

Why can't I find anywhere that's empty? Zhang Xuan frowned with a troubled look on his face.

He did not run about just to show off his strength; it was just that he was unable to find a sufficiently remote place to release all of his finishers at once. The world that the Hundred Schools of Philosophers lived in was simply too crowded!

He did not like the idea of exposing his trump cards even to his own comrades.

Thus, he could only continuously retreat while fending the deity off.

Some time later, they finally arrived at a relatively empty mountain range.

"Finally..." Zhang Xuan heaved a sigh of relief.

It seemed like effort did pay off in the end.

He quickly threw down a bunch of formation flags and sealed the surroundings so as to prevent his aura from leaking out.

"Oh? You aren't going to run anymore? I assume that you have resigned yourself to your fate," the deity scoffed when he saw that the young man was not escaping anymore.

He had not been blindly chasing Zhang Xuan around. During his pursuit, he had been able to fully ascertain the extent of Zhang Xuan's abilities, and he was confident that he would be

able to kill the latter easily as long as the latter stopped running away.

“Resigned myself to my fate? Aren’t you jumping too quickly to conclusions? Well, it just happens that I have a twin brother who wishes to meet you...”

As Zhang Xuan said those words, he flicked his wrist.

Hu!

A figure identical to Zhang Xuan appeared right next to him.

# 1896 Slaying a Deity

“Twin brother?” Seeing the appearance of another figure with an identical appearance and soul aura, the deity was stunned for a moment before a knowing smile crept onto his lips. “This is your clone, right? Spectacularly made, I must say. For a clone to possess strength identical to the main body, it must have been made using some kind of invaluable material. Wonderful, I shall claim it for myself!”

There were cultivators in the Azure who created their own clones to augment their fighting prowess, but most of them were just lookalike puppets that were similar to the main body in form.

The clone that was standing right before him actually possessed a unique soul! This meant that the material used to create the clone was of extremely high quality, even by the standards of the Azure. If he could acquire such a treasure for himself and forge his own clone, his fighting prowess would effectively double in an instant!

With reddened eyes, he pointed at the clone in front of him and spoke with quivering lips. “From this day forth, you shall be mine as well...”

Boom!

Torrential energy poured out toward Zhang Xuan’s clone, but before it could even reach the latter, the deity saw a blur in his field of vision.

Before he knew it, the clone was already standing in front of him, and a leg was flying toward his face. With a haughty look on his face, the clone demanded, “Who the hell are you? The likes of you actually think that you would be able to tame me?”

“You...” With twitching lips, the deity swiftly grabbed the clone’s leg to stop the attack when the latter’s other leg came flying from the opposite direction.

Peng!

Just like that, the deity was knocked back as his cheekbone sunk inward from the powerful impact.

“What? How is this possible?” The deity was stunned by the earlier strike.

It was not due to the damage that he had sustained but by the sheer disbelief at how powerful the kick had been.

The clones that he had seen thus far had always been weaker than the main body, but why would this person’s clone be even stronger than the main body itself? How in the world did this even work?

It was illogical!

“You sure make a huge fuss out of nothing. My main body is a weakling, so how could he begin to compare to me?” The clone smirked as he charged toward the deity once more, whipping his leg over at a terrifying speed.

As Zhang Xuan had been suppressing his cultivation, he was still at Sempiternal realm consummation. However, it was different for the clone. As a God artifact, there was no need for him to suppress his cultivation at all. A month ago, he had already pushed for a breakthrough to Ancient Sage using the Aeon of Ancient Sage, making him a full-fledged Blood Reincarnation realm expert.

Even when they were in the same cultivation realm, Zhang Xuan was no match for his clone, let alone the fact that there was a gap of three entire realms between them. If Zhang Xuan had a fight with his clone, he would barely be able to protect himself with the Dragonbone Divine Spear in hand.

Slowly, the surprised look on the deity warped into feverish excitement as he began laughing maniacally. “Hahahahaha! The heavens are really shining on me! Now I am more determined than ever to make you mine!”

With a piercing cry, he leaped forward to meet the clone’s attack. He gathered all of his strength together in order to suppress this showoff of a clone once and for all when a shadow was suddenly cast over him.

He hurriedly retreated in alarm before looking upward. It was a massive book. Following which, a pitch-black palm shot out from the book and darted right for his face.

Pah!

This strike caused him to spin around twice on the spot as fresh blood spewed all over the area.

“What the heck is this?”

The deity was a little astonished by all of the trump cards that Zhang Xuan had up his sleeves.

Just what other things did the other party have in store? First the spear, the sword, and the brick, and shortly after, the clone... and now, a book was joining the battle.

More importantly, he could sense incredible pulsations of energy coming from within the book. There was some kind of existence that possessed strength comparable to him sealed within!

Hu!

In that moment of astonishment, Zhang Xuan charged forward with a spear in his left hand and a sword in his right hand. Brandishing the two weapons with surprising coordination, he was actually able to throw the deity into a fluster for a brief moment through the bizarre combination of attacks.

Meanwhile, his clone and Vicious quickly rushed forward to further pressure the deity.

Peng peng peng peng!

Under the relentless assault, it did not take long for the deity to be struck by several hundred times, and the impact sustained caused his bones to shatter and internal organs to shift. There was not a spot on his body that remained unharmed.

“No, this can’t be happening...”

For the first time throughout the entire battle, the deity tasted fear.

He had rushed over when he noticed the weakening of the dimension barrier because he had thought that he would be

able to acquire some rare treasures, but who could have known that he would end up being cornered in this lower dimension?

Even Zhang Xuan himself was already a tricky opponent to deal with, let alone having to simultaneously cope with another two experts who boasted strength similar to his. How could he win against such a lineup?

In the depths of his heart, the deity began to despair. He knew that he could not allow the battle to continue any further. He had to escape.

Thus, he gathered all of his energy seemingly with the intention to launch a desperate counterattack, causing the other three to immediately go on the defensive. However, it was, in fact, a feint. With no one tying him down, he immediately turned tail and ran away.

However, before he could get far, the world suddenly turned dark. He barely had time to glance upward before a massive brick crushed down on his head once more.

It was as if this fellow had been biding his time in the sky all along, waiting for the ideal opportunity to smash his face!

Peng!

While this smash did not deal a fatal blow to the deity, it did throw him off for a moment. This momentary lapse in attention turned out to be his undoing. The next instant, a spear and a sword pierce through his chest. Right after, a fist smashed right into his head, and a black hand stabbed into his heart.

Putong!

Even down to his last breath, there was an incredulous look on the deity's face, as if he could not believe that a superior being like him had been defeated by mere ants. As the last breath escaped his lips, his body grew limp, and he began plummeting from the sky.

It would be a waste to leave the blood and body of an expert of such caliber lying around, Zhang Xuan thought as he quickly stowed the corpse of the deity into the Myriad Anthive Nest.

Following which, he heaved a deep sigh of relief. The battle was finally over.

No matter what, the enemy that he had faced was a true Dimension Shatterer realm expert. Had he made any mistakes over the course of the battle, he would have been destroyed in an instant. As such, he had pushed his concentration to its very limits throughout the entire duration.

Nevertheless, the rewards from the battle were well worth the fight. The deity's blood and body would surely prove vital for his breakthrough to Ancient Sage in the future.

Placing his clone and Vicious back into the Myriad Anthive Nest, Zhang Xuan turned his sight to the mountain range where the void was and stared silently for a moment before making his way back.

...

On the elevated platform in the midst of the mountain range, Ancient Sage Yan Qing finally struggled to his feet. He looked at the massive rifts around him with a worried look on his face.

At that moment, Kong Shiyao suddenly flew over and asked, "Ancient Sage Yan Qing, was that young man the Celestial Master Teacher you previously mentioned, Zhang Xuan?"

Having overexerted her bloodline ability, her face was horrifyingly pale as well. It took everything she had just to maintain her flight.

"That's right," Ancient Sage Yan Qing replied with a nod.

"He's truly an extraordinary individual..." Kong Shiyao nodded in awe.

She had been blessed with a powerful bloodline at birth, so there had been no one who was able to compete with her in terms of talent. She had been confident that there was no one beneath Ancient Sage who would be stronger than her, but from the earlier battle, it was clear that the young man's fighting prowess exceeded even hers.

Ever since she heard of Zhang Xuan's existence, she had been wanting to meet and compete with him. She had thought that she could have a duel with him after achieving a breakthrough to Ancient Sage. However, from the looks of it, there was no need for that.

Even after using her bloodline ability, she had been unable to stop the deity's movements. On the other hand, the young man was able to battle the deity on equal footing and even lure him away. It was apparent from this that there was a gap between their abilities.

"There's no denying that Zhang Xuan is formidable, but he's still lacking in comparison to the deity from the Azure. I fear that he's in peril!" one of the Ancient Sages remarked worriedly.

"Given our current condition, there's nothing we can do to help him. Even stabilizing the formation is impossible for us at the moment..."

The Ancient Sages had already been reduced to a skeletal rack at the moment, and they would die soon enough without any Aeon of Ancient Sage to replenish his energy. Given their states, there was nothing that they could do to help.

Knowing this, Ancient Sage Yan Qing also shook his head.

While the deity had been lured away by Zhang Xuan, it did not mean that the danger was over. The formation that was sustained by Ancient Sage Zi Yuan's corpse had been opened, and the mercury-like energy was rapidly pouring in. If they did not seal the rifts quickly, everyone in the Kunxu Domain would soon die from taking in that incredibly heavy energy.

Their entire populace was at stake!

"It's fortunate that this energy doesn't diffuse too quickly due to its weight. What's more urgent is for us to get rid of that deity, or else anything we do will be futile!" Kong Shiyao said.

As long as they sealed their acupoints, they would be able to bear with the mercury-like energy in the short-term. However, as long as the deity remained alive, his existence would be like

a guillotine hanging right above them, ready to snap down at any moment.

“You’re right. Even at the cost of our lives, we must eradicate that deity...”

Everyone nodded grimly in agreement. Gathering the last bits of their strength, they were going to move in the direction that Zhang Xuan had disappeared in when a young man approached with a nonchalant look on his face.

He was dressed in a clean white robe that was completely devoid of dust. There was no hint of blood or wounds on his body, making it seem as if he had left earlier not to battle but to go on a leisurely holiday.

Who else could that young man be other than Zhang Xuan?

“Y-you’re fine? What happened to the deity? Did you... kill him?” everyone asked anxiously.

# 1897 Repairing the Formation

“As you can see, I’m perfectly fine,” Zhang Xuan replied with a smile. “As for the deity, you need not worry about him anymore.”

On his way here, he had washed himself with clear water to quickly clean up a little before switching into a fresh set of clothes. Even though he had not sustained any injuries, he had sweated a fair bit over the course of the battle, and the feeling of fabric clinging stickily to his skin felt very uncomfortable to him.

Time ticked by in silence. It was quite a while before the crowd was able to take in the news that the young man had successfully gotten rid of the deity, and looks of awe appeared on their faces.

To defeat a person so powerful without sustaining any injuries, the young man was frighteningly powerful!

Taking a deep breath to recover from his shock, Ancient Sage Yan Qing took a look at the rifts around him before looking at Zhang Xuan with an awkward expression on his face. “Zhang shi, I understand that you have unique insights into formations, so may I trouble you to mend our formation for us?”

He knew that the current Hundred Schools of Philosophers lacked the ability to mend the shattered formation, but the young man before him should be able to pull it off.

It was just that the young man was an outsider... and the relations between them could not be said to be amicable. Furthermore, it was just a moment ago that the young man had done them a huge favor by luring away the deity and getting rid of him despite the risks, so he could not help but feel a little embarrassed for relying so much on the other party.

“It’s no trouble at all, but do you have the blueprint and repair method for the formation?” Zhang Xuan asked.

This was the first time that he had seen a formation like this. Using the corpse of Ancient Sage Zi Yuan as its core to seal the passageway leading to a higher dimension, its complexity was way beyond any of the formations that he had seen before.

Even he would have had difficulties trying to set it up without the blueprint.

“We do,” Ancient Sage Yan Qing replied as he passed a jade token over. “Recorded in here is the structure of the formation, as well as the notes that generations of our predecessors have made while repairing the formation!”

Taking the jade token, Zhang Xuan quickly scanned through its contents. It did not take long for him to have the entire formation in his grasp.

The name of this formation was very literal, Floating Coffin Heaven Mending Formation. It was said to have been created by Kong shi himself in order to seal up the passageway linking the higher dimension to their world. Once it was in place, even Dimension Shatterer realm cultivators would have trouble trying to breach it.

Is he going to attempt to mend the formation after learning it on the spot? Could it be that... his talents in his supporting occupation are on par with mine? Is he able to master anything within moments of coming into contact with it, too? Kong Shiyao frowned in intrigue.

Possessing the purest bloodline of Kong shi, her ability to absorb new information was amazing. Be it for a supporting occupation or a battle technique, she could understand and master it swiftly after learning the principles behind it. She did not have to devote too much time to refining her skills.

It was bewildering to her how the young man had the confidence to accept their request without any hesitation despite having never seen the formation before. It could not be that he possessed the same talents as her, could it?

But even if he has talents comparable to mine, such a complex formation should at least take him two to three days to master. Will he be able to make it in time at this rate? Kong Shiyao thought worriedly as she looked at the mercury-like energy gushing in from the rifts.

Recalling the fact that the young man was a Celestial Master Teacher just like Kong shi, it should not come as any surprise that the young man was extraordinary. However, there were still limits to what a human could achieve within a limited timeframe.

The Floating Coffin Heaven Mending Formation was so complicated that it had taken her three days before she was able to grasp how the entire system worked. Even if the young man was more gifted and could grasp new information two times swifter than her, he still would not be able to mend the formation in time!

The mercury-like energy had only suffused the elevated platform that they were on, but at the current rate it was flowing out, it would drown at least a third of the Kunxu Domain's land by the end of the day. That would cause a rapid change in the quality of the spiritual energy within the world, and the Greensprout Wheat that they had cultivated with great difficulty would swiftly die off.

Everything that the Hundred Schools of Philosophers had built up over the past tens of thousands of years would be reduced to nothing!

Then, everything would be for naught even if they did manage to repair the formation.

Besides, they were betting on the possibility that the young man would have some way to repair it, but that was unjustified optimism on their part. It could be said that making this request to the young man was really a last-ditch gamble.

But as Kong Shiyao continued looking on worriedly, she saw Zhang Xuan passing the jade token back to her. Following which, he turned to the crowd with a confident smile on his face. "I'm going to begin the repairs now, so please step back."

Hearing those words, Kong Shiyao blinked blankly.

She raised her right hand and swiftly counted, three breaths...  
Had he really grasped the formation in just three breaths?

Under her bewildered stare, the young man began moving. He opened his fingers wide and pumped his zhenqi toward the sky like a rapid current, swiftly forming illusory bridges of a myriad colors across the void.

Standing in the very middle of those seemingly divine bridges, Zhang Xuan looked as if he was the ruler of the world.

He gently moved his finger to maneuver those illusory bridges, reminiscent of a demonic tunesmith performing a moving melody. Along with his movements, a faint but beautiful humming from the wind could be heard.

Is that... the Voice of the Heavens? Kong Shiyao trembled.

Legend had it that if anyone achieved the level of perfect harmony with the heavens, no matter which occupation they were from, the Voice of the Heavens would emerge. The young man had only browsed through the blueprint for three breaths, but not only did he manage to grasp the formation perfectly, he was even able to elevate it to a much higher level.

Was she really so lacking compared to him?

But she was the descendant of the legendary Kong shi, possessing a bloodline that none could match!

With deep indignation, she looked on and saw Zhang Xuan's fingers moving faster and faster, and it did not take long for afterimages to appear in the midst of his movements. The illusory bridges danced elegantly in the air, crossing one another to swiftly form an intricate design.

He's speeding up? Isn't he afraid of making a mistake? Kong Shiyao shuddered at the sheer speed that Zhang Xuan was moving at.

Given the complexity of the formation, she had thought that even if Zhang Xuan could comprehend it, he would need their help to form the primary structure to seal off the inflow of the

mercury-like energy before slowly reinforcing it. All in all, she had expected the entire process to take a whole month.

However, at that moment, Zhang Xuan's hands were moving so quickly that she could hardly keep up with them anymore. If he made a single mistake, not only would his previous work be unraveled, he would also suffer a severe backlash from the formation.

A few breaths passed, but not only did Zhang Xuan's movements not slow down, they continued still to grow swifter.

Unable to stand the tension any longer, Kong Shiyao flicked her wrist and took out a mirror. She gently reflected it against Zhang Xuan.

This mirror was a family heirloom passed down in the Kong Clan, and it was known as the Profound Empyrean Mirror. Through analyzing the intensity of the pulsations of energy coming from the formation, it was able to determine whether the formation master's movements were correct or not. If the formation master's movements were correct, the characters '正确 (Correct)' would be reflected in the mirror, and a white light would emanate from its surface. Incorrect, and the characters '错误 (Wrong)' would be reflected, with black light emanating from its surface.

Weng weng weng!

Upon reflecting Zhang Xuan's silhouette, the Profound Empyrean Mirror immediately emanated a brilliant white glow as lines and lines of characters swiftly flowed across its surface.

正确 (Correct)!

正确 (Correct)!

正确 (Correct)...

As the Profound Empyrean Mirror in her hand got filled up with the characters 正确 (Correct), its surface glowed so

brightly that it seemed to become a mini sun that blinded everyone in the surroundings.

This... Kong Shiyao's lips quivered in disbelief.

She had seen plenty of geniuses in her lifetime, and she was one herself. But to master such a complex formation within three breaths and repair it so quickly without making the slightest mistake... was that young man really a human?

Hu!

Her astonishment did not last for long before the fingers of the young man in the air came to an abrupt halt.

He gracefully placed his hands behind his back before gazing into the void.

“What’s wrong? The formation’s repairs mustn’t be halted halfway through, or else you will have to start anew!” Kong Shiyao yelled anxiously.

The formation was not just complex; the repairs must also be finished at a single go. Otherwise, if there was even a momentary interruption in between, the mercury-like energy would swiftly crush everything that had been built thus far.

This was similar to repairing a dam. One had to finish the repairs in a single shot, or else any weakness in the structure would swiftly be exploited by the accumulated water, eventually resulting in a leakage.

“Hmm? I didn’t halt the repairs halfway.” Hearing those words, Zhang Xuan glanced at Kong Shiyao and replied, “I have already finished the repairs!”

“You have already finished?” Kong Shiyao was taken aback.

Given that Ancient Sage Zi Yuan’s body was still with her and the mercury-like energy was still flowing through, how could this be considered as a completed repair job?

Noticing Kong Shiyao’s incomprehension, Zhang Xuan chuckled softly. He looked at the void above once and commanded, “Activate!”

Hong long!

The coffin beside Kong Shiyao immediately soared into the void and vanished, and the surrounding space was swiftly stabilized. All of the rifts were mended in an instant, and it looked as if nothing had happened there at all.

The formation had actually activated under his command!

The Word of Law... Isn't that the Kong Clan's bloodline ability? Kong Shiyao could not believe what she was seeing.

# 1898 The Prowess of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe

To be able to repair the formation with a single word, could it be that the other party possessed the same bloodline as her, allowing him to use the Word of Law ability?

But very soon, Kong Shiyao realized that was not the case.

While the move that Zhang Xuan had used appeared similar to the Word of Law, there were some differences between the two. To be more exact, it was a more advanced use of the Impartation of Heaven's Will.

However, this Floating Coffin Heaven Mending Formation harnessed the energies of the heavens, so even activating it manually was extremely grueling. How could it possibly be so easily swayed by the Impartation of Heaven's Will?

Ancient Sage Yan Qing, who harbored the same doubts in his mind, swiftly posed the question to Zhang Xuan.

"Well, the formation blueprint you gave me had quite a few problems, so I made some corrections while I was setting up the formation," Zhang Xuan replied with a smile.

"Corrections?" Kong Shiyao's body froze in shock. "That's not possible. This formation was created by Kong shi himself, so there's no way there could have been any flaws in it!"

How could there be any imperfections in the things left behind by Kong shi?

"Well, the formation that Kong shi created didn't have any flaws... The problems originated from the huge changes in the Kunxu Domain in the past tens of thousands of years. The formation that Kong shi created is no longer optimal given the current environment in the Kunxu Domain. Otherwise, you wouldn't have to keep repairing it generation after generation," Zhang Xuan said.

There was nothing in the world that time could not erode.

Without a doubt, the Kunxu Domain from tens of thousands of years back was bound to have been very different from what they saw before them. Since even the world had changed, how could formations remain flawless without adapting to the changes?

Those words rendered Kong Shiyao speechless as shock swept through her mind once more.

The young man's words did make perfect sense... but this was Kong Shi's formation they were talking about. The young man had actually modified Kong Shi's formation!

Furthermore, he had even succeeded in doing so!

Kong Shiyao felt as if the world was whirling around her.

All along, she had never doubted her own talent. She had felt that there was nothing that she was incapable of as long as she gave it her all. However, compared to the monster before her, she felt like she could sprint for her entire life and never catch up with him.

On the other hand, seeing that the mercury-like energy had been completely sealed away, Zhang Xuan heaved a sigh of relief. He turned his gaze away from the stupefied Kong Shiyao to the relatively calmer Ancient Sage Yan Qing and said, "I guess the situation is stable for the time being. Ancient Sage Yan Qing. May I trouble you to explain the situation to me?"

He felt like Kong Shiyao was making a huge fuss out of nothing. It was as if she had never seen the larger world out there before.

Taking twenty breaths to set up this formation was really no remarkable feat at all. If anything, it was rather slow. If he had achieved a breakthrough to Ancient Sage, such a thing would not have taken him two breaths!

"... Zhang Shi, what do you think of that heavy energy from earlier? Do you think that you will be able to absorb and assimilate it into your body?" Ancient Sage Yan Qing replied with another question.

Zhang Xuan pondered for a moment before replying. “The heavy energy shares some commonalities with spiritual energy, but its sheer weight makes it impossible for anyone from the Master Teacher Continent to absorb. If I absorb it, the chances are that my meridians will collapse as a result of the weight.”

Hearing those words, Ancient Sage Yan Qing sighed deeply before saying with a bitter smile, “I see... To be honest with you, that heavy energy is the spiritual energy from the Azure!”

“Spiritual energy from the Azure?”

“That’s right. Have you ever wondered why the beings from the Azure are so much more powerful than us? That’s because the spiritual energy they absorb is very different from ours. It’s much more condensed, and being constantly exposed to it has tempered their constitution to the point that even their younglings wield tremendous fighting prowess at birth!”

Ancient Sage Yan Qing explained.

“They actually absorb that heavy spiritual energy? Is it really alright for them to do so?” Zhang Xuan was stunned.

Even with his Blood Reincarnation realm prowess, he felt as if his internal organs would be crushed if he absorbed just a bit of it. Were the natives of the Azure really able to absorb such heavy energy without suffering any backlash?

“Follow me!” Seeing the look on Zhang Xuan’s face, Ancient Sage Yan Qing turned around and beckoned Zhang Xuan to come along with him. Gritting his teeth to endure the frailty he felt, he headed off in a certain direction.

He had lost too much blood in the earlier battle, such that he had nearly expended all of his vitality. Even though he was still breathing, he did not have much time left.

The two of them flew for quite a while before arriving at a tightly-sealed palace. Ancient Sage Yan Qing pushed open the door of the palace and walked in. There was an Isolation Formation within the palace, and in the Isolation Formation was a massive metal cage. Zhang Xuan could not quite tell

what material it was made of, but there were runic inscriptions all over it.

Two youths were imprisoned in the metal cage. Upon seeing Ancient Sage Yan Qing, their eyes immediately narrowed in fury. If they could, there was no doubt that they would have killed Ancient Sage Yan Qing.

Zhang Xuan swiftly assessed the two youths and noticed that they were both Sempiternal realm consummation experts, just a step away from reaching Ancient Sage. In terms of disposition and strength, they did not pale in comparison to Yan Xue!

“Why did you lock them inside the cage?” Zhang Xuan asked doubtfully.

While the Hundred Schools of Philosophers had strayed from Kong shi’s ideal of education without discrimination, Zhang Xuan could tell that they were not the type to harm others without any justification.

Could those two have committed some kind of heinous crime?

“Zhang shi, are you able to tell who they are?” Ancient Sage Yan Qing asked.

Hearing that question, Zhang Xuan frowned. Based on the other party’s words, it seemed like he was expected to know these two youths, so he took a closer look at them. However, he was still unable to figure out their identities, so he eventually shook his head.

“They are Otherworldly Demons!” Ancient Sage Yan Qing replied.

Those words made Zhang Xuan freeze on the spot. “They are Otherworldly Demons? How can that be? Could it be that they are Otherworldly Demon Emperors in disguise?”

The Otherworldly Demons’ Zhenqi of Slaughter was so overpowering that it was impossible to disregard it. The two youths standing before him were releasing no killing intent at all, so how could they be Otherworldly Demons?

Could it be that they were Otherworldly Demon Emperors who had used some kind of special means to disguise themselves?

But that should not be either. Except for Luo Ruoxin's disguise amulet, there was no disguise that had been able to escape his Eye of Insight thus far.

He was certain that the two youths before him were not disguised; they were in their natural form.

"I know that you have your doubts, but they are really Otherworldly Demons. They absorbed the heavy energy earlier and turned into their current states," Ancient Sage Yan Qing replied.

"This..." Zhang Xuan's body shook in astonishment.

He was still wondering whether that mercury-like energy could be absorbed or not, but it turned out that it was so powerful that it could even turn Otherworldly Demons into humans. Was this for real?

Hu!

Without explaining himself, Ancient Sage Yan Qing stepped forward and flicked his wrist. The mercury-like energy from the elevated platform earlier immediately gushed toward the two youths in the cage.

In response to the arrival of this unique energy, the two youths did not show the slightest hint of fear. Instead, their eyes lit up in excitement as they swiftly sat down, opened their acupoints, and absorbed the energy.

As the energy flowed into their bodies, it immediately began to billow like boiling water. Their aura and energies swiftly grew more and more condensed.

It's really possible, Zhang Xuan thought as he clenched his fists tightly together.

The Otherworldly Demons were actually able to absorb the mercury-like energy that even he was unable to absorb, and it increased their rate of cultivation a frightening degree.

He immediately turned to Ancient Sage Yan Qing, hoping to receive answers about this curious observation from the other party.

“This has something to do with one’s innate constitution. As long as one’s innate constitution is sufficiently strong, one will be able to adapt to the heavy energy and assimilate it into one’s body. The innate constitution of the Otherworldly Demons is far stronger than that of humans. Just the fact that they are blessed with the strength of a Transcendental Mortal at birth speaks volumes. Nevertheless, of the ten I have experimented on, these are the only two survivors!” Ancient Sage Yan Qing said.

“Furthermore, I have tested this on over ten thousand men over the past year, but none of them survived in the end!”

Hearing those words, Zhang Xuan’s face warped in horror.

What he was horrified by was not Ancient Sage Yan Qing’s callousness but the significance of what he had just said.

He had thought that while Otherworldly Demons had a head start in front of humans due to their innate constitution, they would be on equal footing with one another in the later stages. However, it seemed like the rift was much wider than he had thought...

If this mercury-like energy one day covered the entire Master Teacher Continent, would mankind not go extinct and the Otherworldly Demons rise in power?

Alarmed by this notion, Zhang Xuan asked, “Is this why Kong shi used Ancient Sage Zi Yuan’s corpse to create that massive formation to block the dimension passageway? Is it all to prevent the heavy energy from leaking into this world?”

# 1899 The Origin of Aeon of Ancient Sage

“That’s right!” Ancient Sage Yan Qing nodded in response. “When Kong shi first noticed the Kunxu Domain, it was nothing more than an ordinary passageway between the Master Teacher Continent and the Azure. The heavy energy that lingered in it wasn’t too great then, but he swiftly realized that while humans would quickly lose their lives upon absorbing it, there was a chance that Otherworldly Demons could survive the assimilation of the energy and become tremendously stronger as a result of that. That was also how Vicious came about!

“In order to prevent mankind from being destroyed, Ancient Sage Zi Yuan willingly gave up his life to become the crux of the Floating Coffin Heaven Mending Formation that we have now!”

Nodding in realization, Zhang Xuan recalled another thing that he had noticed in the Kunxu Domain and asked, “What about the Greensprout Wheat and the superior constitution of the ordinary populace?”

Knowing what Zhang Xuan was asking, Ancient Sage Yan Qing replied, “After years of research, Kong shi found that the main reason why there was a chance for some Otherworldly Demons to survive the assimilation of the heavy energy was due to their superior innate constitution. This realization highlighted the importance of enhancing the average constitution of humans, but Kong shi knew very well that the enhancement of an entire race’s constitution was bound to be a long battle. It’s impossible to make significant advancement within a short period of time.

“One of the key factors that Kong shi identified that would effectively enhance the constitution of an entire race was their diet. As such, he entrusted Ancient Sage Zi Chi and his descendants with the responsibility of developing a crop that

could achieve this effect. After many years of trial and error, they eventually successfully nurtured the Greensprout Wheat. This crop has the effect of continuously cleansing and enhancing one's constitution, and after tens of thousands of years of nourishment, there was indeed significant growth in the constitution of the Hundred Schools of Philosophers. Unfortunately, we are still a long way off from matching the constitution of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe, and we are still unable to directly absorb the heavy energy!"

Zhang Xuan nodded in enlightenment. The doubts that he had harbored previously had all been cleared up.

It was no wonder the Hundred Schools of Philosophers had suddenly disappeared from the Master Teacher Continent. It turned out that they had devoted themselves to protecting the seal in the Kunxu Domain so as to prevent the mercury-like energy from leaking out.

At the same time, they viewed it as their mission to nurture stronger humans. Once those in the Kunxu Domain were able to adapt to the mercury-like energy, their strength would grow by leaps and bounds.

Their means might have been different from the Master Teacher Continent, but their ultimate goal was the same—the development of mankind!

Ancient Sage Yan Qing continued on. "The Kunxu Domain is a small world, and the resources that it contains are severely limited. Furthermore, with the strengthening of the average constitution of the general populace, the spiritual energy that we require is growing significantly too. As such, we have no choice but to limit the qualifications to cultivate to just a selected few. This is also why we have so many tests and trials in place. We can only afford to invest our resources in talents who have the potential to reach the top!"

While Ancient Sage Yan Qing mentioned that the Kunxu Domain was a small world, that was only in relative comparison with the Master Teacher Continent. Its scale comfortably exceeded that of any of the major empires on the Master Teacher Continent.

However, in order to nurture the Greensprout Wheat properly, the Kunxu Domain had to seal off its connection to the Master Teacher Continent. Thus, it carried the risk of its spiritual energy drying up should there be too many cultivators.

In a sense, the Kunxu Domain was similar to a greenhouse. No matter how huge the greenhouse was, it could not reach the same level of self-sufficiency as the external world to provide nourishment for any number of plants.

In Zhang Xuan's previous world, a scientist had once set up a massive greenhouse and placed countless plants, animals, and insects within it as an experiment. However, within less than a year, the entire habitat had completely collapsed.

Such was the case for Kunxu Domain. Unlike the Master Teacher Continent, it did not have the ability to fully regulate itself, and the nourishment required to bestow even ordinary humans with the strength of the Zongshi realm put a huge burden on it. So, it was inevitable that they had to limit the number of cultivators.

Otherwise, it was likely that the Kunxu Domain would first collapse before its people could adapt to the mercury-like spiritual energy from the Azure.

"I believe that you might have noticed it already, but this problem isn't just limited to the Kunxu Domain. The Master Teacher Continent is still safe for the time being, but it'll face the same threat in the future. As the number of cultivators increases, there'll eventually come a day when the spiritual energy dries up," Ancient Sage Yan Qing remarked.

Zhang Xuan nodded in response.

No matter how big or enriching an environment or habitat was, it would have a breaking point where everything started to unravel.

In a way, humans absorbing the spiritual energy from the environment was like fleas leaping on a cow. Even a thousand fleas might not mean much to the cow, but what if there were millions or even billions of them?

No matter how strong the cow was, it would eventually collapse under the burden and die!

In the face of this practical problem, the Hundred Schools of Philosophers had no choice but to limit the distribution of cultivation resources, granting only the most talented individuals the privilege to cultivate.

Perhaps, the Master Teacher Continent might find itself forced to make the same decision as well in the distant future.

“Since we’re on the topic... is that why the Master Teacher Continent lost its ability to support the birth of newer Ancient Sages?” Zhang Xuan asked.

Be it the Master Teacher Continent or the Kunxu Domain, not a single Ancient Sage had been born from ten thousand years back to before the recent emergence of the Temple of Confucius. Could this possibly be the reason?

“Well, overpopulation does play a part in that, but it isn’t the primary reason,” Ancient Sage Yan Qing replied. “As you might know, the Aeon of Ancient Sage is the necessary catalyst for any cultivator to achieve a breakthrough to Ancient Sage. However, the Aeon of Ancient Sage is not something that naturally appears in the Master Teacher Continent nor the Kunxu Domain, or to be more exact, this entire world doesn’t have the ability to create the Aeon of Ancient Sage... It is an energy that is unique to the Azure!

“The sealing of the heavy energy meant that the Aeon of Ancient Sage is unable to flow down to our world anymore. As such, with the birth of more and more Ancient Sages, it eventually came to a point where it dried out completely.”

“You mean to say that the heavy spiritual energy contains the Aeon of Ancient Sage?” Zhang Xuan asked with raised eyebrows.

He had absorbed a sliver of it back when he was at the mountain range, but as soon as it entered his body, its weight had nearly crushed all of his meridians. This had forced him to seal all of his acupoints.

Yet, there was actually Aeon of Ancient Sage in it?

Perplexed, Zhang Xuan quietly absorbed a small bit of it.

The mercury-like energy felt as heavy as ever, but upon closer inspection, he did sense a hint of Aeon of Ancient Sage in it.

It was just a small amount, but as one absorbed more and more of it, it was only a matter of time before one overcame the Great Sage bottleneck and rose to become one of the top experts of the Master Teacher Continent!

But that was assuming one was able to assimilate this domineering energy.

Given how even he himself was unable to absorb it, he was not too hopeful for the other cultivators.

“There was no other choice. If we didn’t seal the energy from the Azure, the Otherworldly Demons would only have grown stronger and stronger, eventually leading to the eradication of mankind. It was a decision our predecessors made after careful deliberation. It hasn’t led to a good outcome, but it’s the lesser of two evils,” Ancient Sage Yan Qing explained bitterly.

Zhang Xuan also fell into deep contemplation.

There was no denying that the presence of more Ancient Sages was good news for mankind, but as long as they did not deal with the mercury-like energy, the greatest beneficiary would ultimately still be the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe. As long as the mercury-like energy existed on the Master Teacher Continent, it was only a matter of time before the scales were tipped in the favor of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe.

Not to mention, there were deities from the Azure who could descend through the dimension barrier. The threat that they posed could not be underestimated either.

“Is it true that the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe are the descendants of the Gods, just like the legends depict them to be?” Zhang Xuan asked out of curiosity.

Was it really just a problem in the compatibility of their constitution that meant they were unable to absorb the mercury-like energy whereas the Otherworldly Demons were able to?

“I don’t really know the exact answer, but there are written quotes from Kong shi that suggest that the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe are the descendants of an exiled God Tribe. He said that it’s due to the scarce spiritual energy on the Master Teacher Continent that resulted in their severe weakening, and as long as they are supplied with pure spiritual energy, they will swiftly return to their former glory.”

Speaking up to this point, Ancient Sage Yan Qing suddenly turned to the two caged youths and sighed deeply. “These two over there are perfect examples. They were ordinary Otherworldly Demons when they were first captured, but under the nourishment of the heavy spiritual energy from the Azure, they grew so much stronger within less than ten years. On top of that, their appearances have also become no different from those of ordinary humans.”

Even the most talented human would have to cultivate for hundreds of years before reaching Sempiternal realm consummation. However, those Otherworldly Demons were actually able to reach such a height within a shorter period of time just by absorbing and assimilating the heavy spiritual energy.

It sure was frustrating!

“But if deities are able to pass through the dimension barrier to descend upon our world, we should also be able to ascend to the Azure through the same way, right?” Zhang Xuan asked as his heart leaped in agitation.

# 1900 Sacrifice

The reason he had gone through so much effort to enter the Kunxu Domain was to find the passageway leading to the Azure in order to reach Luo Ruoxin.

Since there was a passageway above the elevated platform and the ‘deities’ were able to pass through, not to mention the fact that the mercury-like spiritual energy leaking out from the void came directly from the Azure, could that actually be the way he had been seeking all along?

“To be honest, I don’t really know.” Ancient Sage Yan Qing shook his head.

“I see... Then, do you know how Kong shi left the Kunxu Domain to enter the Azure?”

“Regarding that...” Ancient Sage Yan Qing’s face reddened in embarrassment.

In truth, most of Kong shi’s direct disciples did not even know of his departure back then, let alone a junior who came many generations later like him.

“It’s only recorded in the books that shortly after Kong shi achieved a breakthrough to the Dimension Shatterer realm, he left this world. As for where he went, I’m afraid that it isn’t recorded anywhere. However, our historians who investigated the matter deduced that there’s a good chance that his disappearance had something to do with this seal!”

This time, it was Kong Shiyao who answered Zhang Xuan’s question.

Hearing those words, Zhang Xuan heaved a sigh of relief.

From the looks of it, there was a good chance that the void above the elevated platform was the way into the Azure. However, with his current strength, he would not last long surrounded by the mercury-like spiritual energy. Perhaps the minimum requirement to doing so was to first reach the Dimension Shatterer realm.

Clearly, the current him still had much to work on!

“Zhang shi, pardon me, but I have a question for you. The seal on the Kunxu Domain was created by Kong shi himself, making it impossible for anyone to enter or leave. The reason we were able to enter the Master Teacher Continent previously was because we were able to tap into the power of the Temple of Confucius to temporarily breach the seal... So, how did you manage to get in here?” Ancient Sage Yan Qing asked with a doubtful frown.

This question made the others direct intrigued looks at Zhang Xuan.

It was an established fact among them that it was impossible for them to enter or leave the Kunxu Domain. The emergence of the Temple of Confucius had been the only exception to the rule in the past tens of thousands of years. However, it had been several months since the Temple of Confucius closed, so it should be impossible to exploit this loophole.

Given so, how did Zhang Xuan manage to get in there?

Feeling that there was no reason to hide this matter from them, Zhang Xuan replied honestly. “While I was visiting the Tianxuan Kingdom, I found a seal that was centered around Ancient Sage Ran Qiu. Out of curiosity, I broke the seal, and before I knew it, I was already in the Kunxu Domain.”

“Wait a moment, did you say that you broke the seal? You broke that seal?”

Ancient Sage Yan Qing and the others shook in agitation.

“What’s wrong?”

“Quick, let’s head over to take a look!”

With no time to explain, Ancient Sage Yan Qing swiftly opened up a dimension rift and leaped in. The others quickly followed suit.

In just a moment’s time, they had already arrived at where Zhang Xuan had entered the Kunxu Domain.

The seal was still standing firm, but the hole that Zhang Xuan and the others had entered through was gradually expanding.

They could just about see black flames pressing firmly against the exterior of the Kunxu Domain, attempting to force its way in.

Zhang Xuan was taken aback. “What’s going on here?”

He knew just how powerful the seal was, and he had needed to make use of the powerful Ordeal of Lightning Armament in order to open up a small hole to open. Why would there suddenly be such powerful black flames pressing against the seal?

Not to mention, they bore an uncanny resemblance to the Empyrean Heavenly Flames.

“This is the backlash from the heavens,” Ancient Sage Yan Qing grimly explained.

“Backlash from the heavens?”

“While we have isolated the Kunxu Domain from the Master Teacher Continent, it still doesn’t change the fact that they are actually one entity. What we are doing here, the cultivation of the Greensprout Wheat and the enhancement of the fundamental constitution of mankind, is going against the laws of nature, thus creating a distortion in this world.

“The reason Ancient Sage Ran Qiu’s body was left outside is not just to sustain the seal; more than that, it’s to prevent the heavens from peeking in! However, now that the heavens have learned of what we have done in the Kunxu Domain, they’ve sent down divine retribution to punish us and undo what we have done! At this rate, it won’t be long before the Kunxu Domain is swallowed by the raging flames of the heavens’ fury,” Ancient Sage Yan Qing exclaimed worriedly.

Zhang Xuan’s body stiffened.

Every world had its own rules, and these rules were enforced by the heavens. Anyone who tried to breach these rules would find themselves faced with the wrath of the heavens.

In a sense, this was similar to how cultivators attempting to push for higher realms would have to face heavenly tribulations.

Putting everything aside, in his previous world, Wang Mang, being a transmigrator, had attempted to change the world. But in the end, the heavens had sent down the Son of the Heavens, Liu Xiu, in retaliation, and the latter had easily destroyed everything that he had built.

The rules of the world could not be disregarded, and even Ancient Sages were no exception to the rule.

Zhang Xuan had thought that the reason no one was able to find the Kunxu Domain was due to the lofty Hundred Schools of Philosophers trying to steer clear from the rest of the world, but it turned out that their main goal was to conceal themselves from the detection of the heavens.

If people frequently entered and left the Kunxu Domain, it was only a matter of time before the heavens detected the existence of the Kunxu Domain. Once that happened, everything would be utterly destroyed, be it the Greensprout Wheat, the Hundred Schools of Philosophers, or even the domain itself.

Knowing that this was a catastrophe that he had caused, Zhang Xuan turned to Ancient Sage Yan Qing and asked, “Do you have any blueprints of it for me to mend the formation? I’ll seal off the Kunxu Domain once to prevent the heavens from peeking in!”

“We do have the blueprint to the formation, but it’s of no use!” Ancient Sage Yan Qing shook his head. “What has been breached isn’t just this seal but the Illusory Formation that was set up outside too. Previously, if the heavens attempted to peer into the coffin, Kong shi’s body would appear, which would lead the heavens to think that Kong shi has passed away, thus halting their investigation right there. However, the fact that the black flames have reached this seal means that the Illusory Formation has been undone. The heavens are already aware of everything. Any reparation work done now will only delay the inevitable!”

Zhang Xuan fell silent.

On his way to the Kunxu Domain, there had been two stone coffins. One of them contained Ancient Sage Ran Qiu’s body, and it was used to maintain the Illusory Formation.

As for the second coffin, what Zheng Yang saw was Kong shi's corpse whereas what they saw was Zheng Yang himself. It was the breaking of the Illusory Formation that had brought the seal isolating the Kunxu Domain from the Master Teacher Continent to his attention.

With these two preventive measures breached, the 'eyes' of the heavens were already fixated on the Kunxu Domain. Even if they mended everything right now, it would make no difference at all.

"Is there nothing that can be done?"

"There's only one way out of this... We have to deceive the heavens once more, like Kong shi did!"

"Deceive the heavens?"

"Un. Back then, when Kong shi first developed the Kunxu Domain, a hint of the energy contained within leaked out, and it swiftly caught the heavens' attention. It was due to Ancient Sage Ran Qiu's willing sacrifice to sustain an Illusory Formation that they eventually managed to deceive and placate the heavens," Ancient Sage Yan Qing said grimly.

"There's only one way for us to resolve the problem... We have to find a Dimension Shatterer realm cultivator who is willing to sacrifice himself to die under the hands of the heavens. Using his death as a catalyst, we'll create an illusion of the entire Kunxu Domain falling into ruins. While the heavens punish those who have failed to abide by the laws of the world, it would be inaccurate to say that they are a sentient force. As long as our means are sufficiently convincing, there's a chance that we'll succeed!"

Those words made Zhang Xuan's eyebrows shoot up.

Be it in the entire Master Teacher Continent or the Kunxu Domain, there was not a single Dimension Shatterer realm expert still alive. While his strength paired with the Dragonbone Divine Spear was very close to that of a Dimension Shatterer realm cultivator, his core was simply too much different from that of a real Dimension Shatterer realm cultivator. The heavens would see through his disguise easily!

“I’ll do it. I don’t have long to live anyway. Even if I’m unable to fully deceive the heavens, I should at least be able to buy some time!” Ancient Sage Yan Qing sighed as he looked at the seal with determination.

“You?”

“Un. While my cultivation hasn’t reached the Dimension Shatterer realm, it’s very close to it. Through igniting my soul and my physical body, I should be able to temporarily draw forth a might comparable to Dimension Shatterer realm cultivators, and perhaps, I might be able to deceive the heavens temporarily through that!” Ancient Sage Yan Qing replied.

“Ignite your soul and physical body?” Kong Shiyao was startled. “But once your soul and physical body are destroyed, it will really be the end of you. There would be no way you will be able to come back to life!”

Upon reaching the Blood Reincarnation realm, even if one’s physical body was torn apart, there was still a chance for one to revive. However, if he ignited his soul and body, he would really die through and through. There was nothing in this world that could bring back a dissipated soul, not even the Aeon of Ancient Sage.

“I know that, but as long as I can protect the Kunxu Domain, my death will not be in vain!” Ancient Sage Yan Qing replied.

As a human Ancient Sage, he had already resolved himself to sacrifice everything he had for the preservation of mankind. If his death could save many more people, his sacrifice would be worth it.

“Hold that thought for a moment. Let me take a look and see if there is any other way to resolve this situation!”

Seeing that Ancient Sage Yan Qing was going to rush over at any moment to give up his life for the greater good, Zhang Xuan walked up to the black flames with a frown and tapped his finger lightly on it.